

289 b15

THE
PARLIAMENTARY
OR
CONSTITUTIONAL
History of England;
BEING A
FAITHFUL ACCOUNT
Of all the
Most remarkable TRANSACTIONS
In PARLIAMENT,
From the earliest TIMES,
TO THE
Restoration of King CHARLES II.

COLLECTED

From the RECORDS, the JOURNALS of both HOUSES, original
MANUSCRIPTS, scarce SPEECHES, and TRACTS; all com-
pared with the several Contemporary Writers, and connected,
throughout, with the History of the Times.

By SEVERAL HANDS.

—— *Juvat integros accedere Fontes.*

VOL. XII.

From the Call of the House of Commons, *November 1, 1642*, till the
Convention at *Oxford*, in *January 1643*.

The SECOND EDITION.

L O N D O N,

Printed, and sold by WILLIAM SANDBY, against *St. Dunstan's Church*,
Fleet-Street. MDCCLXII.

THE NATIONAL

CONSTITUTIONAL

PARLIAMENTARY HISTORY
OF THE
NINETEENTH CENTURY

IN TWO VOLUMES



By the Hon. the Members of the House of Commons
in Parliament assembled
Printed by W. G. and J. S. Nichols, Stationers, in the Strand
1856



T H E
Parliamentary History
O F
E N G L A N D.

ON the first of *November* the Commons An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. ordered, That all their Members, living within sixty Miles of *London*, and not employed in the Service of that House, should attend within three Days; all at a farther Distance, within eight Days; and that such as did not appear within the Times limited, should be sent for by Messengers, who were to bring them up. November.

The Commons require the Attendance of their Members.

This Order was occasioned by the Thinness of the House, for some Months past, which appears by the following Divisions extracted from their *Journals*. The most material Points, which gave Occasion to these, have been taken Notice of in their proper Order of Time: The Numbers, only, will be therefore sufficient for this Review.

<i>June</i> 27. 42 against 27.	<i>Aug.</i> 15. 42 against 33.	The State of that House at this Time.
— 30. 49 against 35.	— 17. 43 against 16.	
<i>July</i> 9. 125 against 45.	— 27. 69 against 26.	
— 19. 69 against 51.	<i>Sept.</i> 2. 40 against 29.	
— 23. 89 against 43.	— 29. 53 against 36.	
— 26. 50 against 33.	In <i>October</i> not one Division enter'd.	
— 28. 82 against 32.		

VOL. XII.

A

It

2 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

It may very justly be inquired, What could occasion such an Absence, at a Time when so great a Number of Resolutions pass'd, deeply affecting the Constitution of this Kingdom?—A brief Recapitulation of some Transactions in our last Volume will supply an Answer.

It may be remembered that there was a Call of the House on the 16th of *June* last; and, on that Occasion, a Resolution pass'd, by a Majority of 147 Voices against 91, That none of the Absentees should be admitted to take their Seats, till they had made their Excuse to a Committee appointed for that Purpose, and that Excuse reported and allowed of by the House. Most of the Members then absent, whose Names are entered in the *Commons Journals* of that Day, were with the King at *York*; and as they could have little Reason to expect That Excuse for their Absence would be accepted by the House, it is very probable few of them ever returned.

—Add to this, That

After the King had issued his Commission of Array many more Members left the House, and went into their several Counties to put the same into Execution: And others were sent, at the same Time, by the Parliament to execute their Ordinance for the Militia; most of the Deputy-Lieutenants being Members of the House of Commons.

When the Commons, on the eleventh Day of *August* last, voted, That they would support the Earl of *Essex* with their Lives and Fortunes, they also resolved, That every Member, then absent, should declare himself at his next coming into the House; which undoubtedly kept away many who had not Courage enough to make that Declaration; whilst some others, of a more resolute Disposition, lost their Lives, on both Sides of the Question, at the late Battle of *Edge-Hill*.—Lastly,

During the Months of *August* and *September* last, near fifty Members had been expelled the House; and, though Writs were issued out for supplying their Places, it is hardly to be imagined that many new Elections could be made at a Time when the Orders

OF ENGLAND. 3

Orders of the House of Commons were as little regarded by the Sheriffs and returning Officers of some Counties, as the King's Proclamations by others; and when a considerable Part of the Kingdom was covered by two opposite Armies.

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.
November.

The Names of the Members so expelled, with the Reasons of their Expulsion, and the Places they served for, may not be improper; as they tend to illustrate many Passages in the succeeding Volumes of this Work. *

MEMBERS expelled in the Month of August, 1642.

- | | |
|--|------------------|
| 4 *Robert Hide, Serjeant at Law, | } New-Sarum. |
| 5 *Sir Ralph Hopton, Knight of the Bath, | |
| — *Thomas Smith, Esq; | } Wells. |
| 8 *Sir John Pawlett, Kt. | |
| — *Sir John Stawell, Knight of the Bath, | } Somersetshire. |
| 9 Sir Nicholas Slanning, Kt. | |
| 10 John Griffith, Esq; | } Penryn. |
| 11 *Edward Hyde, Esq; | |
| — *Robert Holborne, Esq; | } Beaumaris. |
| — *Sir William Penynan, Bart. | |
| — *Edward Kirton, Esq; | } Saltash. |
| 12 *John Coventry, Esq; | |
| — *Sir Edward Rodney, Kt. | } Michell. |
| 16 *Nicholas Weston, Esq; | |
| — *Col. George Goring, | } Richmond. |
| 20 *Sir John Packington, Bart. | |
| — *Sir H. Herbert, Knt. | } Milborn-Port. |
| — *Samuel Sandys, Esq; | |
| | } Evesham. |
| | |
| | } Wells. |
| | |
| | } Stafford. |
| | |
| | } Portsmouth. |
| | |
| | } Aylesbury. |
| | |
| | } Bewdley. |
| | |
| | } Droitwich. |
| | |

The three last for executing the Commission of Array.

- 22 *Gervase Holles, Esq; Grimsby.

A 2

Aug.

* For those Places distinguished thus * the Journals only take Notice of Writs being issued for new Elections; and where we have not mentioned the Reasons for the Expulsion of the respective Members, none are assigned by those Authorities.

4 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 13. Car. I. Aug. 26. Sir William Widdrington, Knt. } Northumberland.

November. — Sir William Carnaby, Kt. } Morpeth.

The last two for refusing to attend the Service of the House.

29 Orlando Bridgeman, Esq; } Wigan.

For assisting Lord Strange at Chester.

— Roger Kirkby, Esq; } Lancashire.

39 Sir Richard Cave, Knt. } Litchfield.

MEMBERS expelled in September, 1642.

2 Christopher Lewkenor, Esq; } Chichester.

6 Sir William Savile, Knt. } Old Sarum.
and Bart.

— Henry Bellasys, Esq; } Yorkshire.

— John Bellasys, Esq; } Thirsk.

— Sir Henry Slingsby, Bart. } Knaresbrough.

— Sir Thomas Danby, Knt. } Richmond.

— Sir George Wentworth, of } Pontefract.
Woolley, Knt.

— Sir Thomas Ingram, Knt. } Thirsk.

— William Mallory, Esq; } Ripon.

— Richard Aldburgh, Esq; } Aldburgh.

The last nine for neglecting the Service of the House, and setting their Hands to a Petition contrived in Yorkshire, and sent up to Parliament.

— Sir John Strangways, Knt. } Weymouth.

For neglecting the Service of Parliament.

— Sir Richard Lee Bart. } Salop.

— Sir Robert Howard, Knt. } Bishops-Castle.
of the Bath,

7 Sir Christ. Hatton, Knt. } Higham Ferrers.

— Sir Robert Hatton, Knt. } Castle-Rising.

These four for executing the Commission of Array after it was declared illegal, and for not appearing on Summons.

Septs.

• This Petition may be found in our Eleventh Volume.

Of ENGLAND. 5

Sept. 7. *Geoffrey Palmer, Esq;* *Stamford.*
For not appearing on Summons.

An. 18, Car. I.
1642.

—*Henry Coke, Esq;* *Dunwich.*
—*Sir Tho. Fanshawe, Knt.* *Lancaster.*

November.

These two for neglecting the Service of the
House, and not appearing on Summons.

12 *Richard Rogers, Esq;* *Dorsetshire.*
For sending Forces into *Sherborne Castle.*

—*Richard Herbert, Esq;* *Montgomery.*
For putting the Commission of Array in Execu-
tion in the County *Salop.*

16 * *Tho. Chicheley, Esq;* *Cambridgeshire.*

18 *Sir Beville Grenville, Knt.* *Cornwall.*

22 *Lord Viscount Falkland,* } *Newport, Isle of*
 Wight.

23 *Sir Frederick Cornwallis,* } *Eye.*
 Knt. of the Bath. }

29 *Sir Ralph Sydenham, Knt.* *Bossiney.*

We meet with no Expulsions of Members in
October; but, on the 24th of that Month, one Gen-
tleman was in very great Danger of losing his Seat,
if he had not instantly complied with the Terms re-
quired by the House for his Continuance in it: For
we find in the *Journals* of this Day, That the Vote
for assisting the Earl of *Essex, &c.* being read to
Sir John Evelyn, Member for *Blechingley*, and his
Answer demanded, he desired Time to consider of
that Vote; upon which he was ordered to with-
draw. Then the House fell into Consideration of
the Quality of his Offence; and finding, That if any
Member might have Liberty, when a Question was
proposed, to refuse giving any Answer, it would de-
stroy the Course and Proceedings of Parliament: It
was thereupon resolved, 'That the said *Sir John*
Evelyn shall be suspended from the House, disarmed
by the Deputy-Lieutenants of *Surrey*, and commit-
ted Prisoner to the *Tower* during the Pleasure of that
House.' — But *Sir John Evelyn* desiring to be heard

6 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.
November.

before Judgment given; and, his Request being complied with, he declared himself in the Affirmative to the Vote concerning the Earl of *Essex*, and offered to lend 100 l. upon the Propositions. The House accepted his Answer and his Offer, and immediately ordered, That the former Votes and Sentences should be revoked.

Thus much may suffice to give a View of the State of the House of Commons during the last five Months: We shall, now, proceed with the Business of Parliament.

Both Houses had been busy in making Orders for opposing Sir *Ralph Hopton's* Armament, in the *West of England*, and the other in *Wales*, mentioned in Secretary *Nicholas's* Letter; which had been communicated to the Citizens of *London* at the *Guildhall*, by the Earl of *Pembroke*, on the 27th of the last Month.

Proceedings towards a Peace.

These two new raised Armies appeared so formidable to the Parliament, that, in all Probability, it stirred up the late Motion for settling a Peace, and brought on the further Consideration of it this Day, *November 2.* The Result of which was, That to prevent the further Effusion of Blood, and to settle the present Distractions of the Kingdom, a Conference should be held, in which the following Letter should be communicated to the Commons, which the Committee of Safety had received from their Lord-General, in answer to one wrote to him on this Occasion.

The Earl of *Essex's* Letter on that Occasion.

My Lords and Gentlemen,
I Have received a Letter from you, that mentions an humble Petition to be directed to his Majesty, to save the Effusion of more Blood. In the first Place, I ought to acknowledge the Favour of your desiring to hear from me, before you send it. In the second Place, To declare that an happy Accommodation for the Advancement of Religion, the Flourishing of this Kingdom, with its antient Rights, the Saving the Effusion
of

Of ENGLAND. 7

of more Blood, and the uniting his Majesty to his Parliament, none shall pray for more, nor receive with more Joy, than myself.

If I had not, by the Commands of the Parliament, been here to govern this Army, I should have given my Attendance upon you; and should have discharged my Conscience, to the best of my Abilities, honestly and clearly; but, being absent, and not hearing the Debates, nor from whence this hath risen, I must submit myself to their greater Judgments; and shall, with all Obedience, submit both to what they shall do; and to obey their former Commands to advance towards London, to interpose, with my utmost, between them and all Dangers.

Your Lordships

Northampton, }
Nov. 1, 1642. }

Humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Notwithstanding the last-mentioned Military Preparations, and the Earl of *Essex*'s Declaration of his Readiness to march towards *London*, both Houses thought fit to proceed in their pacific Measures; and ordered a Petition to the King, to be drawn up for that Purpose: But, previous to this, 'lest the Affections of the People should grow cold,' as Mr. *Pymme* expressed himself at the Conference, a Declaration was to be published to this Purport:

'Whereas the Lords and Commons have ordered, That it should be referred to the Committee for Safety of the Kingdom, to prepare Heads for an humble Address to his Majesty, for composing the present Differences and Distractions, and settling the present Peace of the Kingdom, and to present it to the House: Yet to prevent all Misconstructions or Neglects, whereby our just Defence may be hindered, we do declare, That the Preparations of Forces, and all other necessary Means for the Defence of the Protestant Religion, the Privileges of Parliament, and the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, shall be prosecuted with all Vigour.'

Both Houses at the same Time provide for their Defence.

The

8 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 13. Car. I. The Lords agreed to this Declaration, and ordered it to be forthwith printed and published.
1642.

November.

Nov. 3. A Draught of this Petition, or Address, to the King, was read by the Lords this Day; and, afterwards, agreed to by both Houses, as follows:

Their Petition
to the King for
Peace.

WE your Majesty's most loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, being affected with a deep and piercing Sense of the Miseries of this Kingdom, and of the Danger of his Majesty's Person, as the present Affairs now stand; and much quickened therein with the sad Consideration of the great Effusion of Blood at the late Battle, and of the Loss of so many eminent Persons: And further weighing the Addition of Loss, Misery, and Danger to your Majesty and your Kingdom, which must ensue, if both Armies should again join in another Battle; as, without God's especial Blessing, and your Majesty's Concurrence with your Houses of Parliament, will not probably be avoided; we cannot but believe that a suitable Impression of Tenderneſs and Compassion is wrought in your Majesty's Royal Heart, being yourself an Eye-Witness of the bloody and sorrowful Destruction of so many of your Subjects; and that your Majesty doth apprehend what Diminution of your own Power and Greatness will follow; and that all your Kingdoms will thereby be so weakened, as to become subject to the Attempts of any ill-affected to this State.

In all which Respects we assure ourselves, that your Majesty will be inclined graciously to accept this our humble Petition, that the Misery and Desolation of this Kingdom may be speedily removed and prevented; for the effecting whereof we most humbly beseech your Majesty to appoint some convenient Place, not far from the City of London, where your Majesty will be pleased to reside, untill Committees of both Houses of Parliament may attend your Majesty, with some Propositions for the Removal of these bloody Distempers and Distractions, and settling the State of the Kingdom, in such a Manner as may conduce to the Preservation

vation of God's true Religion, your Majesty's Honour, An. 18. Car. I.
Safety, and Prosperity; and to the Peace, Comfort, 1642.
and Security of all your People. November.

The Houses next considered of the Manner of delivering this Petition to the King; and, since the Way they sent their last was so disagreeable to him, it was thought proper, That a Committee of Lords and Commons should be sent with it: But, first, that a Letter should be wrote to one of the Secretaries of State, or some Peer near his Majesty, to desire a Safe-Conduct for these Persons; and that a Trumpet should be sent before the Messenger, to desire a Safe-Conduct for the Delivery of their Letter. Accordingly the Lord Grey of *Werk*, Speaker of the House of Lords *pro Tempore*, wrote the following Letter, directed to the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, Principal Secretary to his Majesty, or, in his Absence, for Mr. Secretary *Nicholas*, or any of the Lords the Peers, attending his Majesty.

My Lords,

I Am commanded, by the Lords the Peers, and Commons assembled in Parliament, to address, by you, their humble Desires to his Majesty, that he would be pleased to grant his Safe-Conduct to a Committee of Lords and Commons to pass and repass unto his Majesty, who are directed to attend him with an humble Petition from his Parliament.

Lord Grey's Letter, desiring a Safe-Conduct for their Messengers.

This being all I have in Commission, I rest

Your assured Friend and Servant,

Westminster, this }
3d of November, }
1642.

GREY of *Werk*,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

Nothing intervened, worth Notice, till the 5th; when the Lord Grey received an Answer to his Letter to the Secretary, which was read.

To

10 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 13. Car. I. To the Right Honourable the Lord Grey of *Werk*,
1643. Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

November.

My Lord,

Which is granted by the King.

HIS Majesty hath commanded me, in Answer to your Lordship's of the third present, to signify to you, That he always hath been, and is still, ready to receive the humble Petition of either or both Houses of Parliament; and shall take Order, that a Committee of Lords and Commons may pass and repass to him, with the Petition of both Houses, as is desired; so as the said Committee consists of Persons that have not been by his Majesty, either by Name, declared Traitors; or otherwise, in some of his Declarations or Proclamations, excepted against by Name, with his Intention declaring to proceed against them as Traitors; and so as the said Committee come not with more than thirty Persons in their Company, and give Notice before-hand of their coming: And for the said Committee's better Security, his Majesty, upon the Receipt of their Names, will give a Safe-Conduct for them under his Hand and Signet. This being all I have in Command to deliver to your Lordship, I humbly rest

Your Lordship's

Most humble Servant,

ED. NICHOLAS.

Reading, Nov. 4, 1643.

To this Letter, the Lord Grey was directed to return the following Answer; but since this Answer and the consequent Rejoinders were the chief Business of some Days, we shall put them all together, for the Reader's greater Ease in the Perusal.

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, Principal Secretary to his Majesty; or, in his Absence, to any of the Lords the Peers attending his Majesty,

My Lord,

Several other Letters in consequence thereof.

I Have received a Command from the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to send you the Names of two Lords; that is to say, *Algernon Earl of Northumberland*,

OF ENGLAND. II

umberland, Philip *Earl of Pembroke and Mont-* An. 18. Car. 1.
gomery, *and of four Members of the House of Com-* 1642.
mons, Mr. Pierrepont, the Lord Wenman, Sir John
Evelin of Wilts, and Sir John Hippisly; being the
Committees of both Houses appointed to attend his Ma-
jesty with an humble Petition directed from them to his
Majesty; desiring your Lordship will be pleased to move
his Majesty to send a Safe-Conduct, to pass and re-
pass, under his Royal Hand and Signet, for the seve-
ral Persons aforementioned.

November.

This being all that I have in Commission, I rest

Your Lordship's Friend and Servant,

Westminster, this 5th
of November,
1642.

GREY of Werk,
Speaker to the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

To the Right Honourable the Lord Grey of Werk,
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore.*

My Lord,

YOUR Lordship's Letter, of the fifth of No-
vember I shewed his Majesty, who hath expressly
commanded me to return your Lordship this Answer
in these few Words, That his Majesty hath sent
(which I have inclosed) a Safe-Conduct, under his
Royal Hand and Signet, for the Earl of Northumber-
land, and the Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery,
Mr. Pierrepont, the Lord Wenman, and Sir John
Hippisly; but hath not admitted Sir John Evelin of
Wilts to attend him, as being included in the Excep-
tion made by his Majesty in the Letter sent by Mr.
Secretary Nicholas to your Lordship of the 4th, as by
the inclosed Proclamation, proclaimed at his Majesty's
Court at Oxford, and sent, with a Writ sealed, into
the County of Wilts, will appear. His Majesty hath
likewise commanded me to signify to your Lordship,
That in case the Houses shall think fit to send any other
Person in the Place of Sir John Evelin, that is not
included in the Exception made in Mr. Secretary's
Letter before-mentioned, his Majesty hath commanded
all his Officers, Soldiers, and other Subjects, to suffer
him

An. 18. Cat. I. him as freely to pass and repass as if his Name had
 1642. been particularly comprised in this Safe-Conduct,
 November, This being all that I have in Commission, I rest

Reading, this 6th
 of November,
 1642.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

FALKLAND.

His Majesty's SAFE-CONDUCT.

CHARLES R.

OUR Will and Pleasure is, and we do hereby
 strictly charge and command all the Officers and
 Soldiers of our present Army, and all our Ministers
 and Subjects whatsoever, to suffer our Right Trusty
 and Right Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors Al-
 gernon Earl of Northumberland, and Philip Earl of
 Pembroke and Montgomery, and our Right Trusty
 and Right Well-beloved Cousin Thomas Lord Vis-
 count Wenman, and our Trusty and Well-beloved
 William Pierrepont, Esq; and Sir John Hippisly,
 Knight, (together with their Attendants, not exceed-
 ing the Number of Thirty) to pass and repass to and
 from us, they being now sent to attend us with a Pe-
 tition from both our Houses of Parliament. This our
 Safe-Conduct, under our Royal Hand and Signet, we
 charge and command them, and every of them, punc-
 tually to observe and obey, as they will answer the con-
 trary at their uttermost Perils.

Given at our Court at Reading, this 6th of No-
 vember, 1642.

The King having
 objected against
 Sir John Evelin's
 being one of the
 Committee,

Then was read the Proclamation, mentioned in
 Lord Falkland's Letter, as a Reason why the King
 excepted against Sir John Evelin as one of the
 Commissioners; after which a great Debate ensued
 in

§ Sir John Evelin, Sir Edward Hungerford, Sir Henry Ludlow,
 and Walter Long, Esq; all of them Members of the House of Com-
 mons, were, by Name, excepted in the King's Proclamation of Par-
 don to the County of Wilts, dated at Oxford, November 2. 1642.

Husband's Collections, p. 739.

in the House of Lords, and the Question being put, An. 18. Car. 1.
Whether the Lord *Falkland's* last Answer should be
sent to the Commons with the Sense of this House
upon it, or without it? It passed for the latter, and
was sent down accordingly. 1642.
November.

November 7. The Earl of *Essex* being this Day
in the House of Lords, they received a Message from
the Commons, importing, That now the Lord-
General was returned, they ought to remember his
great Care of the Army and Hazard of his Person,
which he shewed in this Expedition: And, to that
Purpose, they desired the Lords to join with them
in appointing a Committee of both Houses, to draw
up an Acknowledgement of Thanks for his Care,
and for his Obedience to their Commands.

A Committee of both Houses was, accordingly,
appointed to draw up an Address of Thanks to the
Lord-General. The Commons further desired that
his Excellency might be commanded to give his Or-
ders to draw out the Army, as speedily and as con-
veniently as he could, for the Defence of the King-
dom, and to prevent the Outrages of the King's
Troops; that House being informed that Prince
Rupert was now about *Windsor*.

To this the Lord-General said, That the Army
had had a long March; but, as soon as they were
fit, he would quarter them in such Places as should
be most convenient for the Preservation of those
Parts.

The same Day the Commons sent up a Vote of
their House, on the King's Objection to Sir *John*
Evelin, to this Purpose:

Resolved, 'That this House holds it to be a De- Both Houses de-
nial in his Majesty, and a Refusal to grant a Treaty clare this to be a
with the Parliament, in excepting unto one of the Refusal of Peace
Messengers that were to present a Petition unto him on his Part.
from both Houses, and denying to grant him a Safe-
Conduct.'

The Question being put, by the Lords, Whether
the King's Safe-Conduct should be accepted upon
these Terms? It passed in the Negative.

After

14 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

And send a Committee to acquaint the City of London there-with.

After this a Committee of both Houses were appointed to go into the City of *London*, to acquaint the Common-Hall with all the Ways the Parliament had used to procure a Treaty for a Peace, without being able to effect it; and to quicken them to a Resolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties and Religion, with their Lives and Fortunes. Likewise, the Committee of Safety were ordered to prepare a Declaration upon this Denial of the King's to admit such Members as were appointed, by both Houses, to present their Petition; one of the Heads of which was to be, the King's expressing a Readiness to receive a Petition from the Rebels in *Ireland*.

November 8. Two of the Committees from the Parliament to the City, on the above Occasion, were the Lord *Brooke* and Sir *Henry Vane*, junior; whose Speeches, at the *Guildhall*, being yet preserved, we here subjoin them in their own Words as follows: *

And first Lord *Brooke*.

My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the rest of the Gentlemen here assembled,

Lord *Brooke's*
Speech to the
Citizens.

I Am to deliver a Message to you from the Lords and Commons now assembled in Parliament; but before I do that, I shall crave Leave to excuse something that hath happened: There should have been divers Lords, and some Gentlemen of the House of Commons here, far fitter to have done this Work that is now put upon me, if they could possibly have attended the Service, who were appointed by the House; as the Lord-General of the Horse, the Earl of *Bedford*, and some other Lords; but you will all conceive that they, being all Men employed in the Army, could not attend this your Service; tho' they are about your Service and the Good of the Kingdom, which is giving Order for your Safety, and theirs; and therefore, I hope,

* From the Collections of the late *Thomas Selater Bacon*, Esq; of *Cambridge*, to which we are obliged for many curious Pamphlets of these Times.

hope, you will take it in good Part, that there is no An. 18. Car. 1.
other Appearance here. 1642.

November

‘Gentlemen, what I have to say to you, in short, is this: I suppose, at this Time of Action, you will not expect long Prefacings; if you do, I am the unfittest Man in the World to do it: I shall therefore shortly deliver my Message. I doubt not but you have heard some Whisperings of an Accommodation; and no Man that is an Honest Man, a Religious Man, a Free Man, that loves Religion and the Kingdom, but would have an Accommodation; for nothing is more miserable, and nothing is more distracting than War: But that an Accommodation should come upon Terms ignoble and disadvantageous, that never was in the Thought of either House, and I hope never will be; and, I am ordered to tell you, never shall be.

‘I am at this Time to intreat you, in the Name of both Houses of Parliament, to go on courageously, and fight, and prepare yourselves for that which is at hand: We hear the Enemies approach nearer every Day, who aim at nothing else but to swallow up our Religion, Lives, Liberties, and Estates; and therefore it becomes you to labour to defend them all.

‘I have more to say, but it is better said here in the Votes of the Houses of Lords and Commons; I desire they should be read unto you, and therein you will fully understand what their Sense is.

Monday, 7th of November, 1642.

The Question being put, Whether a Safe-Conduct shall be accepted upon these Terms? It pass’d with the Negative.

‘This was, first, in the House of Commons. The Meaning of this Vote is, There was a Safe-Conduct desired of his Majesty for six Persons, two of the House of Lords, viz. the Earl of *Pembroke* and the Earl of *Northumberland*, and four of the House of Commons; among these there was one Sir *John Evelin*, of *Wiltshire*: The King would not let

An. 18. Car. 1. let him have a Safe-Conduct; because he was one that was named, by him, a Traitor the Day before; and that was done, as is thought, on purpose to take him off from being one; therefore the House of Commons did look upon that as a Denial; in that he could not have a Safe-Conduct. This Vote of theirs was presented to the House of Lords; and they concurred with it, viz.

1642.
November.

Resolved, upon the Question,
This House holdeth this to be a Denial of his Majesty, and a Refusal to grant a Treaty to the Parliament, in excepting against one of the Messengers that was to present a Petition to his Majesty from both Houses to that Purpose, and denying to grant him a Safe-Conduct.

Resolved, &c.
That Committees of both Houses shall be appointed to go to the City of London, to acquaint the Common-Hall with all the Ways the Parliament hath used to procure a Treaty for a Peace, and could not effect it; and to quicken them to a Resolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties, and their Religion, with their Lives and Fortunes; and that they have appointed a Committee to prepare a Declaration, upon this Denial of his Majesty to admit such Members as were appointed, by both Houses, to present a Petition to his Majesty for a Treaty; and of his Majesty's expressing his Willingness to receive a Petition from the Rebels in Ireland.

‘Here is one Thing more, Gentlemen, that is worth your taking Notice of; this is so well said, I shall not need to say it over again; only here, in the latter End, you see there is a Committee appointed to come hither, to give you an Account of the Reasons moving them on to this Action; and to shew you all the Ways they have used, if it were possible, to have procured a Treaty for a Peace.

‘There is another Thing in the End, very remarkable, which you may very well take Notice of: His Majesty will not, but upon Terms altogether unfitting, accept of any Treaty from us; yet,

at

at the same Time, is willing to receive a Petition An. 18. Car. I.
from the Rebels in *Ireland*. 1642.

' We are no Rebels ; but dutiful in all we do :
They are Rebels and Traitors in the Judgment of
all Men ; and yet he will receive no Petition from
us ; but he will receive a Petition from them !'

November.

Sir Henry Vane spoke to this Effect :

*My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the rest of the
Gentlemen here assembled,*

IT is not unknown to you, with what Diffi- Sir Henry Vane's.
culties, with what Dangers, both Houses of
Parliament have a long Time conflicted, for to
bring the Liberties, and the Religion, and the Wel-
fare, of this Kingdom into such a Posture as might
give all the Inhabitants thereof full Satisfaction.
It is not unknown likewise, how busy the Eng-
ages of this great Work have been, to cast Scan-
dals, to cast false Aspersions, upon the Proceedings,
upon the Carriage of Parliament ; they therefore
thought fit, (that they might undeceive all Persons
of the greatest Malice, and of the greatest Opposi-
tion to their Endeavours) not long since, to frame
a Petition ; a Petition full of Humility, a Petition
full of Modesty, whereby they did desire his Maje-
sty that they might apply themselves to make such
Propositions to him, as might effect this great
Work.

' This Petition, that it might be delivered, they
thought fit for to name (as this Noble Lord hath
told you) six Persons ; two of the Lords House,
and four of the House of Commons ; Men that they
thought altogether without the least Scruple, with-
out the least Exception, knowing that nothing in
the Carriage of these Persons could render them lia-
ble to Exception, but their Duty and Observance to
the Commands of both Houses. When the Names
of these Persons were sent to his Majesty, for to
have a Safe-Conduct, immediately, I think the very
Day before, there came out a Proclamation against
one of them, excepting him out of the Grace and

18 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

Favour of his Majesty, as it is termed, and laying him in the Condition of a Rebel and of a Traitor against him, for his Obedience to, and Observance of, the Commands of Parliament.

‘ This being brought to both Houses, they looked on it as a Business of such great Importance, that if they should suffer any one Member, or any one Person, that, through his Dutifulness and Observance of their Commands, should lie under a Cloud with his Majesty, so as not to be admitted to his Presence, but be looked at in such a Condition, as this Proclamation put him in : They looked on it, I say, as the greatest Indignity, and the greatest Calumny that could befall a Parliament ; and the greatest Discouragement that should lie upon all Men to stand to a Parliament, if they should not be defended and protected : Hereupon they resolved to declare, That the Unwillingness lay not in them to make Peace ; but it lay in that ill Counsel, and that desperate Counsel, that hath hemm’d in his Majesty ; and will not suffer such Points, will not suffer such Propositions as these, to take Effect with him ; but will labour to destroy all your Estates and Properties, and all that is near and dear to you in this Kingdom.

‘ The House of Commons, therefore, have thought it fit to acquaint you with these Proceedings ; to let you know how careful they are, by all good Ways, and by all good Means, to present their Loyalty and Duty to his Majesty, to take Care of themselves, and all that belongs to you : But, when they see all will not take Effect, they doubt not but you will join cordially, and join resolutely, with your Purse, and with your Endeavours, and with all that lies in your Power, to acquit yourselves like Men ; to defend yourselves ; to defend them that have laboured in your Work, in your Cause, and who are willing to spend their Lives and Blood in your Service to the utmost Man : Therefore they desire this of you, that, since they have taken this Care, you will hearken to no Reports that shall tend to the Disparagement of their Proceedings ;

but

but will unanimously concur to defend yourselves against that Violence and Oppression, that is now almost at your Doors.—And this is that we have to recommend to you.’

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

Then the Lord *Brooke* spoke again.

Gentlemen,

I Have but one Word more to trouble you with. This Honourable Gentleman, Sir *Henry Vane*, hath express'd so fully all that was in the Message, that, truly, I should wrong him and myself too, if I should say any more; therefore I shall now speak to you of another Thing. It is not fit any thing that concerns you should be concealed from you.

‘I came this Day to this Place, to this House, about another Business, which I have already communicated to my Lord Mayor and the Aldermen, and the Committee. I think it will not be unfit you should know it. I have the Consent of some, that understand this Business very well, to what I now shall do. Gentlemen, the Message was this, it was a Message from his Excellency; it is to let you know how near the Danger is at Hand, that so you may gird up the Loins of your Resolution, and act like Men of Courage. Gentlemen, Citizens of *London*, (better than whom no Man did in that Army we had lately in the Field) the Enemy's Foot, as we understand, are very near *Staines*, their Horse are about *Kingston*. We cannot say that all are there; but that there are both Horse and Foot, and it is certain our Foot are going to them: So that the Question is now, What is to be done? This is a certain Truth among all Soldiers, That you must keep Evil as far off you as you can; you must not let it come near your Doors: You must not think to fight in the Sighs, and Tears, and Eyes, and Distractions of your Wives and Children; but to go out, and meet it valiantly as you have done.

‘God hath shewed himself a God of Love and Mercy, and truly we must give him all the Honour of that Day; certainly it is the greatest Victory that

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November.

ever was gotten ; near 2000 (I love to speak with the least) on their Side slain ; and, I am confident, not 100 on our Side, unless you will take in Women and Children, Carmen, and Dogs ; for they slew the very Dogs and all. If you take in Women, Children, Carmen, and Dogs, then they slew about 200. But that 100 should be slain on one Side, and 2000 on the other Side, is a very miraculous Thing.

‘ God that dealt so wonderfully heretofore, it were to distrust him, if we did not think he would do so again. Truly he hath a People among us exceedingly beloved.

‘ What is it we fight for ? It is for our Religion, and for our God, and for our Liberty, and all. And what is it they fight for ? For their Lust, for their Will, and for their Tyranny ; to make us Slaves, and to overthrow all,

‘ Gentlemen, methinks I see your Courage by your Faces. I spy you ready to do any thing ; and the General’s Resolution is, to go out To-morrow, and do as a Man of Courage and Resolution ; and never Man did like him ; for he was not only General, but Common Soldier ; for he led up his own Regiment, he led up his own Troop in his own Person ; and when the Left Troops of Horse deceived him, he brought up the Right Troops. He himself will go out again, and do again as much as he hath done : All this is for your Sakes, for he can be a Freeman, he can be a Gentleman, he can be a great Man, he can go where he will ; therefore it is only for your Sakes he is resolved to go out To-morrow. His Forces are weary, his Forces are spent, some came but last Night into Town, some marched above twenty Miles, which is a great March, as some that know what it is can tell ; but, as weary as they are, he is resolved to go out ; and if you will affect the Cause, and join with him Hand, and Heart, and Sword, he will take it as a Favour ; but if you will not, he doubts not but *Gideon’s* Sword will do the Work alone.

‘ I

'I speak not this that I doubt you, but that you should resolve, that when you hear the Drums beat, (for it is resolved that the Drums shall beat Tomorrow; our Drums shall beat to lead out our Men, and the Committee's Drums shall beat to lead out their Men) say not, I beseech you, I am not of the Trained-Band, nor this, nor that, nor t'other; but doubt not to go out to the Work, and fight courageously, and this shall be the Day of your Deliverance.'

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

Nov. 9. Notwithstanding the foregoing Speeches to the Citizens of London seem to breathe nothing but War, yet the House of Commons thought fit to soften the Harshness of their Vote of the 7th; for, this Day, Mr. Pymme brought up a different Resolution, to which he desired their Lordships Concurrence, viz.

'Resolved, That the Petition shall be sent to his Majesty; and the Reasons which induced the Commons to make this Vote, he said, were these;

The Commons resolve, again, to send their Petition to the King;

First, 'The great Advantage which should be gained by a settled Peace; for, thereby, they should better attend to the War in Ireland; and it would unite the King and Kingdom more closely, and prevent the Loss of our Religion and the Liberties of the Subject; for Peace, upon other Terms than these, they resolve never to accept: That,

Secondly, 'The House of Commons did, also, consider the Danger the King's Person was in at the last Battle; and the great Mischiefs that War had already brought upon the Commonwealth, which should be increased if it should be continued; so much Blood being already spilt and many of great Quality slain; and that Sir John Evelin should be left his Liberty to go along with the rest if he think fit.'

To this pacific Vote the Lords readily agreed; but though the Commons designed to shew the King the Olive Branch in one Hand and the Sword in the

Which the Lords agree to:

B 3

other, Lord Clarendon remarks, That, by this Expedient, the Commons satisfied themselves, that the leaving Sir John Evelin behind them, without bringing another in his Room, was no Submission to the King's Exception.

22 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

But, at the same
Time, order all
Soldiers to join
their Regiments,

other, the subsequent Request came along with it; which was to desire the Lords to join with them in ordering the Lord-General to draw out his Army the next Morning; and that a Proclamation should go out that Afternoon for all Soldiers, on Pain of Death, to repair to their Colours: And that the Army might not be at a Loss for Recruits, the Commons sent up the following Ordinance.

And pass an Or-
dinance for en-
couraging Ap-
prentices to list.

W Hereas, in Times of Common Danger and Necessity, the Interest of private Persons ought to give Way to the Public: It is ordained and declared, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that such Apprentices as have been, or shall be, listed to serve as Soldiers, for the Defence of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, his Majesty's Royal Person, the Parliament, and the City of London; their Sureties, and such as stand engaged for them, shall be secured against their Masters, their Executors, and Administrators, from all Loss and Inconveniences, by Forfeiture of Bonds, Covenants, Infranchisements, or otherwise: And that after this public Service is ended, the Masters of such Apprentices shall be commanded and required to receive them again into their Service, without imposing upon them any Punishment, Loss, or Prejudice for their Absence, in the Defence of the Commonwealth.

And the Lords and Commons do further declare, That, if it shall appear that the Masters of such Apprentices have received any considerable Loss by the Absence of their Apprentices, they will take Care that reasonable Satisfaction shall be made unto them, out of the Public Stock of the Kingdom, according to Justice and Indifferency.

The Commons, also, desired the Lords to join with them in sending a Committee of both Houses again to the City, to acquaint them with the Reasons that moved the Parliament to send this Petition to his Majesty; and to let them know the Resolution

tion of the Parliament is, That they will not agree to any Peace, but what shall be fully for the Preservation of Religion, the Liberty of the Subject, and the settling the Quiet of the Kingdom: That if this cannot effectually be done, both Houses are resolved to spend their Lives and Fortunes in the Maintenance thereof.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

To this the Lords agreed; and ordered, That the Lord Mayor should be desired to call a Common-Hall, at Six that Evening, if he could, or else at Nine o'Clock next Morning. A Committee of four Lords, with a proportionable Number of Commoners, were appointed to go to the City on this Occasion. At the same Time the Speaker of the House of Lords was ordered to write the following Letter:

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount Falkland, Principal Secretary to his Majesty; or, in his Absence, to any of the Lords the Peers attending his Majesty.

My Lord,

I Am commanded, by the Peers assembled in Parliament, to desire your Lordship to advertise his Majesty, that the late Petition, resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, will be presented unto him; which they believe proper for your Lordship's Knowledge, that so his Majesty may be acquainted with it; and thus I rest

A Letter sent to inform the King of the said Petition.

Your Lordship's

November 9, 1642.

affectionate Servant,

GREY.

November 10. Committees of both Houses being gone out, on their several Embassies, one to the King, and the other to the City, the House of Lords only met and adjourned to the next Day. In the Committee for the latter, were the Earl of Holland and Mr. Pymme, whose Speeches at the Guild-

And a Committee go to acquaint the City of London therewith.

24 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1. *Guildhall* on the Occasion, not being printed in *Rushtworth's Collections*, we think deserve a Place in these Enquiries. 2

1642.
November.

The Earl of Holland's Speech.

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen and Inhabitants of the City,

The Earl of
Holland's Speech
on that Oc-
casion,

WE are commanded by both Houses of Parliament to come hither, and to deliver to you, that are their great Assistants, an Account of a Resolution they have taken to send a Petition to his Majesty, grounded upon these Reasons:

The first is, That there is a Duty towards God to seek Peace, indeed to seek it with all Men; therefore properly and naturally with the King: This they are directed to do. If Peace flies from us, to pursue it, to follow it: This is their holy Duty.

They have likewise taken into their Thoughts, very seriously, that which may concern the Safety of the King's Person, being engaged in this last Battle, through his own Resolution and Adventures, to put his Person in some Hazard; they have a Tenderneſs of that; and, amongst other Considerations, it is that which prevails with them to desire that He may not be in Danger, if it be possible, by a further Pursuance of this Action; which, in all Probability, must come to a second Blow, and that speedily, if there be not some other Way taken for an Accommodation.

There is another Reason that they are likewise persuaded the more willingly thus to petition and to desire Peace; that is, for the Saving and Recovering the Kingdom of Ireland out of the Distress that you have long seen it in. They know the Impossibility for this Kingdom to relieve that, if we continue in these Distractions and Confusions within ourselves; and, therefore, believe nothing can contribute or conduce towards the recovering of that Kingdom, and the delivering of those Persons from Dan-

London, Printed for Peter Cole, near the Royal-Exchange.

that you sent thither, but our Quietness and our Peace here. If that Kingdom should fall into other Hands, such Hands as it may likely and probably do, what Inconvenience, what Danger, must fall upon this Kingdom, from the Power and the Neighbourhood of that, you all must imagine.

They do likewise consider what Advantages, in the Distractions amongst ourselves, Foreign States may take, when our own Hands are weakened, and a Desolation through the whole Kingdom: Those that do malign our Religion, their Consciences direct them to destroy it, as well as their Ambitions to make a Conquest of the Nation; how open we shall be likewise to them for any Prejudice, or any Danger that may fall upon us.

Besides, they have a Consideration of the whole Kingdom, that have so long continued in Peace, in the Blessings of Peace; so long in the Beds of Peace, and in the Arms of Peace, (for these hundred Years there have been no Civil Divisions nor Distractions within this Kingdom) and those Abundances that Peace hath procured, and those Happinesses which are all likely to be devoured by the Sword of War; as in every Part of the Kingdom, already you see how it begins to destroy, with what Height, with what Power, with what Insolency.

These are Considerations, that have made them believe, that as it is a Duty to God, it is that which they owe likewise to the King; it is that which they owe to the Kingdom, in which they have been born and bred; it is likewise a Discharge of their own Consciences, that every Body may see that it is not their Faults, if Peace be not procured.

But though they are thus resolved, and upon these Reasons, to offer a Petition, and to seek Peace by all the Ways that are possible, yet they have commanded me to let you know, that, as they desire Peace, they will prepare for War; they have given Directions, that this Day my Lord-General shall carry his Army out of the City; there is a Rendezvous appointed; they shall there draw themselves together in such a Condition, as, we are very confident,

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

26 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 28. Car. I.
1642.

November.

ident, and very hopeful, we shall be able to defend it.

‘ We are likewise resolved, and so I am commanded to deliver to you, That as we have long kept together with Resolutions to defend our Privileges, our Religion, our Liberties, and Laws ; so we will continue in the same Resolution, and the same Purpose to do so ; nothing shall deter us from it. If we can find Peace from his Majesty upon these Conditions, that Religion, and Laws, and our Liberties, and all, may be happily secured to the Kingdom and to you all, we shall be glad of it ; and it will be a Blessing to us, and to you all : If it cannot be done, we are resolved, and so I am commanded to let you know, nothing shall discourage us, neither Danger, nor Power, nor any thing ; but if we cannot maintain our Religion, our Laws, and our Liberties, we will perish and die for it.’

Mr. Pymme’s Speech.

My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,

And Mr.
Pymme’s.

‘ **T** Here is little to be added to that which was said by this Noble Lord, who hath represented to you (to you of this famous City of London, who will make it much more famous by these noble Affections, which you have shewed still to the Public Good, and by yielding so much Aid, and so much Encouragement as you have done, to the Parliament in maintaining it) the Sense of both Houses, the Reasons and Motives upon which they did desire Peace : Motives, indeed, that have wrought with us from the Beginning of this War to this Time ; for we should never have stepped one Step towards War, if we might have had, or hoped for, such a Peace as might have secured Religion and Liberty, and the Public Good of the Kingdom ; but truly ill Counsel did exclude us from such Hope.

‘ We now conceive that the King, having seen the Courage of his Subjects, having seen the Danger

of his own Person, and so much Blood shed about him, he will be more tractable to good Conditions of Peace, than he would have been before; and that is the Reason why we do think fit to try him, once more, after this Battle that hath been lately fought, before it come to another Battle.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

'It is true, that this may seem a Resolution contrary to that which was opened to you within these few Days; but you will conceive, that all great Councils are subject to alter their Resolutions, according as Matters alter, and as the Apprehensions of Matters alter; for if Things appear more clear and hopeful to them at one Time than at another, it is no Dishonour for them to vary according to their Appearance, Judgments, and best Reasons; so long as they do it with Affections to the best Purpose; which you may rest assured the Parliament hath done: And though we desire Peace very much, yet a Peace to betray Religion, or to betray our Liberties, we shall always esteem worse than War; therefore we shall put it to a very quick Issue, if the King receive the Petition, to make such Propositions as you may see:

'First, Whether you shall be secured in your Religion; in your Religion with a Hope of Reformation; such a Reformation as may maintain the Power of Religion, and the Purity of Religion, as well as the Name of Religion; for we shall not be contented with the Name, nor without a Reformation that shall maintain the Power of it.

'Next, We shall pursue the Maintenance of our Liberties; Liberties that may not only be in Laws and Statutes; but Liberties that may be in Practice and in Execution; and to take such Course, that you may have the Effects of them in Truth: For to have printed Liberties, and not to have Liberties in Truth and Reality, is but to mock the Kingdom; and I hope we shall take Care for that in the second Place.

'Thirdly, We shall take Care to maintain the Dignity and the Honour of Parliament; for that

is

Ap. 18. Car. I. is what will be a lasting Security to you in your
1642. Liberty and Religion.

November.

‘ We shall take Care, in the *fourth* Place, to answer the Affections of the City of *London*, That we will not consent to any Thing that shall be prejudicial to them: We will preserve them in the highest Degree of Honour, that ever this City of *London* was in; and truly it is now in the highest Degree of Honour that ever it was; for you have carried yourselves in such a Regard to the Public, that never any of your Predecessors did so before; and therefore we shall, in a Peace, be as careful of you as of ourselves; and you may be assured of this, that if we have not this Peace, our Lives, our Pains, our Estates, they shall all join with you, in maintaining that with the Sword, which we shall not get in an humble Way by Petition; and this we shall bring to a quick Issue.

‘ Therefore I shall only move you, as I am commanded to do from the Parliament, that you will not think there is any Fainting on our Parts; that we are more cold, or less affectionate to any of these good Ends than heretofore we have been; but that we would compass them with more secure Advantage: For if you can get these by Peace, you will have great Advantages by it; you will hinder foreign Invasions from beyond the Seas; you will quickly be able to Master the Rebels in *Ireland*; you will quickly be able to suppress the Papists that begin to rise in *England*; then you shall have a perpetual Security, that they shall never be able to hurt you more: Therefore, if we can have such a Peace, without further Hazard and Blood-shedding, we shall praise God, and esteem it as a great Blessing; but if not, pray lay not down the same Spirits, for we have the same Hearts, and Multitudes of Spirits, and the Kingdom inclinable to us. Where the King has been, many, to save their Estates and Lives, have shewed themselves but Men; for it was not to be thought that single Counties should maintain themselves against an Army; but they have

have Hearts as they had before ; and no doubt but they will join with us, with more Alacrity, when they see we have desired Peace by all the Ways we could, and cannot have it.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642,
November.

' We shall, by this Means, satisfy our own Consciences ; we shall satisfy many Members of Parliament, that desired it might be put on this Way ; we shall satisfy many of the Kingdom too, that have held themselves indifferent ; but when they see there is no Hope of Peace, in such a Way, without Blood, certainly they will stand to us for Religion and Liberty ; which must be destroyed if we cannot secure them without War : Therefore, I shall commend to you, that you would not let fall any Part of your Contributions, for it is that which must maintain the Army ; nor entertain ill Apprehensions of the Parliament ; but go on so as you have done, and I hope it will be such an End as God may have all the Glory, and you all the Comfort.'

November 11. A Letter was read in the House of Lords, directed to their Speaker *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

WE were got near Maidenhead, when Sir Peter Killegrew met us, and told us that his Majesty was on Horse-back, on his Way towards Colebrook ; and that his Pleasure was, we should return thither and attend him there. When, soon after his Arrival, his Majesty sent for us, and we presented the Petition as we were commanded. His Majesty returned an Answer, which we here inclose, in the same Words, or as near as we can recollect them. This is all the Account that can be given by

Account of the
Petition's being
presented to the
King.

Your Lordship's Servants,

Cambridge, Nov, 10,
1642.

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.
PEMBROKE and MONTGOMERY.

The

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

November.

His Majesty's
first Answer.

The King's Answer, referred to in the foregoing Letter, was then read.

I Know you do not expect that I should give you an Answer now to this, which is of so great Importance; but something I will say, at this present, to the Preamble, mentioning the saving of the Effusion of Blood. I have often professed, and called God and Man to witness, that if other Men, whom a short Time will discover, had been as careful as myself, this War had not happened. What I have done was for my own Safety, and to maintain that Government with Honour, which my Father left me. I will not hinder your Return to London, but will, in Part, deliver my Answer to you To-morrow, and send it more fully by some Messengers of my own.

Amongst other Business done this Day, in the House of Lords, we find a Form of Thanks drawn up to be presented to their Lord-General; which, for its extraordinary Style, and high Expressions of Gratitude, deserves our Notice.

Both Houses re-
turn Thanks to
the Earl of *Essex*
for his Conduct.

THE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, having, upon mature Deliberation, and assured Confidence in the Wisdom, Courage, and Fidelity of *Robert Earl of Essex*, chosen and appointed him Captain-General of the Forces raised by the Authority of Parliament, for the Defence of the true Protestant Religion, the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, now in great and apparent Danger; do find, That the said Earl hath managed this Service, of so high Importance, with so much Care, Valour, and Dexterity; as well as by the extreme Hazard of his Life, in a bloody Battle, near *Keynton*, in *Warwickshire*, as, by all the Actions of a most excellent and expert Commander, in the whole Course of this Employment, as doth deserve their best Acknowledgement. We do, therefore, declare and publish, to the lasting Honour of the said Earl, the great and acceptable Service which he hath, herein, done to the Commonwealth; and shall be ready
' and

and willing, upon all Occasions, to express the due Sense which we have of his Merit, by assisting and protecting him, and all others employed under his Command, in this Service, with our Lives and Fortunes, to the uttermost of our Power. This to remain, upon Record, in both Houses of Parliament, as a Mark of Honour to his Person, Name, and Family, and for a Monument of his singular Virtue, to Posterity.' &

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

But the Commons were of Opinion, that the Earl of *Essex* deserved more than an Address of Thanks; for they resolved, That 5000 *l.* be forthwith presented to his Excellency from that House.

The last Thing we shall take Notice of, in the Business of this long Day, is an Order of Parliament for a strict Search to be made, in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and their Suburbs, *Southwark*, &c. for all Officers and common Soldiers, belonging to the Earl of *Essex's* Army; and to bring them to the Palace-Yard, *Westminster*, that they might be sent forthwith from thence to the Army. And all Alehouse-Keepers, or other Housholders, were strictly prohibited from harbouring any such, on very severe Penalties. This to be published, by beat of Drum, throughout the Places above-mentioned. And for a greater Inducement for all the soldiery to repair to their Colours, at the Time appointed, the Commons ordered every Foot-Soldier Half a Crown, and the Horse Five Shillings a-piece, over and above their Pay.

November 12. The Earls of *Northumberland* and *Pembroke* reported to the Lords, That they had waited on the King, Yesterday; who, to save Time, had returned a full Answer, by them, to their Petition.

His Majesty's ANSWER to the aforesaid PETITION.

WE take God to witness how deeply we are affected with the Miseries of this Kingdom, which, heretofore, we have strove, as much

The King's further Answer to the Parliament's Petition for Peace.

& It is accordingly entered in both Journals.

An. 13. Car. I.
1642.

November.

‘ as in us lay, to prevent; it being sufficiently known
 ‘ to all the World, That as we were not the first
 ‘ that took up Arms, so we have shewed our Readiness
 ‘ of composing all Things in a fair Way, by
 ‘ our several Offers of Treaty; and shall be glad,
 ‘ now at length, to find any such Inclination in
 ‘ others: The same Tenderneſs to avoid the Destruction
 ‘ of our Subjects, whom we know to be
 ‘ our greatest Strength, which would always make
 ‘ our greatest Victories bitter to us, shall make us
 ‘ willingly hearken to such Propositions whereby
 ‘ these bloody Distempers may be stopped, and the
 ‘ great Distractions of this Kingdom settled, to
 ‘ God’s Glory, our Honour, and the Welfare and
 ‘ Flourishing of our People; and, to that End, shall
 ‘ reside at our own Castle at *Windſor*, if the Forces
 ‘ there shall be removed, till Committees may have
 ‘ Time to attend us with the same; which, to prevent
 ‘ the Inconveniencies that will intervene, we
 ‘ wish may be hastened, and shall be ready there;
 ‘ or, if that be refused us, at any Place where we shall
 ‘ be, to receive such Propositions as aforesaid, from
 ‘ both Houses of Parliament. Do you your Duty;
 ‘ we will not be wanting in ours: God of his Mercy
 ‘ give a Blessing.’

After the reading of this Answer, it was resolved to communicate the Contents of it to the Commons. Then the Lord-General stood up, and desired he might receive Directions from the House how he should order his Forces during the Time of this Treaty: For, if he should advance his Quarters towards the King, it might be thought an Act of Hostility; and, if he should omit any Thing, then he might be looked upon as remiss. Thereupon the House resolved to write a Letter to the King’s Secretary, to know his Majesty’s Pleasure concerning a Cessation of Arms, during the Time of this Treaty; and gave the Lord-General Directions to forbear doing any Act of Hostility while further Orders. The Commons having given their Concurrence, a Letter was sent to the Secretary in these Words:

My

My Lord,

I Am commanded, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to signify to your Lordship, that, with much Joy, they received his Majesty's Gracious Answer unto their Petition; expressing his pious Inclinations unto Peace. They do resolve, with all Diligence, to send their humble Propositions unto his Majesty, and, likewise, their Answer concerning Windsor-Castle; in the mean Time, they desire to know his Majesty's Pleasure, how the Armies shall govern themselves, and whether he does not resolve on a Cessation of all Acts of Hostility, upon the Overture for Peace. This is all I have, at present, unto your Lordship, adding Duty unto it, and an Assurance of being

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

Lord Grey's Letter concerning a Cessation of Hostilities.

Your Lordship's

most affectionate Friend

and humble Servant,

G R E Y.

The House of Commons, however, did not wait for any Answer from the King; for this Day they agreed to send a Message to the Lord-General, to desire him to proceed according to his best Advantages, notwithstanding the foregoing Letter sent to the King by Sir Peter Killigrew, or any Proceedings thereon; in regard the other Side had begun to act Hostilities since that Letter was agreed upon. The General answered, That he did not intend to be amused by Treaties; but, since they had begun with Acts of Hostility, to pursue and see what they would do.

Nov. 13. The Parliament had now the City of London so much at their Devotion, that, this Day, the Commons being informed, That several Citizens were at the Door, who desired to offer something to their Consideration, they were called in: And one Mr. Shute, a Merchant, in the Name of the rest, addressed the House in a Speech, which appears to have been a very long one by the following

A Petition and Proposals from the City of London to the Commons.

An. 18. Car. 1. following Heads of it taken and entered in the *Commons Journals*:

1642.

November,

‘ That they did acknowledge, with all Thankfulness, the continued and unwearied Care and Pains of this House, for the Preservation of the true Protestant Religion, the Liberty of the People, and the Privileges of Parliament.

‘ They have presented a Petition of ten Particulars; to which they expect an Answer in convenient Time.

‘ They speak in the Language of many Thousands: That they fear they are bought and sold.

These Things they present:

1. ‘ That in a Case of so much Danger, and so great Concernment, there should be but one Army to rely upon.

2. ‘ That, in all this Time, the King’s Strength lying in Horse, that the City should not appear in a considerable Body of Horse.— Though it has been offered, and not effectually yet put in a Way, they do now again offer it.

3. ‘ That *Windsor-Castle* should not be provided for as it ought.

4. ‘ That Col. *Holles’s* Regiment, Men of that Courage, and so considerable, should be exposed to a Place of so imminent Danger, lying next to the Enemy’s Forces, and almost naked.

5. ‘ The Point of Accommodation is another Reason of their Grief.

They are come to this Resolution:

‘ That they will man out every Man his Man, and make their own Captains and Officers, and live and die with the House of Commons, and in Defence thereof: And if there be any in the Lords House, that do any way retard or hinder this public Defence, they wish they would declare themselves; and that they were with the King.

6. ‘ Another Matter of their Grief was, That the *Sabbath Day* should be so long profaned by public Authority; and the Book that enjoins it, not yet burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.

They

They observe that this Day they have so profaned An. 18. Car. 1.
has been the Day of their Ruin. ^a 1642.

7. 'The Blood of the Martyrs, shed in Queen Mary's Days, done by public Acts of Parliament, and no Expiation as yet made for it.

November.

8. 'The Officers in the Army (though they must always mention my Lord-General with Honour, as one in whom they absolutely confide) not so careful and diligent as they ought, nor all of them so trusty.

9. 'The Numbers of the Prisoners very great, and of dangerous Condition; and the Masters and Keepers of those Prisons not to be confided in. ^b

10. 'The good Ministers in Time past silenced, and put out by the Bishops.

'You have our Persons, Purfes, and Estates, all at your Command: You may do with us at your Pleasure.

'We come in the Name of the Godly and Active Part of the City.'

The Citizens being withdrawn, the Commons came to the following Resolutions:

1. 'That the Book concerning Injoining and Tolerating of Sports upon the *Sabbath* Day, be forthwith burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman, in the usual Places.

2. 'That this House doth accept of the Offer of the Citizens, of furnishing Horse and Foot; and doth account it to be a Service much importing the Safety of the Commonwealth; and doth return them public and hearty Thanks.'

The Citizens being called in again, the Speaker, by the Command of the House, told them, 'They found that what was said was expressed with a zealous and earnest Care of the Commonwealth; for which they returned them public and hearty Thanks.

C 2

'For

He means, we suppose, the Battle of *Edge-Hill*, fought on a Sunday.

About this Time the Commons resolved, That the Bishop of *Winchester's* House, in *Southwark*, should be appointed as a Prison for Delinquents; probably for the Reason here assigned.

36 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

‘ For the Particular of Horse and Foot, they accept it; and have appointed a particular Committee to treat about it.

‘ The Book of Sports they have voted to be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.’

Mr. *Shute* having desired to speak again, said ‘ That the coming of the Lord General’s Army into the City of *London*, and staying here so long as they did, is another Thing that troubles them; which they forgot to express before.

‘ Another Thing is, That some present and more severe Course might be taken with Malig-nants; and, amongst them, with the malignant Ministers.’

And then the Citizens withdrew.

November 14. A Letter from the King, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read; which was only a Command to him to communicate the inclosed Paper to the whole House; the Purport of which was this :

The King’s Mes-
sage concerning
his marching to
Brentford;

W Hereas the last Night, being the 11th of *November*, after the Departure of the Committee of both our Houses, with our gracious Answer to their Petition, we received certain In-formation (having till then heard nothing of it, either from the Houses Committee, or otherwise) that the Earl of *Effex* had drawn his Forces out of *London* towards us, which hath necessitated our sudden Resolution to march with our Forces to *Brentford*; we have thought fit hereby to signify to both our Houses of Parliament, that we are no less desirous of the Peace of the Kingdom, than we expressed in our aforesaid Answer; the Propo-sitions for which we shall willingly receive, where-ever we are; and desire, if it may be, to receive them at *Brentford* this Night, or early To-mor-row Morning, that all possible Speed may be made in so good a Work; and all Inconve-niences, otherwise likely to intervene, may be avoided.’

The

The House was likewise informed, That Sir *Peter Killigrew*, who was to carry the Letter sent last from the Parliament to the King, went as far as *Brentford*, where he found the King's Army engaged with some Regiments of the Lord-General's; and that when endeavouring to go by *Uxbridge*, he was there also stopp'd by some Dragoons belonging to the King's Army; and upon that he returned back with the Letter, which he desired to know what to do with.

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

November.

Where both Armies engage.

The Lord-General saying, at the same Time, That he had placed three Regiments at *Brentford*, before the Committee of Lords and Commons came from the King, it was resolved to have a Conference with the Commons on all these Matters; and to appoint a Committee to draw up a Declaration; which, with the Letters *pro* and *con*, were to be forthwith printed and published, in order to vindicate the Actions and Desires of both Houses, concerning Peace and a Cessation of Arms. At this Conference, however, it was recommended to the Lord-General, by both Houses, to take all Advantage against the Enemy, wherever he found them.

The Parliament desire the Earl of *Essex* to make use of all Advantages.

Nov. 15. The Commons resolved to accept of an Offer of the Citizens of *London*, whereby they engaged to raise 1000 Light Horse and 3000 Dragoons, for the Service of the Parliament, to be commanded by the Lord-General alone, and to be accountable to none but himself by the Advice of both Houses. They also recommended Serjeant-Major-General *Skippon*, who formerly had commanded the Guard appointed to attend both Houses, to command those Horse and Dragoons in Chief under the Lord-General; and Col. *Hurrey* under Mr. *Skippon* *. Mr. *Whitlocke* gives us the following Speech of the latter to his Soldiers; who, he

The Citizens of *London* raise Light Horse and Dragoons.

C 3

says,

* Both Lord *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke* agree in ascribing this extraordinary Offer of the Citizens, to the indefatigable Zeal and Activity of the Lord Mayor *Pennington*, who succeeded to that Office by the Removal of Sir *Richard Gurney*, and was again elected for the Year 1643.

An. 18. Car. I. says, were more taken with it than with a formal Oration.

1642.

November.

Mr. Skippon's
Speech to those
Troops.

COME my Boys, my brave Boys, let us pray heartily and fight heartily, I will run the same Fortunes and Hazards with you. Remember the Cause is for God, and for the Defence of yourselves, your Wives, and Children. Come my honest brave Boys, pray heartily and fight heartily, and God will bleſs us.

Nov. 16. The Committee of Safety having drawn up an Answer to the King's last Meſſage, it was this Day read and agreed to by both Houſes, and was in hæc Verba:

The Parlia-
ment's Answer
to the King's
laſt Meſſage.

TO your Maſteſty's Meſſage of the 12th of this Month of November, we the Lords and Commons in Parliament do make this humble Answer, That this Meſſage was not delivered to us till Monday the 14th. We thought it a ſtrange Introduction to Peace, that your Maſteſty ſhould ſend your Army to beat us out of our Quarters at Brentford, and then appoint that Place to receive our Propoſitions; which yet, it plainly appears, your Maſteſty intended not to receive, 'till you had firſt tried whether you could break through the Army, raiſed for the Defence of this Kingdom and Parliament, and take the City, being unprovided and ſecure in Expectation of a fair Treaty made to ſecure the City: If herein your Maſteſty had prevailed, after you had deſtroyed the Army and maſter'd the City, it is eaſy to imagine what a miſerable Peace we ſhould have had: And whether thoſe Courſes be ſuitable to the Expreſſions your Maſteſty is pleaſed to make, in your Answer to our Petition, of your Earneſtneſs to avoid any further Effuſion of Blood, let God and the World judge.

As for our Proceedings, they have, in all Things, been answerable to our Profeſſions: We gave Directions to the Earl of Eſſex to draw the Army under his Command out of the City and Suburbs, before we ſent any Meſſage to your Maſteſty,

jesty, so that Part of it was quartered in *Brentford* An. 18. Car. I.
 before the Committee return'd with your Answer; 1642.
 and immediately upon the Receipt thereof, that
 very Morning, Order was taken that the Soldiers
 should exercise no Acts of Hostility against any of
 your Majesty's People: We sent a Letter by Sir
Peter Killigrew to know your Majesty's Pleasure,
 whether you intended the like Forbearance of Ho-
 stility; but the Fury of your Soldiers, thirsting
 after Blood and Spoil, prevented the Delivery of
 the Letter; for coming, upon *Saturday*, in his Way
 towards your Majesty, as far as *Brentford*, he
 found them in Fight there, and could pass no far-
 ther. God, who sees our Innocency, and that we
 have no Aims but for his Glory and the Public
 Good, will, we hope, free your Majesty from these
 destructive Counsels of some, who labour to main-
 tain their own Power by Blood and Rapine; and
 bless our Endeavours, who seek nothing but to pro-
 cure and establish the Honour, Peace, and Safety
 of your Majesty and Kingdoms, upon the sure
 Foundations of Religion and Justice.'

November.

The Lord *Grey*, as Speaker, was ordered to send
 this Answer to the King, inclosed in a Letter to the
 Lord *Falkland*, by Sir *Peter Killigrew*.

Nov. 18. Though both Houses were so much
 employed in the Military Service, that little or no-
 thing else can be found in the *Journals* of either of
 them; yet, this Day, an Accident happened which
 diverted them a little from that Pursuit, and turned
 their Thoughts towards Law-Affairs and Courts of
 Justice. The Lords were informed, That a Mes-
 senger had been apprehended by the Lord-General, His Majesty ha-
 who finding about him a Proclamation and Writs veng proposed to
 for the Adjournment of the present Term, the said adjourn *Michael-*
 Papers were sent to the House of Commons; and, *mas* Term,
 upon opening, they found the Proclamation for Ad-
 journment was to take Place as that very Day.
 This the Commons conceived to be very destructive
 and prejudicial to the whole Kingdom, if it should
 be so; there being three Days in the Law, one for
 Es-

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

1. Effoigns, another for Returns, and a third for Appearances. And if the Term should be adjourned, according to this Proclamation and Writ, it would be obstructive to the whole Proceedings of the Law, and many Evils would ensue. For,

1. All former Proceedings, at the last Assizes, would be lost, so that no Judgment could be given therein.

2. No original Writs, or mesne Process, could issue out, on any Occasion, though it be to deliver any out of Prison.

3. If the Term should be adjourned, there being an Army in the Field, and the King's Colours flying, it would be accounted *Tempus Belli*, when all Laws sleep, are silent and dissolved; and then there would be no Property, nor would any Violence be counted an Injury.

4. No Fines nor Recoveries could be taken, whereby Men may pass common Assurances for settling their Estates; besides many other Evils would ensue, to the Obstruction of the whole Law.

Therefore the House of Commons desired, that their Lordships would give Direction to the Judges to keep this Term, and not to make Adjournments of it, either by virtue of these Writs, or any other Writs whatsoever they shall receive.

The Writs were not opened, but the Proclamation was read as follows:

And issued a Proclamation for that Purpose,

‘ **W** Hereas his Majesty did adjourn Part of this Term of *St. Michael*, from the first Return, called *A Die S. Michaelis in tres Septimanas*, untill the Return, *Octab. S. Martini*; his Majesty, considering the present Distractions of this Kingdom, doth declare, That the Residue of the said Term, beginning at the said Return of *Octab. S. Martini*, be wholly adjourned, as to all Appearances, Causes, Matters, and Things, which should have been made or done in any of his Majesty's Courts at *Westminster*, untill *Octab. Hilarii* next following; and that Writs of Adjournment shall be made by one Judge of each Bench, giving them

them Power to adjourn the Residue of the said An. 18. Car. I.
Term of St. Michael's; and the said Adjourn- 1642.
ment shall be made on the first Day of the said November.
Octab. S. Michaelis, commonly called the Day of
Essoigns.

*Given at Oatlands, the 15th of November, in the
18th Year of his now Majesty's Reign.*

The Lords taking these Matters into serious Con-
sideration, as a Thing of great Importance to the
Good of the whole Kingdom, agreed with the
House of Commons in the Matter of this Message,
and made the following Order:

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parlia- The Parliament
ment assembled, ' That the Judges of the King's forbid the Judges
Bench, Court of Common Pleas, and Barons of the to adjourn the
Exchequer, are hereby enjoined that they do not, said Term,
neither by virtue of these Writs of Adjournment
now sent, nor any other Writs whatsoever which
shall be sent, adjourn this Term of St. Michael; but
that they shall sit and proceed to dispatch the public
Justice of the Kingdom, according as is usual in
their several Courts.

This Order was read in the House; and the Judges
present commanded to take Notice, and obey it.

There had been some Intimations, for several Days And resolve to
last past, entered in the *Journals*, for calling in the call in the Assist-
Scots to the Assistance of the Parliament; and this ance of the *Scots*.
Day a Declaration was sent up from the Commons,
whereby one Mr. *Pickering* was authorized and re-
quired to deliver the same to the Council of State
in that Kingdom, and otherwise to publish it as he
should see Occasion; and that Instructions be sent
to him to solicit the Effect of it. It was also or-
dered, That the said Declaration should be deliver'd
to the *Scots* Commissioners residing in *London*. To
all which the Lords agreed, and is as follows:

' WE the Lords and Commons assembled in Their Declara-
' the Parliament of *England*, considering tion to that
' with what Wisdom and public Affection our Bre- Kingdom.
' thren

42. *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

November.

‘ thren of the Kingdom of *Scotland* did concur with
 ‘ the Endeavours of this Parliament, and the De-
 ‘ fires of the whole Kingdom, in procuring and
 ‘ establishing a firm Peace and Amity between the
 ‘ two Nations; and how lovingly they have since
 ‘ invited us to a nearer and higher Degree of Union,
 ‘ in Matters concerning Religion and Church-Gov-
 ‘ ernment, which we have most willingly and af-
 ‘ fectionately embraced and intend to pursue, can-
 ‘ not doubt but they will, with as much Forward-
 ‘ ness and Affection, concur with us in settling Peace
 ‘ in this Kingdom, and preserving it in their own;
 ‘ that so we may mutually reap the Benefit of that
 ‘ Amity and Alliance, so happily made and strongly
 ‘ confirmed betwixt the two Nations. Where-
 ‘ fore, as we did about a Year since, in the first Ap-
 ‘ pearance of Trouble then beginning amongst them,
 ‘ actually declare, That, in our Sense and Appre-
 ‘ hension of the National Alliance betwixt us, we
 ‘ were thereby bound to apply the Authority of Par-
 ‘ liament and Power of this Kingdom to the Preser-
 ‘ vation and Maintenance of their Peace: And see-
 ‘ ing now that the Troubles of this Kingdom are
 ‘ grown to a greater Height, and the subtle Prac-
 ‘ tices of the common Enemy of the Religion and
 ‘ Liberty of both Nations do appear with more
 ‘ Evidence, Strength, and Danger, than they did at
 ‘ that Time: We hold it necessary to declare, That,
 ‘ in our Judgment, the same Obligation lies upon
 ‘ our Brethren by the afore-mentioned Act, with
 ‘ the Power and Force of that Kingdom to assist us,
 ‘ in repressing those amongst us who are now in
 ‘ Arms and make War, not only without Consent
 ‘ of Parliament, but even against the Parliament,
 ‘ and for the Destruction thereof.

‘ Wherefore we have thought good to make
 ‘ known to our Brethren, that his Majesty hath gi-
 ‘ ven Commission to divers eminent and known
 ‘ Papists, to raise Forces, and compose an Army
 ‘ in the *North*, and other Parts of this Kingdom;
 ‘ which is to join with divers foreign Forces intended

‘ to

to be transported from beyond the Seas, for the Destruction of this Parliament, and of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom. And that the Prelatical Part of the Clergy, and their Adherents, have likewise invited his Majesty to raise another Army; which, in his own Person, he doth conduct against the Parliament and the City of *London*, plundering and robbing sundry well-affected Towns, within their Power: And that, in Prosecution of their Malice, they are so presumptuous and predominant of his Majesty's Resolutions, that they forbear not those Outrages in Places to which his Majesty hath given his Royal Word and Protection. A great Cause and Incentive of which Malice proceeds from the Design they have to hinder the Reformation in Ecclesiastical Government in this Kingdom, so much longed for by all true Lovers of the Protestant Religion.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

And hereupon we further desire our Brethren of the Nation of *Scotland*, to raise such Forces as they shall judge sufficient for the securing the Peace of their own Borders, against the ill-affected Persons there; as likewise to assist us in suppressing the Army of Papists and Foreigners, which, as we expect, will shortly be on Foot here; and, if they be not timely prevented, may prove as mischievous and destructive to that Kingdom as to ourselves.

And though we seek nothing from his Majesty, that may diminish his just Authority or Honour; and have, by many humble Petitions, endeavoured to put an End to this unnatural War and Combustion in the Kingdom; and to procure his Majesty's Protection and Security for our Religion, Liberty, and Persons, according to that great Trust which his Majesty is bound to by the Laws of the Land; and shall still continue to renew our Petitions in that Kind: Yet, to our great Grief, we see the Papistical and Malignant Counsel so prevalent with his Majesty, and his Person so engaged to their Power, that we have little Hope of better Success

44 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

November.

‘ Success of our Petitions than we formerly had ;
‘ and are thereby necessitated to stand upon our just
‘ Defence, and to seek this speedy and powerful
‘ Assistance of our Brethren of *Scotland*, according
‘ to that Act agreed upon in the Parliament of both
‘ Kingdoms, the common Duty of Christianity,
‘ and the particular Interests of their own King-
‘ dom : To which we hope God will give such a
‘ Blessing, that it may produce the Preservation of
‘ Religion ; the Honour, Safety, and Peace of his
‘ Majesty, and all his Subjects ; and a more strict
‘ Conjunction of the Counsels, Designs, and En-
‘ deavours of both Nations, for the Comfort and
‘ Relief of the Reformed Churches beyond the
‘ Seas.’

JOHN BROWN, *Cler. Parl.*

Nov. 7,
1642.

HEN. ELSYNGE, *Cler. Dom. Com.*

In Answer to the foregoing Declaration of Parlia-
ment, the King sent the following Message to the
Lords of his Privy Council of *Scotland*, some Time
after : But we bring it in here for the Sake of Con-
nection.

*Right Trusty and Right Well-beloved Cousins and
Counsellors, and Right Trusty and Well-beloved
Counsellors, we greet you well,*

The King's An-
swer, addressed to
the Privy-Coun-
cil of *Scotland*.

WE have lately seen a Paper, presented to us
by the Earl of *Lindsay*, as a Declaration
of the Lords and Commons assembled in the Par-
liament of *England*, of the seventh of *November*,
to our Subjects of our Kingdom of *Scotland* ;
which, after many high Taxes of us and our Go-
vernment, very earnestly invites, and in a Man-
ner challenges, Assistance from that our Native
Kingdom, of Men and Arms for making a War
against us ; making a Claim to that Assistance, by
virtue of the late Act of Pacification, to the which
(out of our Desire to make a perpetual Union be-
tween our two Kingdoms, for the Happiness of
both, and by it the more firmly to establish our
own

own Greatness and just Power) we chearfully consented. An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

November.

As we are, at our Soul, afflicted that it hath been in the Power of any factious, ambitious, and malicious Persons, so far to possess the Hearts of many of our Subjects of *England*, as to raise this miserable Distemper and Distraction in this Kingdom, against all our real Actions and Endeavours to the contrary; so we are glad that this Rage and Fury hath so far transported them, that they apply themselves, in so gross a Manner, to our Subjects of *Scotland*; whose Experience of our Religion, Justice, and Love of our People, will not suffer them to believe those horrid Scandals laid upon us; and their Affection, Loyalty, and Jealousy of our Honour, will disdain to be made Instruments to oppress their Native Sovereign, by assisting an odious Rebellion.

We have, from Time to Time, acquainted our Subjects of that Kingdom with the Accidents and Circumstances which have disquieted this; how (after all the Acts of Justice, Grace, and Favour performed on our Part, which were, or could be, desired to make a People completely happy) we were driven, by the Force and Violence of rude and tumultuous Assemblies, from our City of *London*, and our two Houses of Parliament: How Attempts have been made to impose Laws upon our Subjects without our Consent, contrary to the Foundation and Constitution of this Kingdom: How our Forts, Goods, and Navy were seized and taken from us by Force, and employed against us: Our Revenue and ordinary Subsistence wrested from us: How we have been pursued with scandalous and reproachful Language; bold, false, and seditious Pasquils and Libels publickly allowed against us; and been told, *That we might, without Want of Modesty and Duty, be deposed.*

Now, after all this, before any Force was raised by us, an Army was raised, and a General appointed to lead that Army against us; with a Commission to kill, slay, and destroy all such who should

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

' should be faithful to us. That when we had been,
 ' by these Means, compelled, with the Assistance
 ' of our good Subjects, to raise an Army for our
 ' necessary Defence; we sent divers gracious Mes-
 ' sages, earnestly desiring that the Calamities and
 ' Miseries of a Civil War might be prevented by a
 ' Treaty, and so we might know the Ground of
 ' this Misunderstanding. How we were absolutely
 ' refused to be treated with; and how, at last, the
 ' Army (raised, as was pretended, for the Defence
 ' of our Person) was brought into the Field against
 ' us, gave us Battle; and, though it pleased God to
 ' give us the Victory, destroyed many of our good
 ' Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own
 ' Person and our Children, as the Skill and Malice
 ' of desperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which,
 ' and the other Indignities which have been offered
 ' us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our
 ' *Scots* Subjects will have so just a Resentment, that
 ' they will express to the World the Sense they
 ' have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects
 ' of *Scotland* are not, we hope, so great Strangers
 ' to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that this
 ' Misfortune and Distraction is begot and brought
 ' upon us by our two Houses of Parliament; tho',
 ' in Truth, no unwarrantable Action against the
 ' Law can be justified, even by that Authority.
 ' They well know how the Members of both
 ' Houses have been driven thence, in so much that,
 ' of above five hundred Members of the House of
 ' Commons, there are not now there above eighty;
 ' and of above one hundred of the House of Peers,
 ' not above fifteen or sixteen: All which are so
 ' awed by the Multitude of Anabaptists, Brownists,
 ' and other Persons, desperate and decayed in their
 ' Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that,
 ' in Truth, their Consultations have not the Free-
 ' dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.
 ' Concerning any Commissions granted by us to
 ' Papists to raise Forces, we must refer our good
 ' Subjects to a Declaration, lately set forth by us
 ' upon the Occasion of that Scandal, which we
 ' send

send together with this; and for our own true and zealous Affection to the Protestant Religion, the Advancement whereof our Soul desires, we can give no other Instance, than our constant Practice, on which Malice itself can lay no Blemish, and those many Protestations we have made in the Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we shall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the Observation.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

For that scandalous Imputation of our Intention of bringing in foreign Forces; as the same is raised without the least Colour or Shadow of Reason, and solemnly disavowed by us in many of our Declarations; so there cannot be a clearer Argument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we have no such Thought, than that we have hitherto forborne to require the Assistance of that our Native Kingdom; from whose Obedience, Duty, and Affection, we should confidently expect it, if we thought our own Strength here too weak to preserve us; and of whose Courage and Loyalty we shall look to make use, before we shall think of any foreign Aid to succour us. And we know no reasonable or understanding Man can suppose our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, or enabled, by the late Act of Parliament in both Kingdoms, to obey the Invitation which is made to them by this pretended Declaration; when it is so evidently provided for by that Act, *That as the Kingdom of England shall not make War against the Kingdom of Scotland, without Consent of the Parliament of England; so the Kingdom of Scotland shall not make War against the Kingdom of England, without the Consent of the Parliament of Scotland;* and when they have always declared themselves so careful of our Honour, Safety, and just Rights, which now undergo so great Violation.

This we have thought fit to say upon Occasion of this late Declaration; and do commend it to you, the Lords of our Privy-Council of our Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and published

An. 18. Car. I.
1642,
November.

lished to all our loving Subjects there: And if
the grave Counsel and Advice, which you derived
hither by your Act of the 22d of *April* last, had
been followed here, in a tender Care of our Royal
Person, and of our Princely Greatness and Authority, then would not this Face of Confusion have
appeared, which now threatens this Kingdom:
And therefore we require you to use your utmost
Endeavours to inform our Subjects of that our
Kingdom of the Truth of our Condition; and
that you suffer not the Scandals and Imputations,
laid on us by the Malice and Treason of some
Men, to make any Impression in the Minds of
our People, to the lessening or corrupting their
Affection and Loyalty to us; but that you assure
them the Hardships we now undergo, and the
Arms we have been compelled to take up, are for
the Defence of our Person, and the Safety of our
Life; for the Maintenance of the true Protestant
Religion; - for the Preservation of the Laws, Liberties, and Constitutions of this Kingdom; and
for the just Privileges of Parliament; and we look
no longer for the Blessing of Heaven, than we endeavour the Defence and Advancement of all
these: And we doubt not a dutiful Concurrence
in our Subjects of *Scotland*, in the Care of our
Honours and just Rights, will draw down a Blessing upon that Nation too.'

Nov. 19. A Letter was read, directed to the Lord *Grey of Werk*, as Speaker, from the Lord *Falkland*, with his Majesty's Reply, inclosed, to the Answer of both Houses to his Majesty's Message of the 12th Instant, which was also read as follows:

The King's Reply to the Parliament's last Answer.

THAT his Message of the 12th, though not received by them till the 14th, was sent to them, first, upon the same Day on which it was dated; and, meeting with Stops by the Way, was again sent upon the 13th, and taken upon that
Day,

• In our Tenth Volume.

Day, at Ten in the Morning, by the Earl of *Essex*; and, tho' not to him directed, was by him opened; so the Slowness of the Delivery is not so strange, as the Stop of that Letter said to be sent by Sir *Peter Killegrew*, which his Majesty hath not yet received; but concludes, from the Matter expressed to have been contained in that Letter, (to wit, to know his Pleasure, whether he intended the Forbearance of Hostility) and by the Command of such Forbearance, said to be sent to the Lord of *Essex's* Army, that no such Forbearance was already concluded; and, consequently, neither had his Majesty Cause to suppose that he should take any of their Forces unprovided and secure, in an Expectation of a fair Treaty; neither could any hostile Act of his Majesty's Forces have been a Course unsuitable to his Expressions; much less could an Endeavour to repossess that Place (for so he hop'd he might have done, which might have stopped the further March of these Forces towards him; which, for ought appeared to him, might as well have been intended to *Colebrook* as *Brentford*; and, by that, the further Effusion of Blood) deserve that Style.

His Majesty further conceives, That the printing, so out of Time, such a Declaration as their Reply to his Answer to theirs of the 26th of *May*, but the Day before they voted the Delivery of their Petition; and the March of the Earl of *Essex's* Forces to *Brentford*, so near to his Majesty, when the Committee at the same Time attended him with a Petition for a Treaty, (the Earl of *Essex* being before possessed of all the other Avenues to his Army, by his Forces at *Windsor*, *Acton*, and *Kingston*) was a more strange Introduction to Peace, than for his Majesty not to suffer himself to be cooped up on all Sides, because a Treaty had been mentioned; which was so really

VOL. XII.

D

and

This Reply, which on account of the excessive Length of it, we saw, was not ordered to be printed till the 2d of *November*, though called by both Houses in *July*. It may be found both in *Rushworth's* and *Husbands*.

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

November.

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

and so much desired by his Majesty, that this Proceeding seems to him, purposely, by some intended to divert, which it could not do, that his Inclination.

That his Majesty had no Intention to master the City by so advancing, besides his Profession, which how meanly soever they seem to value it, he conceives a sufficient Argument, especially being only opposed by Suspicions and Surmises, may appear by his not pursuing his Victory at *Brentford*; but giving Order to his Army to march away to *Kingston* as soon as he heard that Place was quitted, before any Notice or further Appearance of Forces from *London*; nor could he find a better Way to satisfy them before-hand, that he had no such Intention, but that his Desire of Peace and of Propositions that might conduce to it still continued, than by that Message of the twelfth; for which Care of his he was requited by such a Reception of his Message and Messenger, as was contrary at once both to Duty, Civility, and the very Customs and the Law of War and Nations; and such as theirs, though after this Provocation, have not have found from him.

His Majesty wonders that his Soldiers should be charged with thirsting after Blood, who took above 500 Prisoners in the very Heat of the Fight; his Majesty having since dismissed all the common Soldiers, and entertained such as were willing to serve him, and required only from the rest an Oath not to serve against him. And his Majesty supposes such most apt and likely to maintain their Power by Blood and Rapine, who have got it only by Oppression and Injustice; that his is vested in him by the Law, and by that only (if the destruc-

^b Mr. *White*, the King's Messenger, was very roughly used by the Earl of *Essex*, and the Parliament committed him to the *Gatehouse*, not without the Motion of some Men, That he might be executed as a Spy. *Clarendon, 8vo. Vol. III. p. 76.*

^c Two of the Parliament's most eminent Chaplains, Dr. *Downing*, and Mr. *Marshall*, publicly avowed, That those Men were not obliged by that Oath. *Ibid. p. 81.*

‘tive Counsels of others would not hinder such a Peace, in which that might once again be the universal Rule, and in which Religion and Justice can only flourish) he desires to maintain it. And if Peace were equally desired by them, as it is by his Majesty, he conceives it would have been proper to have sent him such a Paper, as should have contained just Propositions of Peace, and not an unjust Accusation of his Counsels, Proceedings, and Person. And his Majesty intends to march to such a Distance from his City of *London*, as may take away all Pretence of Apprehension from his Army, that might hinder them, in all Security, from yet preparing them to present to him; and will there be ready either to receive them, or end the Presures and Miseries which his Subjects, to his great Grief, suffer thro’ this War, by a present Battle.’

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November.

When this was read, the Earl of *Northumberland* informed the House, That he had received a Packet of Letters, taken about Mr. *Murray*, who brought this Reply from the King; and desired to be directed what to do with them. Hereupon the Lords opened and perused the Papers, and found a Copy of the Reply, with a Declaration of his Majesty, and a Warrant sent to the King’s Printer to print them. Upon which a Conference was resolved on with the other House, to desire them to join in appointing a Committee, to consider what Answer was fit to be given to this Reply of the King’s; it being a Business of so great Consequence, that either a great deal of Misery, or a great deal of Happiness, would follow upon the Resolution to be taken thereupon.

A Conference thereupon.

November 21. Mr. *Shute*, at the Head of several Citizens of *London*, appeared this Day again before the Commons. What he had to offer stands thus upon their *Journals*, ‘That he came to speak to them from the most Active and the most Religious Part of the City, to acquaint the House they understood that an Accommodation was on Foot; which grieved their Hearts, considering what followed on

Farther Propositions from the Citizens of *London*.

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

November,

the last : But if the Accommodation went not on, then to consider how Monies might be raised, in such sort as that the whole Charge might not lay upon the Good and Godly Party ; but that the Malignant Party might be forced to bear their Share, fully, according to their Abilities.

‘ Another Thing which troubled them, he said, was an Imputation cast upon the Godly Part of the City, by the Malignant Party, as if they desired an Independent Government should be set up in the Church, which they desired might be wiped off.’

After returning Thanks to the Citizens for their Propositions, and the Affection expressed in them, the King’s last Message was read ; and the Question being put, Whether the House would, forthwith, resolve itself into a Committee to take it into Consideration ? It passed in the Affirmative, only by 75 against 65 ; when, after some Debate on the Message, the Question being again put, Whether the House should be resolved into a Committee Tomorrow Morning to resume this Debate ? The House divided, when the Numbers were 67 for the Question and 66 against it : Two small Majorities to carry such important Questions, upon which, as the Lords had before observed, depended the Good or the Misery of the Kingdom.

November 22. This Answer took up a great deal of Time in perfecting ; for though a Committee of both Houses went immediately upon it, yet, this Day, we find Mr. *Murray*, the King’s Messenger, was discharged from Attendance, and sent back ; because, it is said, it was uncertain how long it might be e’er the Answer would be ready ; and the Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord *Falkland*, to acquaint the King with the Reason for this Delay.

The same Day the Commons being informed, That divers Citizens were at the Door, they were called in ; and Mr. *Shute*, once more, told them, in the Name of the rest, That one Thing, which exceedingly troubled them, was, the Point of Accommodation

Accommodation of Peace, more to be feared than their An. 18. Car. I.
Power. ——— If the Accommodation proceed not, 1642.
Monies then to be raised.

November,

‘ They would propound three Ways :

1. ‘ Concerning Plate in the Halls of *London*.
2. ‘ Subscriptions in the several Wards underwritten, not yet brought in.
3. ‘ Weekly Subscriptions to be advanced.

‘ The Means for saving of Monies.

1. ‘ To cut off superfluous Charges by unnecessary Officers in the Army.
2. ‘ That there may be due Musters.
3. ‘ Indifferent honest Men to be chosen in every Ward, to raise and advance the Subscriptions. ——— Foreign Merchants to be brought in, to give their Assistance to the Public. — Then they withdrew.

And being again call’d in, Mr. Speaker, by Command of the House, return’d them Thanks, as before.

November 23. A Report was made to the Lords of a Conference held the Day before ; which Mr. *Pymme* said, was appointed by the House of Commons, to acquaint their Lordships with some Votes pass’d by that House, in Answer to the King’s Reply, to which they desired the Lord’s Concurrence. These were divided into two Parts :

1. ‘ That in the Answer to his Majesty’s Message, the Houses should desire the King to return to his Parliament; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be secured by the Advice of Parliament; that the Process and Justice of Parliament, being the Supreme Court of Judicature, might have its free Course, and be executed on Delinquents; and that they might not be protected and kept from Justice by Force. In particular, that the Lord *Digby* and Mr. *Henry Wilmot*, be, presently, delivered over to the Justice of Parliament. That the Commons remember what Misfortune lately befell the two Regiments, at *Brentford*, upon the last Treaty; therefore they now think fit to declare, That both Armies shall be left to take all Advantage they can, on both Sides, in the mean Time.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November,

2. 'Concerning the Challenge; the House of Commons say, They think it strange that the King of *England* should send a Challenge and Invitation to a Battle with his own Subjects; seeing, heretofore, his Majesty seemed to decline the Effusion of Blood, and professed using all Means to prevent the same: Therefore the House of Commons resolve to be in Readiness; but if his Majesty will withdraw himself from his Cavaliers and the Army, he shall be received; if not, they will not decline, if he has a Mind, to give a Battle, the Time and Place being first appointed.

'These are the Heads the House of Commons have resolved on; which, if their Lordships should concur with, they desired that Committees of both Houses might be appointed to put them into a Form fit to be sent to his Majesty.'

A Petition drawn up by the Lords in Answer to the King's last Reply.

This Report being made, the Lords ordered, That the Consideration of this Matter should be put to a Committee of their whole House then present; and immediately the House was adjourned, during Pleasure, the Lords going into the Prince's Lodgings to debate it. And, in the Afternoon of this Day, the Earl of *Holland*, one of the Committee appointed, in the Morning, to consider of the foregoing Votes, delivered in a Draught of a Petition, to be presented to the King, in which they thought fit to leave out the whole, relating to the Challenge, and only to send the following:

May it please your Majesty,

IT is humbly desired by both Houses of Parliament, That your Majesty would be pleased to return to your Parliament with your Royal, not your Martial, Attendants; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties, may be settled and secured by their Advice; finding, by a late and sad Accident, that your Majesty is environed by some such Counsels, as do rather persuade a desperate Division, than a Joining and a good Agreement with your Parliament and People; and we shall be ready to give your Majesty Assurances of
such

such Security, as may be for your Honour and the Safety of your Royal Person. An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

Or else we shall, in convenient Time, consider of Propositions to be sent to your Majesty, such as may be for the Preservation of God's true Religion, your Majesty's Honour, Safety, and Prosperity, and to the Peace and Happiness of this and your other Kingdoms. November.

The Lords, on the Question, agreed to this Petition, and ordered it to be sent down to be communicated to the Commons at another Conference.

Next Day a Report of this second Conference was made in the House of Lords, That the Commons said, They studied nothing more than the good Correspondency between the two Houses, and they desired a Continuance of it; though they differed somewhat in Opinion, about the Conference the last Night, on the last Petition intended to be sent to his Majesty. That they agreed to the first; but had resolved, That the latter Part, beginning with the Words, *Or else, &c.* should be left out. To this the Lords consented; and also to another Vote of that House, to send to the Lord-General, the Earl of *Essex*, to desire him to go on, notwithstanding, with all Advantages, in prosecuting the War. Accordingly the former Part of the Petition was sent in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, to be by him presented to the King. Which, after some Alterations by the Commons, is sent to the King.

The same Day we meet with, in the Commons Journals, a Vote and Division of that House, which shews the great Jealousy they had of any Intelligence being carried to the King: For the Question being propounded, Whether Mr. *Jessy*, the King's Servant, should have Mr. Speaker's Warrant to go to the King, to carry him Stockings and other Necessaries; it pass'd in the Affirmative by 26 against 18, but this on Condition of Mr. *Wheeler's* undertaking, that Mr. *Jessy* should carry nothing else. The Tellers upon this Occasion were Sir *Edward Ascough*

56 The Parliamentary HISTORY

AN. 18. Car. 1. *Ascough* and Mr. *Trenchard*, for the Yeas; Mr. *Marten* and Mr. *Long*, for the Noes.

November.

Nov. 25. An Order had been made, the Day before, for sending to the Lord Mayor to call a Common-Hall; and this Day a Committee of five Lords, with a proportionable Number of Commoners, were appointed to go thither. At this Meeting the Earl of *Manchester*^f, one of the Committee, and Mr. *Pymme* another, were the Mouths of the rest; whose Speeches best explain the Errand they were sent upon^g. And first the Earl.

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,

The Earl of *Manchester*'s Speech to them, proposing an Assessment for that Purpose.

I Am commanded to come hither upon an Errand, that I know, in the general, is never pleasing; which is, to express Wants and Necessities; but I know very well to whom I speak, it is to the Worthy, the Generous, and the Loyal Citizens of *London*; who have exceeded all Story, in their Care for the Life and Preservation both of the Parliament and the whole Kingdom; therefore it would imply a Distrust of your present Care to make a Supply, if I should use any Arguments to you: I shall only say this, That if there be not an Enlargement of yourselves in some Measure at the present, I shall be very unwilling to express the Condition that I fear our Army will be reduced to: This is all that I shall say, that if there be a present Supply, I do not doubt but the Army will move with that Effect, as it will prevent all those barbarous and savage Plunderings of the Forces that are now under the Command of those Officers of the King.

I confess the Burden hath lain very heavy upon the City of *London* only; but you shall have the Grace and the Honour of the Preservation both of

^f This Lord [*Edward Montague*] has been formerly spoken of under the Title of Lord *Kimbolton*; but, about this Time, succeeded to the Earldom of *Manchester* by the Death of his Father.

^g *London*, printed for *Peter Cole*, near the *Royal Exchange*, 1642.

of Religion and the Laws and Liberties of this Kingdom. An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

November.

' This Gentleman, that is by me, will let you know that it is already in Proposition, (and I do not doubt but it will speedily have the Concurrence of the Lords with it) to take that Care, that the future Burden shall not lie upon those here in the City of *London*, that have been careful to make Supplies, even to the exhausting of themselves; but that it shall go generally to all those that have shrowded themselves under a Kind of Neutrality here in *London*; and that it shall go generally throughout all the Counties of *England*; that so the common Calamities shall be prevented, or supported by the common Burden laid upon the whole Kingdom.'

Then Mr. *Pymme* spoke to this Effect:

My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,

' WE come not to tell your Lordship and these worthy Citizens only our Wants and Dangers, but we come to speak the Thanks of the Parliament to you, for that which you have already done; that you have shewed so much Affection to the Public, and that it hath produced so good Effects throughout the whole Kingdom, as that now you have an Army raised, most out of this City, able to defend (with God's Blessing) the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, if it may be upheld: And we come not only to give you Thanks for that which you have done, but to stir you up to join with us in giving Thanks to God that hath given such a Blessing to our Endeavours, that when, by Letters sent into all Parts almost, they did presume before-hand to triumph in the Ruin and Plundering of this City, God prevented it, and hath kept you safe; kept your Houses, your Walls, your Suburbs, safe from that that was intended against you; and truly as we have sought for this Blessing, by Fasting and by Prayer, so it is fit

And Mr. *Pymme's* in Support thereof.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

fit that we should testify our Thanksgiving for it, and this is a necessary Part of our Errand which we are sent about: And that we may be serviceable to God's Providence still, as he hath stirred up your Hearts to do so much already, so that he would stir you up still to continue to do that which is fit to be done for the future; and that you will do it in such a Way as may be most pleasing to yourselves.

' We come not hither, that, by any Consent here in public, you should bind yourselves in particular; but we come to let you know the Dangers of the Kingdom, the Sense the Parliament hath of it, and of the City especially, that you may not lose that which hath been already done; but that you may go on still chearfully to do the full Work. And we come to tell you, that the Parliament doth intend the Burden shall not lie upon you that are well affected and come in voluntarily; but that they have thought upon a Way, and have begun it already, and I hope, within two or three Days at the most, it shall be published to you, that all that are indisposed shall be forced to do that, which, out of Readiness and Chearfulness to the Public Good, they will not do of themselves: Neither limit we it to the City and Suburbs; but we are in a Course to draw in all the Counties of the Kingdom, that as the Burden is universal, so the Aid may be universal; for these are the Thoughts of the Parliament.

' If it please God to bless your Forces that are already raised and continued, we hope you shall not only see Peace again in the Kingdom, and Security for your Religion, but see that the Burden shall lie upon those who have been the Engines and Actors of the Mischiefs and Troubles that are come upon us, that they shall recompence the Charges you have been at already.

' This is the Intention of the Parliament, only for the present do somewhat; every Man, as God shall enable him, do somewhat that may meet the present

present Necessities; and prevent the Dangers that require a present Subsistence, and present Supply of the Army; without which what is it will follow, but the Danger of the City, the Ruin of the Countreies about, the Stopping up of the River which is almost taken from you, and the Loss of the Sea Coasts? You cannot have better Hearts than you have; God hath enabled many of you with Purfes; I hope it will be so readily disposed that we shall have a full Joy in the Recompence of it, and the Retribution; which we shall all pray God to bring to pass.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

The Result of this was, That the Citizens desired a Committee of both Houses might be sent to them, with a Power to call some Citizens and others to their Assistance, and then they hoped this Request of Parliament would prove successful.

The Want of Money to carry on the War being now so very urgent, an Ordinance was sent up this Day from the Commons, For Assessing Non-Contributors upon the Propositions for lending Money and raising of Horse and Arms: This being the first Instance of any Assessment laid upon the Subject without the Royal Assent, is too remarkable to be pass'd over.

W Hereas the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, hath raised an Army, and levied War against the Parliament, and great Numbers of Forces are daily raised under the Command of Papists, and other ill-affected Persons, by Commission from his Majesty: And whereas divers Delinquents are protected from public Justice by his Majesty's Army; and sundry Outrages and Rapines are daily committed by the Soldiers of the said Army, who have no Respect to the Laws of God or the Land, but burn and plunder the Houses, and seize and destroy the Persons of divers of his Majesty's good Subjects: And whereas, for the Maintenance of the said Army, divers Assessments are made upon several Counties, and his

An Ordinance passed accordingly, for assessing Non-Contributors to the Parliament's Army.

Ma-

60 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

AN. 18. CAR. I.

1642,

November.

‘ Majesty’s Subjects are compelled by the Soldiers
 ‘ to pay the same; which said Army, if it should
 ‘ continue, would soon ruin and waste the whole
 ‘ Kingdom, and overthrow Religion, Law, and
 ‘ Liberty: For suppressing of which said Army and
 ‘ ill-affected Persons, there is no probable Way,
 ‘ under God, but by the Army raised by Authority
 ‘ of Parliament; which said Army so raised cannot
 ‘ be maintained without great Sums of Money; yet
 ‘ for raising such Sums, by reason of his Majesty’s
 ‘ withdrawing himself from the Advice of the Par-
 ‘ liament, there can be no Act of Parliament passed
 ‘ with his Majesty’s Assent, albeit there is great
 ‘ Justice that the said Money should be raised; the
 ‘ Lords and Commons in Parliament have taken the
 ‘ same into their serious Consideration, and know-
 ‘ ing that the said Army, so raised by them, hath
 ‘ been hitherto, for the most, maintained by the
 ‘ voluntary Contributions of divers well-affected
 ‘ Persons, who have freely contributed according to
 ‘ their Abilities:

‘ But considering there are divers others within
 ‘ the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Sub-
 ‘ urbs of the same, and also within the Borough of
 ‘ *Southwark*, that have not contributed at all towards
 ‘ the Maintenance of the said Army; or if they
 ‘ have, yet not answerable to their Estates, who,
 ‘ notwithstanding, receive Benefit and Protection by
 ‘ the said Army, as well as others; and therefore it
 ‘ is most just that they should, as well as others,
 ‘ be charged to contribute to the Maintenance
 ‘ thereof:

‘ Be it therefore ordained by the Lords and Com-
 ‘ mons in Parliament assembled, and by Authority
 ‘ thereof, That *Isaac Pennington*, Lord Mayor of
 ‘ the City of *London*, *Sir John Woolaston*, Knight
 ‘ and Alderman, Alderman *Towes*, Alderman *War-*
 ‘ *ner*, Alderman *Andrews*, Alderman *Chambers*,
 ‘ Alderman *Fowke*, *Sir Thomas Soame*, Knight and
 ‘ Alderman; *Samuel Vassal*, *John Ven*, *Morris*
 ‘ *Thompson*, and *Richard Waring*, Citizens, or any
 ‘ four

four of them, shall hereby have Power and Authority to nominate and appoint, in every Ward within the City of *London*, six such Persons as they, or any four of them, shall think fit; which said six so nominated, or any four of them, shall hereby have Power to inquire of any that shall remain or be within the said several Wards, that have not contributed upon the Propositions of both Houses of Parliament, concerning the raising of Money, Plate, Horse, Horsemen, and Arms, for Defence of the King and both Houses of Parliament, and also of such as are able Men, that have contributed, yet not according to their Estates and Abilities.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

‘ And the said six Persons so nominated, or any four of them, within their several and respective Wards and Limits, shall have Power to assess such Person and Persons as are of Ability and have not contributed, and also such as have contributed, yet not according to their Ability, to pay such Sum or Sums of Money, according to their Estates, as the said Assessors, or any four of them, shall think fit and reasonable, so as the same exceed not the twentieth Part of their Estates, and to nominate and appoint fit Persons for the Collection thereof.

‘ And if any Person so assessed shall refuse to pay the Money assessed upon him, it shall be lawful to and for the said Assessors and Collectors, or any of them, to levy the said Sum so assessed, by way of Distress and Sale of the Goods of the Person so assessed, and refusing.

‘ And if any Person so distrained shall make Resistance, it shall be lawful to and for the respective Assessors and Collectors, or any of them, to call to their Assistance any of the Train’d Bands of the said City of *London*, or any other his Majesty’s Subjects, who are hereby required to be aiding and assisting to the said Assessors and Collectors in the Premises.

‘ And it is hereby further ordained, That the respective Burgesses of *Westminster* and *Southwark*,
‘ to-

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

‘ together with the severall Committees appointed
‘ for the Subscriptions of Money, Plate, Horse,
‘ Horsemen, and Arms within the said City and
‘ Borough, shall respectively have Power hereby to
‘ nominate Assessors for the same City and Borough,
‘ in such Manner as the Lord Mayor, &c. hath for
‘ the City of *London*; and the said Assessors, of
‘ any four of them, to name Collectors as afore-
‘ said; which said Assessors and Collectors shall
‘ have the same Power respectively, within their re-
‘ spective Limits, as those to be nominated within
‘ the said City of *London* have hereby limited to
‘ them.

‘ And for the Suburbs of *London* and *Westminster*,
‘ the respective Knights of the Shire where the said
‘ Suburbs are, shall have hereby the like Power to
‘ name Assessors; and they so named, or any four
‘ of them, and the Collectors by them to be nomi-
‘ nated, or any of them within their respective Li-
‘ mits, shall have the like Power respectively, as
‘ the Assessors and Collectors for *London* have by
‘ virtue of this Ordinance.

‘ And be it ordained, That the Sums so assessed
‘ and levied as aforesaid, shall be paid in at *Guild-
‘ hall, London*, to the Hands of Sir *John Woolaston*,
‘ Knight, *John Warner*, *John Towes*, and *Thomas
‘ Andrews*, Aldermen, or any two of them; and
‘ the Assessors and Collectors, to be nominated by
‘ virtue hereof, shall Weekly report to the Commit-
‘ tee of the House of Commons for the Propositions
‘ aforesaid, what Sums of Money have been assessed
‘ and what Sums have been levied Weekly, accord-
‘ ing to the Purport hereof; and the said Monies so
‘ levied and paid in, shall be issued forth in such
‘ Sort, as the other Monies raised upon the Propo-
‘ sitions, aforesaid, and not otherwise.’

Which being re-
inforced by sever-
al others,

In consequence of this Ordinance the Parliament
proceeded to raise Money by an Assessment: But
meeting with some Difficulties in the Collection
thereof, they made another Ordinance to explain the

the First; whereby it was ordained, That if the Collectors could not find sufficient Assets to distrain upon the Refusers, they had Power to enquire what Rents, Tithes or Debts were owing to them, and to demand the same of their respective Tenants or Debtors. This was followed by a Third Ordinance, for the speedy Execution of the First. Soon after came out another, empowering the Collectors to break open any Chests, Trunks, Boxes, Doors, or other Things, whereby to take a Distress for the Sums assessed. But all these not answering the urgent Necessities of the Parliament, yet another Ordinance was made; whereby, in such Cases where the Collectors should certify that a sufficient Distress was to be had, but they could not come at it without Opposition, two Colonels and three Captains, named in the said Ordinance, and such Captains, Lieutenants, Officers, and Soldiers as they should appoint, were authorized to search for the Refusers of such Assessment; and bring them before the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations, who had Power given them, by this last Ordinance, to imprison the Refusers in such Places of the Kingdom, and for so long Time, as they should appoint and order; and that the Families of all such Persons, so imprisoned, should no longer remain within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, the Suburbs, and the Counties adjacent.—But at the same Time that the Parliament took such effectual Care to raise this Assessment upon the Subjects at large, they made an Ordinance, That the several and respective Assessors should not assess any Members of either of the Houses of Parliament, or the Assistants of the House of Peers; any thing in the preceding Ordinances, or any of them, to the contrary notwithstanding: But that the Members of either House shall be assessed by that House whereof they were Members, and the Assistants of the Peers by the House of Peers. ¹ This last Ordinance, however,

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.
November.

¹ The above-mentioned Ordinances may be seen at Length in *Husbands's Collections* from p. 766, to p. 777.

AN. 13. CAR. I.
1642.

November.

ever, for empowering the Members to tax themselves, was carried in the House of Commons by Majority of only 43 Voices against 40.

On Occasion of all these Ordinances the King published the following Declaration, addressed to all his loving Subjects :

The King publishes an Answer to them.

IT would not be believed (at least great Pains have been taken that it might not) that the pretended Ordinance of the Militia, (the first Attempt that ever was to make a Law by Ordinance without our Consent) or the keeping us out of *Hull*, and taking our Arms and Munition from us, could any way concern the Interest, Property, or Liberty of the Subject; and it was confessed by that desperate Declaration itself of the 26th of *May*, That if they were found guilty of that Charge of destroying the Title and Interest of our Subjects to their Lands and Goods, it were indeed a very great Crime. But it was a strange fatal Lethargy which had seized our good People, and kept them from discerning, that the Nobility, Gentry, and Commonalty of *England*, were not only stripped of their Pre-eminences and Privileges, but of their Liberties and Estates, when our just Rights were denied us; and that no Subject could, from thenceforth, expect to do well at home, when we were driven from our Houses and our Towns.

It was not possible that a Commission could be granted to the Earl of *Essex*, to raise an Army against us; and, for the Safety of our Person and Preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, to pursue, kill, and slay us, and all who wish well to us; but that, in a short Time, inferior Commanders, by the same Authority, would require our good Subjects, for the Maintenance of the Property of the Subject, to supply them with such Sums of Money as they think fit, upon the Penalty

¶ This Declaration is in our Eleventh Volume.

erty of being plundered with all Extremity of War; An. 18. Car. I.
as the Style of Sir Edward Baynton's Warrant runs 1642.
against our poor Subjects in *Wiltshire*) and by such
Rules of unlimited Arbitrary Power, as are incon-
sistent with the least Pretence or Shadow of that
Property it would seem to defend.

November.

If there could be yet any Understanding so un-
skilful and supine to believe, that these Disturbers
of the Public Peace do intend any thing but a
general Confusion, they have brought them a sad
Argument to their own Doors to convince them :
After this Ordinance and Declaration it is not in
any sober Man's Power to believe himself worth
any thing, or that there is such a Thing as Law,
Liberty, or Property left in *England*, under the
Jurisdiction of these Men; and the same Power
that robs them now of the twentieth Part of their
Estates, hath, by that, but made a Claim, and
intituled itself to the other nineteen, when it shall
be thought fit to hasten the general Ruin.

' Sure, if the Minds of all Men be not stubbornly
prepared for Servitude, they will look on this Or-
dinance as the greatest Prodigy of Arbitrary Power
and Tyranny that any Age hath brought forth in
any Kingdom: Other Grievances, and the great-
est, have been conceived intolerable, rather by the
Logic and Consequence, than by the Pressure it-
self; this, at once, sweeps away all that the Wis-
dom and Justice of Parliaments have provided for
them. Is their Property in their Estates, (so
carefully looked to by their Ancestors, and so amply
established by us against any Possibility of Inva-
sion from the Crown) which makes the meanest
Subject as much a Lord of his own, as the greatest
Peer, to be valued or considered? Here is a twen-
tieth Part of every Man's Estate (or so much
more as four Men will please to call the twentieth
Part) taken away at once; and yet a Power left
to take a twentieth still of that which remains;
and this to be levied by such Circumstances of Se-
verity, as no Act of Parliament ever consented to.
Is their Liberty, which distinguishes Subjects from
VOL. XII. E ' Slaves,

An. 28. Car. I.

1642.

November.

Slaves, and in which this Free-born Nation hath the Advantage of all Christendom, dear to them? They shall not only be imprisoned in such Places of this Kingdom, (a Latitude of Judgment no Court can challenge to itself in any Cases) but for so long a Time as the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations shall appoint and order; the House of Commons itself having never assumed, or, in the least Degree, pretended to a Power of Judicature; having no more Authority to administer an Oath, (the only Way to discover and find out the Truth of Facts) than to cut off the Heads of any of our Subjects; and this Committee, being so far from being a Part of the Parliament, that it is destructive to the whole, by usurping to itself all the Power of King, Lords, and Commons.

All who know any thing of Parliaments, know that a Committee of either House ought not, by the Law, to publish their own Results; neither are their Conclusions of any Force without the Confirmation of the House, which hath the same Power of controlling them, as if the Matter had never been debated: But that any Committee should be so contracted (as this of Examinations, a Style no Committee ever bore before this Parliament) as to exclude the Members of the House, who are equally trusted by their Country, from being present at their Counsels, is so monstrous to the Privileges of Parliament, that it is no more in the Power of any Man to give up that Freedom, than of himself to order, that, from that Time, the Place for which he serves shall never more send a Knight or Burgeſs to the Parliament; and, in Truth, is no less than to alter the whole Frame of Government, to pull up Parliaments by the Roots, and to commit the Lives, Liberties, and Estates of all the People of *England*, to the Arbitrary Power of a few unqualified Persons; who shall dispose thereof according to their Discretion, without Account to any Rule or Authority whatsoever.

Are

* Are their Friends, their Wives, and Children (the greatest Blessings of Peace, and Comforts of Life) precious to them? Would their Penury and Imprisonment be less grievous by those Cordials? They shall be divorced from them, banished, and shall no longer remain within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, the Suburbs and the Counties adjacent; and how far those adjacent Counties shall extend no Man knows.

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.
November.

* Is there any thing now left to enjoy, but the Liberty to rebel, and destroy one another? Are the outward Blessings only of Peace, Property, and Liberty, taken and forced from our Subjects? Are their Consciences free and unassaulted by the Violence of these Fire-brands? Sure the Liberty and Freedom of Conscience cannot suffer by these Men! Alas! all these Punishments are imposed upon them, because they will not submit to Actions contrary to their natural Loyalty, to their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and to their late voluntary Protestation, which obliges them to the Care of our Person and our just Rights.

* How many Persons of Honour, Quality, and Reputation, of the several Counties of *England*, are now imprisoned without any Objections against them, but Suspicion of their Loyalty? How many of the gravest and most substantial Citizens of *London*, by whom the Government and Discipline of that City was preserved, are disgraced, robb'd, and imprisoned, without any Process of Law, or Colour of Accusation, but of Obedience to the Law and Government of the Kingdom; whilst Anabaptists and Brownists, with the Assistance of vitious and debauched Persons of desperate Fortunes, take upon them to break up and rife Houses, as public and avowed Ministers of a new-invented Authority? How many godly, pious, and painful Divines, whose Lives and Learning hath made them of reverend Estimation, are now slandered with Inclination to Popery; discountenanced and imprisoned, for discharging their Consciences, instructing the People in the Christian Duties of Religion,

68 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

November.

ligion and Obedience; whilst schismatical, illiterate, and scandalous Preachers fill the Pulpits and Churches with Blasphemy, Irreverence and Treason, and incite their Auditory to nothing but Murder and Rebellion?

We pass over the vulgar Charm, by which they have captivated such who have been contented to dispense with their Consciences for the Preservation of their Estates; and by which they persuade Men, cheerfully, to part with this twentieth Part of their Estates to the good Work in hand; for whoever will give what he hath, may escape Robbing: They shall be repaid upon the Public Faith, as all other Monies lent upon the Propositions of both Houses. It may be so; but Men must be condemned to a strange Unthriftiness who will lend upon such Security. The Public Faith indeed is as great an Earnest as the State can give, and engages the Honour, Reputation, and Honesty of the Nation, and is the Act of the Kingdom; it is the Security of the King, the Lords, and Commons, which can never need an Executor, can never die, never be bankrupt; and therefore we willingly consented to it for the Indemnity of our good Subjects of *Scotland* (who, we hope, will not think the worse of it, for being so often and so cheaply mentioned since); but that a Vote of one or both Houses should be an Engagement upon the Public Faith, is as impossible as that the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations should be the High Court of Parliament.

And what is or can be said, with the least Shadow of Reason, to justify these Extravagances? We have not lately heard of the old Fundamental Laws which used to warrant the Innovations; this needs a Refuge even below those Foundations. They will say, They cannot manage their great Undertakings without such extraordinary Ways. We think so too; but that proves only they have undertaken somewhat they ought not to undertake; not that it is lawful for them to do any thing that is convenient for those Ends.

We

‘ We remembered them long ago, and we can- An. 18. Car. I.

‘ not do it too often, of that excellent Speech of
 ‘ Mr. Pymme: *The Law is that which puts a Dif-*
 ‘ *ference betwixt Good and Evil, betwixt Just and*
 ‘ *Unjust; if you take away the Law, all Things will*
 ‘ *fall into Confusion, every Man will become a Law*
 ‘ *unto himself; which, in the depraved Condition of*
 ‘ *human Nature, must needs produce many great*
 ‘ *Enormities; Lust will become a Law, and Envy*
 ‘ *will become a Law; Covetousness and Ambition will*
 ‘ *become Laws; and what Dictates, what Decisions,*
 ‘ *such Laws will produce, may easily be discerned. It*
 ‘ may indeed, by the sad Instances over the whole
 ‘ Kingdom: But will Posterity believe, that, in the
 ‘ same Parliament, this Doctrine was avowed with
 ‘ that Acclamation, and these Instances after pro-
 ‘ duced? That, in the same Parliament, such Care
 ‘ was taken, that no Man should be committed, in
 ‘ what Case soever, without the Cause of his Imprisonment
 ‘ expressed, and that all Men should be
 ‘ immediately bailed, in all Casesailable: And,
 ‘ during the same Parliament, that Alderman *Pen-*
 ‘ *nington*, or indeed any Body else but the sworn
 ‘ Ministers of Justice, should imprison whom they
 ‘ would, and for what they would, and for as long
 ‘ a Time as they would? That the King should
 ‘ be reproached with Breach of Privilege for accusing
 ‘ Sir *John Hotham* of High Treason, when, with
 ‘ Force of Arms, he kept him out of *Hull*, and
 ‘ despised him to his Face; because, in no Case, a
 ‘ Member of either House might be committed or
 ‘ accused, without Leave of that House of which
 ‘ he is a Member: And yet that, during the same
 ‘ Parliament, the same Alderman should commit
 ‘ the Earl of *Middlesex*, a Peer of the Realm, and
 ‘ the Lord *Buckhurst*, a Member of the House of
 ‘ Commons, to the Counter without Reprehension?
 ‘ That to be a Traitor (which is defined, and every
 ‘ Man understands) should be no Crime; and to
 ‘ be called a Malignant, (which Nobody knows the
 ‘ Meaning of) should be Ground enough for close
 ‘ Imprisonment? That a Law should be made,

1642.

November.

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

November.

‘ That whosoever should presume to take Tunnage
 ‘ and Poundage, without an Act of Parliament,
 ‘ should incur the Penalty of a Premunire ; and, in
 ‘ the same Parliament, that the same Imposition
 ‘ should be laid upon our Subjects, and taken by an
 ‘ Order of both Houses, without and against our
 ‘ Consent ! Lastly, That, in the same Parliament,
 ‘ a Law should be made to declare the Proceedings
 ‘ and Judgment upon Ship-Money to be illegal and
 ‘ void ; and, during the Parliament, that an Or-
 ‘ der of both Houses shall, upon Pretence of Ne-
 ‘ cessity, enable four Men to take away the twen-
 ‘ tieth Part of their Estates from all their Neigh-
 ‘ bours, according to their Discretion.

‘ But our good Subjects will no longer look upon
 ‘ these and the like Results, as upon the Counsels
 ‘ and Conclusions of both our Houses of Parlia-
 ‘ ment, tho’ all the World knows even that Autho-
 ‘ rity can never justify Things unwarrantable by
 ‘ Law ; they well know how few of the Persons
 ‘ trusted by them are present at their Consultations ;
 ‘ of above 500, not 80 ; and of the House of Peers,
 ‘ not above a fifth Part ; that they who are present,
 ‘ enjoy not the Privilege and Freedom of Parlia-
 ‘ ment ; but are besieged by an Army, and awed
 ‘ by the same Tumults, which drove us and their
 ‘ Fellow-Members from thence, to consent to what
 ‘ some few seditious, schismatical Persons amongst
 ‘ them do propose.

‘ These are the Men who, joining with the Ana-
 ‘ baptists and Brownists of *London*, first changed the
 ‘ Government and Discipline of that City ; and
 ‘ now, by the Pride and Power of that City, would
 ‘ undo the Kingdom, whilst their Lord Mayor, (a
 ‘ Person accused and known to be guilty of High
 ‘ Treason) by a new Legislative Power of his own,
 ‘ suppresses and reviles the Book of Common Prayer,
 ‘ robs and imprisons whom he thinks fit, and, with
 ‘ the Rabble of his Faction, gives Laws to both
 ‘ Houses of Parliament ; and tells them they will
 ‘ have no Accommodation : Whilst the Members,
 ‘ sent and intrusted by their Counties, are expelled
 ‘ the

the House, or committed, for refusing to take the Oath of Association to live and die with the Earl of *Essex*, as very lately Sir *Sidney Montague*.^p

An. 13. Car. I.
1642.

November.

These are the Men who have presumed to send Ambassadors, and to enter into Treaties with foreign States, in their own Behalfe; having, at this Time an Agent of their own with the States of *Holland*, to negotiate for them upon private Instructions.

These are the Men who, not thinking they have yet brought Mischief enough upon this Kingdom, at this Time invite and solicit our Subjects of *Scotland* to enter this Land with an Army against us. In a Word, these are the Men, who have made this last devouring Ordinance to take away all Law, Liberty, and Property from our People; and have, by it, really acted that upon our People, which, with infinite Malice, and no Colour or Ground, was laboured to be infused into them, to have been our Intention by the Commission of Array.

We

Tho', for the sake of Connection, we have given this Declaration under the Month of *November*, it was not published till *December*; which gave the King Occasion to take Notice of a Transaction that stands thus in the *Commons Journals*:

December 3, 1642.

The Question for adhering to the Earl of *Essex* in this Cause, for the Maintenance and Preservation of the true Protestant Religion, the King's Person, the Laws of the Land, the Peace of the Kingdom, the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and the Rights and Privileges of Parliament, was this Day read to Sir *Sidney Montague*, [Member for *Huntingdonshire*] and his Vote being demanded, he gave his Negative Voice unto it.

Hereupon the Commons resolved, [but by a Majority of only 48 Voices against 45] 1st, 'That he be disabled from continuing any longer a Member of that House, during this Parliament. 2^{dly}, 'That his Person be forthwith secured. And, 3^{dly}, 'That he be forthwith committed Prisoner to the Tower.—Sir *Sidney Montague* was then called to the Bar, and, kneeling there, Mr. Speaker pronounced Sentence against him accordingly; For not yielding his Consent to assist the Earl of *Essex* in the Maintenance of Religion, the King's Person, the Liberty of the Subject, the Rights and Privileges of Parliament; and giving for his Reason, That the King had declared such to be Traitors, as should adhere to the said Earl in this Cause, and pulling such a Declaration out of his Pocket; thereby seeming to lay an Imputation upon all the Members, and others, that had declared to assist the said Earl in this Cause: The House thinking it a Crime, that any Member should be guided by Declarations from abroad, and not by his own Judgment, in giving his Vote.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November.

‘ We have now done. What Power and Authority these Men have, or would have, we know not :
 ‘ For ourself, we challenge none such ; we look upon the Pressures and Inconveniences our good Subjects bear, even by us and our Army, (which the Army first raised by them enforced us to levy in our Defence, and their Refusal of all Offers and Desires of Treaty enforceth us to keep) with very much Sadness of Heart : We are so far from requiring a twentieth Part of their Estates, (though for their own visible Preservation) that, as we have already sold or pawned our own Jewels, and coined our own Plate, so we are willing to sell all our own Land and Houses for their Relief ; yet we do not-doubt but our good Subjects will seriously consider our Condition, and their own Duties, and think our Readiness to protect them with the utmost Hazard of our Life, deserves their Readiness to assist us with some Part of their Fortunes ; and whilst other Men give a twentieth Part of their Estates, to enable them to forfeit the other nineteen, that they will extend themselves to us in a liberal and free Proportion for the Preservation of the rest ; and for the Maintenance of God’s true Religion, the Laws of the Land, the Liberty of the Subject, and the Safety and very Being of Parliaments and of this Kingdom ; for if all these ever were, or can be, in manifest Danger, it is now in this present Rebellion against us.

‘ Lastly, We will and require all our loving Subjects, of what Degree or Quality soever, as they will answer it to God, to Us, and to Posterity, by their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy ; as they would not be looked upon now, and remembered hereafter, as Betrayers of the Laws and Liberty they were born to ; that they, in no Degree, submit to this wild pretended Ordinance ; and that they presume not to give any Encouragement, or Assistance, to the Army now in Rebellion against us. Which if, notwithstanding, they shall do, they must expect from us the severest Punishment the Law can inflict, and a perpetual Infamy with all good Men.’

A

A Letter from the *Hague*, directed to Secretary *An. 18. Car. 1.*
Nicholas, supposed to come from *Col. Goring*, ha-
 1642.
 ving been taken from the Gentleman who brought
 it, and carried to the Parliament: It was this Day,
 November.
November 26, read in both Houses, and by them
 ordered to be printed; and also to be read in all the
 Churches of *London*, and the Suburbs thereof.

Hague, Nov. 22, 1642.

IT is now long since I had the Opportunity of wri-
 ting to you; but, since my first, have not heard
 anything from you at all. The Occasion of our long
 Stay here was, first, the Expectation of our Irish
 Ships; next, the Raising of Money, which the Pro-
 position of *Newcastle* drew as fast as it could advance.

An intercepted
 Letter from *Col.*
Goring.

The Failing of the Ships, had it not been supplied
 by the Reputation of the King's Success at Land, had
 given us a dangerous Blow here; but that hath so
 supported our Credit, that the Prince of Orange hath
 since played his Part, and advanced all those Sums
 we were to expect; of which 20,000*l.* is sent to-
 wards you, 20,000*l.* to *Newcastle*, and 20,000*l.*
 at least, we bring with us; besides the great Business,
 which we expect this Day a final End of, which will
 advance 60,000*l.* more, in which we are ascertained
 of the Prince of Orange's utmost Power; such, ne-
 vertheless, we apprehend the Importance of the Queen's
 being in England, that we had gone this last Week,
 and expected the Coming of that after, had not an un-
 seasonable Compliment from your Side stopped us, till
 this Express sent to you.

The Fleet is now ready, and this Week we certainly
 go, if those Counsels, or Chances, that tend to dila-
 tory Resolutions, move not more effectually than the
 certain Advantages of our Expedition and Dispatch
 from hence; all our Affairs being now done, and no-
 thing more to be expected.

That you may know upon what Grounds we go,
 and what Security we expect there, and what Advan-
 tage you in the South are to derive from it, you must
 know we have sent over 10,000 Foot Arms besides
 the Garrison, near 2000 Horse Arms, and 20 Pieces
 of

74 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

November,

of Cannon. We bring over Waggon, and all Accommodation, to march so soon as we arrive; we carry very considerable Officers from hence, and, by the Advice we receive from that Side, 8000 Men are on foot already, and six Troops of Horse; the rest will not be long in raising after we come there. General King is designed for Lieutenant-General, and hath been with the Queen, and will be suddenly there.

From Denmark are likewise sent Arms for 10,000 Foot, and 1500 Horse, with a Train of Artillery, and every Thing proportionable, to the very Drums and Halberds. Two good Men of War come their Convoy, and in them an Ambassador to his Majesty, a Person of great Quality in Denmark: I hope it will be a general Care there to see him nobly treated; for the Entertainment and Neglect of the last was much complained of, and is so much resented by that King, that it had like to have frustated all our Expectations in that Court, had not Cochran very handsomely evaded it: He comes along with the Ambassador; with whom if you encounter, he will communicate some Propositions of great Importance; which, in how much the fewer Hands they are carried, will be so much the better liked by them you are to deal with; if any Employment in this Affair may fall upon your Servant that writes to you, I know you will not be unmindful of him.

We have great Apprehensions here, by something intimated from my Lord of Holland, of a Treaty further entered into than we have Advertisement of, or can well approve; we have confidently believed your approaching London (if you had not made too long Stay upon the Way) would have determined that Matter; and what the Difficulties are now of that, we cannot yet understand, for if Intelligence from hence came as freely to you as to us, the King's Party there are very considerable, and full of that Expectation; and a Day or two's Loss of Time, by the late Example of Hull, may be judged what contrary Consequences it may produce.

We hear my Lord of Essex approaches London, but believe he will be so waited on by the King's Horse, as
not

not to let him join with their Forces there; being now An. 18. Car. 1.
so lame an Army, without Horse or Cannon, as the 1642.
Relations you send hither make him to be. We be-
lieve the King's Horse now likewise so great a Body,
that it will be as troublesome as unnecessary for them
to subsist together; and think so many Troops might
be well spared as might be sent into Kent, to counte-
nance a Party to be set on Foot there; which, accord-
ing to our Intelligence here, would undoubtedly be found
very affectionate and considerable; so that by sparing
500 Horse, you might possibly add to your Army 5000
Foot, to be employed upon the River on that Side the
Town.

November.

If the unhappy Interception had not come of the last
Week's Letters, we had undoubtedly been with you, on
the other Side, in Norfolk and Essex, within three
Weeks; and, in that Condition, having all the King-
dom behind us on every Side, it will not be hard to
judge whether would have been better able to subsist,
they within the Town, or the King's Army without;
admit my Lord of Essex were gotten in, or that the
Town had not yielded itself so soon as you had ap-
proached, you may yet certainly presume on this, that,
by our being once on Foot, we shall be able to collect for
you all the 400,000 l. Subsidies, universally through-
out the Kingdom; which will make the King's Army
subsist, and wear out theirs, besides the Money which
we bring.

What we expect from Denmark and France, are
all Encouragements to make us expect no Treaties to
be admitted, but upon Terms of great Advantage and
Honour to his Majesty; these you are best able to judge
of upon the Place.

If the King have Use of them, I am confident you
may expect from France (so soon as you set Foot in
Kent, and shall intimate your Desire of the same) the
three Regiments of his Majesty's own Subjects there,
employed under Colonel Hill, Colonel Fitz-Williams,
and Colonel Bealing. Your Letters directed to New-
castle will direct our Addresses to France, for I hope
we shall yet be there before you can return any in An-
swer to this.

We

An. 18. Car. 1. We find, both in *Rushworth's* and *Husbands's*
1642. *Collections*, the following Account of the Manner
how this Letter was intercepted and taken :

November.

**The Manner of
its being inter-
cepted.**

‘ On *Saturday Morning* the Gentleman that brought this Letter from *Holland*, came up to *London* in a *Gravesend Boat*, intending to land at *Brentford*, and therefore, for the more Expedition, shot the Bridge; which being perceived by one of the Pinnaces that lay on this Side for the Guard of the City and Parliament, and being known to be a *Gravesend Boat*, which always land on the other Side at *Billingsgate*, they called to them to know their Business; but they, not regarding their Summons, still posted away; whereupon the Men in the Ship made after them and hauled them in, examined the Gentleman, and, having some Suspicion, searched him and found this, with some other Letters about him; whereupon they presently carried him up to the Parliament; where, after Examination, his Letters were taken from him, and he committed to safe Custody.

Nov. 28. The King's Answer to the Parliament's last Petition to him, inclosed in a Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read in that House, as follows:

The King's Answer to the Petition of both Houses, of the 24th.

WE expected such Propositions from you, as might speedily remove and prevent the Misery and Desolation of this Kingdom; and that, for the effecting thereof, (we now residing at a convenient Place, not far from our City of *London*) Committees from both our Houses of Parliamene should attend us; for you pretended, by your Message to us at *Colebrooke*, that those were your Desires: Instead thereof (and thereby let all the World judge of the Design of that Overture) we have only received your humble Petition, *That we would be pleased to return to our Parliament with our Royal, not our Martial, Attendants.*

‘ All our good Subjects that remember what we
‘ have so often told you and them upon this Sub-
ject,

ject, and what hath since passed, must, with Indignation, look upon this Message, as intended by the Contrivers thereof for a Scorn to us; and thereby designed by that Malignant Party (of whom we have so often complained, whose Safety and Ambition is built upon the Divisions and Ruins of this Kingdom, and who have too great an Influence upon your Actions) for a Wall of Separation betwixt us and our People.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

We have told you the Reason why we parted from *London*; how we were chased thence, and by whom: We have often complained that the greatest Part of our Peers, and of the Members of our House of Commons, could not, with Safety to their Honours and Persons, continue and vote freely among you; but, by Violence and cunning Practices, were debarred of those Privileges which their Birth-rights, and the Trust reposed in them by their Counties, gave them; the Truth whereof may sufficiently appear by the small Number of those that are with you.

We have offered to meet both our Houses in any Place free and convenient for us and them, but we could never receive the least Satisfaction in any of these Particulars, nor for those scandalous and seditious Pamphlets and Sermons which swarm amongst you. That's all one you tell us: It is now for our Honour, and for the Safety of our Royal Person, to return to our Parliament. But herein your formerly Denying us a Negative Voice gives us Cause to believe, that, by giving yourselves that Name without us, you intend not to acknowledge us to be Part of it.

The whole Kingdom knows that an Army was raised under Pretence of Orders of both Houses, an Usurpation never heard of before in any Age; which Army hath pursued us in our own Kingdom, gave us Battle at *Keynton*, and endeavoured to take away the Life of us and our Children; and yet (these Rebels being newly recruited, and possessed of our City of *London*) we are courteously invited to return to our Parliament there; that is, into

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

November.

‘ into the Power of their Army. Doth this signify
 ‘ any other Thing, than that, since the traiterous
 ‘ Endeavours of those desperate Men could not snatch
 ‘ the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by
 ‘ the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loy-
 ‘ alty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely
 ‘ come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our
 ‘ Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of all
 ‘ our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?

‘ Well, we think not fit to give any other Answer,
 ‘ to this Part of your Petition: But as we impute not
 ‘ this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament, nor
 ‘ to the Major Part of those that are now present
 ‘ there, but to that dangerous Party we and the whole
 ‘ Kingdom must cry out upon; so we shall, for our
 ‘ good Subjects Sake, and out of our most tender
 ‘ Sense of their Miseries and the general Calamities
 ‘ of this Kingdom, which must, if this War con-
 ‘ tinue, speedily overwhelm this whole Nation, take
 ‘ no Advantage of it. But, if you shall really pur-
 ‘ sue what you presented to us at *Colebrooke*, we
 ‘ shall make good all we then gave you in Answer to
 ‘ it, whereby the Hearts of our distressed Subjects
 ‘ may be raised with the Hopes of Peace; without
 ‘ which Religion, the Laws, and your Liberties,
 ‘ can no way be settled and secured.

‘ Touching the late and sad Accident you men-
 ‘ tion, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we
 ‘ desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the
 ‘ People; and to let them see our last Message to
 ‘ you, and our Declaration to them, concerning the
 ‘ same; (both which we sent to our Press at *Lon-*
 ‘ *don*, but were taken away from our Messenger, and
 ‘ not suffered to be published) and then we doubt
 ‘ not but they will be soon undeceived, and easily
 ‘ find out those Counsels, which do rather persuade
 ‘ a desperate Division than a good Agreement be-
 ‘ twixt us, our two Houses, and People.’

The Lords ordered, That this Message should be
 communicated to the Commons forthwith; and it
 was sent down to them accordingly.

Nov.

Nov. 29. The Messengers were dismissed that brought the last Message from the King; and a Letter was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houses would send an Answer to it by an Express of their own.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
November.

The same Day an Ordinance of Parliament was made, For the speedy setting forth certain Ships, in all Points furnished for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to assist the King against the Parliament of *England*. By this Ordinance it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterprize should have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which should be seized or taken, as their own proper Goods.

An Ordinance
for fitting out
Ships to cut off
all Supplies from
the King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the Orders, Instructions, Letters of Intelligence, &c. from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and entered in the *Journals* of both Houses, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tiresome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but cast an Eye to see what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power rose, or fell, in different Parts of the Kingdom.

After the late Rencontre at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingston-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*.

The State of the
Kingdom at this
Time.

At the same Time the Earl of *Newcastle*^a had associated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkshire*, for the King; on which Commissions were sent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to associate the last-named County with all the *Midland* Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians*, &c. towards *York*. At *Piersbridge*, a Pass over the River *Tees*, he was opposed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax*'s Horse, commanded

^a *William Cavendish*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.
December.

manded by Capt. *Hotham*, whom the Earl dispersed, and marched streight to *York*; where he published a Declaration^o, setting forth the Reasons for his taking up Arms for the King.

The Parliament had also brought several Counties, in the *West* of *England*, into an Association; and some Matters are entered in the *Journals*, for the Encouragement of this Project.

In the *South* the Event was various; *Farnham* Castle, in the County of *Surry*, was taken by the High Sheriff, for the King; which Sir *William Waller* soon after retook for the Parliament. But this Loss was amply made up by the King's Forces taking the Town of *Marlborough* by Storm, under the Command of Lord *Digby*, Lord *Grandison*, Lord *Wilmot*, Lord *Wentworth*, &c. so that now the Kingdom, tho' in the Depth of Winter, was in a Flame, from one End to the other of it.

The miserable State of *Ireland*, also, during these Combuſtions, was really to be pitied; both Parties in *England* laid the Blame on each other, for neglecting the Succours that were to be sent to that Kingdom; but the true Reasons thereof, we think, will best appear by the following Extracts from the *Lords Journals* of the 9th of this Month.

To the High and most Honourable Court of
Parliament,

THE PETITION of Sir *James Montgomery* and Sir *Hardress Waller*, Knights and Colonels, and of Colonel *Arthur Hill* and Colonel *Audley Mervine*, in Behalf of themselves and other Commanders in his Majesty's Army in *Ireland*,

Most humbly sheweth,

A Petition, from
several Officers
in *Ireland*, to the
Parliament.

THAT your Petitioners, by particular Trust devolved from considerable Parts of the Army in *Ireland*, have, these 26 Weeks, attended for some timely Succour to be dispatched to that deplorable Kingdom; and finding, to our unspeakable Grief, that the Distractions of this Kingdom afforded us very weak Hopes of any

com-
See this at Length in *Rushworth's Collections*, Vol. V. p. 78.

competent Supplies: As we did, in a tender Resentment of the bleeding Condition thereof, petition the High Court of Parliament, so, by Licence first obtained from the Committee of Safety, out of the same Sense, in all Humility, we address'd ourselves to his Majesty, whose gracious Answer we received in Writing, and his Command to publish the same.

May it therefore please your Lordships, in Obedience to his Majesty's Commands, and out of a constant Inclination to observe the Directions of this most Honourable Assembly, to grant us Leave to present to your Honours the Copy of our Petition to his Majesty, his Majesty's Answer to us, and also the best and only Remedies appearing unto us for the present Preservation and future Being of that perishing Kingdom; accepting and humbly praying therein the further Resolutions and Directions of this High Court, in a Matter of so great Importance; wherein God's Glory, the interwoven Safety of his Majesty's Dominions, and so much Protestant Blood as yet unpilt, are so highly concern'd; their Wants being so pressing, the Power of the Enemy daily increasing, and their Ruin, without present Relief, inevitable, constrain your Petitioners humbly to beg a speedy Answer, further Delays being to them as dangerous as a Desertion; and if further Satisfaction of the particular Condition of every Part of the Army, and of those distressed Protestants here, be desired, your Petitioners are ready to remonstrate the same. And, as in Duty bound, shall pray, &c.

The Petitioners were called in, and presented the said Copy, which was read in *hæc Verba*:

To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,
The HUMBLE PETITION of Sir James Montgomery and Sir Hardress Waller, Knights and Colonels, Colonel Arthur Hill, and Colonel Audley Mervin, in Behalf of themselves and others, Commanders in his Majesty's Army in Ireland.

May it please your Sacred Majesty,
WE your Majesty's most humble Subjects, being intrusted from considerable Parts of your Majesty's Forces in the Kingdom of Ireland, to petition
And to the King,
your

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

*your Majesty and your Parliament for Supplies ; an-
finding that your Majesty had committed the Care
and Managing of that War to your Parliament here,
we addressed ourselves unto the same ; whose Sense of
our Miseries, and Inclination to redress them appeared
very tender unto us ; but the present Distempers of this
your Majesty's Kingdom of England (to our unspeak-
able Grief) are grown so great, that all future Pas-
sages, by which Comfort and Life should be conveyed
unto that gasping Kingdom, seem totally to be obstructed ;
so that, unless your gracious Majesty, out of your
singular Wisdom and fatherly Care, apply some speedy
Remedy, we your distressed and loyal Subjects of that
Kingdom must inevitably perish.*

*Our Condition represents unto your Majesty the
Estate of all your faithful Protestant Subjects in Ire-
land : The Influence of Princely Favour and Goodness
so actively distilled upon your Kingdom of Ireland, be-
fore the Birth of this monstrous Rebellion there, and
since the same so abundantly expressed in Characters
of a deep Sense, and lively Resentment of the bleed-
ing Condition thereof, give us Hope, in this our de-
plorable Extremity, to address ourselves unto your sa-
cred Throne ; humbly beseeching that it may please your
most gracious Majesty, amongst your other weighty
Cares, to reflect upon the bleeding Condition of that
perishing Kingdom, that timely Relief may be afford-
ed ; otherwise your loyal Subjects there must yield their
Fortunes a Prey, their Lives a Sacrifice, and their
Religion a Scorn, to the merciless Rebels powerfully
assisted from abroad.*

*Whilst we live, we rest in your Majesty's Protec-
tion ; if our Deaths are signed in that Cause, we will
die in your Obedience ; living and dying ever pray for
your Majesty's long and prosperous Reign over us.*

JA. MONTGOMERY,

HARD. WALLER,

ARTHUR HILL,

AU. MERVIN.

Next was read his Majesty's Answer, dated at
the Court of Oxford, the first of December, 1642.

*His Majesty hath expressly commanded me to give
this Answer to this Petition.*

THAT

THAT his Majesty, since the Beginning An. 18. Car. I. of that monstrous Rebellion, hath had no greater Sorrow than for the bleeding Condition of that his Kingdom; and as he hath always laboured that timely Relief might be afforded to the same, and consented to all Propositions (how disadvantageous soever to himself) that have been offered him for that Purpose; and not only at first recommended their Condition to both his Houses of Parliament, and immediately, of his own meer Motion, sent over several Commissions, and caused some Proportion of Arms and Ammunition (which the Petitioners well know to have been a great support to the Northern Parts of that Kingdom) to be conveyed to them out of *Scotland*; and not only offered to find 10,000 Volunteers to undertake that War, but hath often since prest, by many several Messages, that sufficient Succours might be hasten'd thither; and other Matters of smaller Importance laid by, which did divert it; and offered, and most really intended, in his own Royal Person, to have undergone the Danger of that War, for the Defence of his good Subjects, and the Chastisement of those perfidious and barbarous Rebels; and, in his several Expressions of his Desires of Treaty and Peace, hath declared the present miserable Condition, and certain future Loss, of *Ireland*, to be one of his principal Motives, most earnestly to desire that the present Distractions of that Kingdom might be compos'd, and that others would concur with him to the same End: So his Majesty is well pleased that his Offers, Concurrence, Actions, and Expressions are so rightly understood by the Petitioners and those who have employed them, notwithstanding the groundless and horrid Aspersions which have been cast upon him: But wishes that, instead of meer general Complaints (to which his Majesty can make no Return but of Compassion) they could have digested, and offered to him any such Desires, by consenting to which he might convey, at least in some Degree, Com-

1642.

December.

His Majesty's
Answer to it.

84 The Parliamentary History

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

fort and Life to that gasping Kingdom; preserve his distressed and loyal Subjects of the same from inevitable perishing, and the true Protestant Religion from being scorned and trampled on by those merciless and idolatrous Rebels.

And if the Petitioners can yet think on any such, and propose them to his Majesty, he assures them that, by his Readiness to consent, and his Thanks to them for the Proposal, he will make it appear to them, that their most pressing personal Sufferings cannot make them more desirous of Relief, than his Care of the true Religion, and of his faithful Subjects, and of that Duty which obliges him, to his Power, to protect both, renders him desirous to afford it to them.

FALKLAND.

Lastly, were read the Remedies, which they offer'd for the Preservation of that Kingdom.

The HUMBLE CONCEPTIONS of Sir James Montgomery, &c. upon the Result of their Petition to his Majesty, and his Answer to the same.

The Remedies
proposed for the
Relief of Ireland

UPON our humble Address to his Majesty to petition for the Relief of the bleeding Condition of Ireland, his Majesty, after an Expression of his tender Resentment of our Sufferings, gave us in Answer, That to such general Complaints his Majesty can make no Return but in Compassion; and could wish we had digested such particular Desires, that he might have given his Royal Assent to convey some Comfort, tho' but in a weak Measure, to the gasping Condition thereof: Wherefore, that we might not seem insensible of his Majesty's gracious Answer and free Proposals, we have entered into a most narrow Disquisition to make some Overtures, by humble Desires, as may conduce to the restoring the Glory of that Kingdom, and secure the interwoven Dependency of it with his Majesty's other Dominions: And since the Managing of the War in that distressed Kingdom hath been committed

to the Vigilancy and Power of this most Honourable An. 18. Car. 1.
Assembly, and we acknowledge your pious Inclinations
in expressing the same; yet, in all Humility to your
superior Wisdoms, and in a deep Sense of the immi-
nent Ruin of that Kingdom, if not speedily prevent-
ed, we offer these our Desires; which, if they receive
your Approbation, we are most happy; if, for Reasons
of State, best known to yourselves, they are to be laid
aside, then we beg it may be construed as our Zeal, not
our Presumption.

1642.

December,

1st, Since this Kingdom is the Fountain from whence
 the Streams of Safety must flow, and that the present
 Distractions have so troubled the same; as we ear-
 nestly implore the Throne of Grace both for yourselves
 and us, so we humbly offer these unto your grave Wis-
 doms, as the subordinate Instruments of a happy, bles-
 sed, and timely Accommodation here, in which the King
 and People may rejoice; there being no other visible
 Way to convey such perfect Health unto that Kingdom,
 but that it may otherwise immediately be subject to a
 dangerous Relapse.

2dly, If this Kingdom must yet longer be diverted
 from that prosperous Peace, to which, to the Envy of
 other Nations, she hath been so fortunately wedded,
 we humbly desire that such competent Supplies of Mo-
 ney, Victuals, Cloaths, and Ammunition, may be time-
 ly transported to the Army there, without which there
 is not the least Hopes of longer Subsistence; that such
 Protestant Blood there yet unpilt, and by your own
 Commands there employed, may be preserved; that such
 Garrisons, Sea-Ports, Forts, Artillery, and other War-
 like Provisions, may be secured, untill composed Times
 may afford such large Supplies, as may promise a Re-
 ducement of that Kingdom to their due Obedience.

3dly, If neither of these can suit with the present
 Constitution of these Times, we, in a bleeding Foresight
 of our miserable distressed Condition, humbly desire (if
 a fatal Necessity, for Preservation of all that is dear
 to us and our Posterity, enforce such hard and miserable
 Conditions upon us, as may prove inconvenient to that,
 and, in the End, to this Kingdom) that you will be
 pleased to allow them a favourable Construction.

An. 18. Car. I.
1643.

December.

Thus labouring in these Straits, we address ourselves unto your approved Wisdoms for timely Directions in a Matter of so great Concernment.

These Petitions and Remonstrances, from the Protestants of *Ireland*, the Lords referred to a Committee, as did also the Commons on their being presented unto them. The latter appointed a particular Day for taking them into Consideration; but we do not find any thing further done in this Affair by either House, their own Fears and Distractions being much nearer to them at this Time.

Some Citizens of *London* complain of an intended Petition for an Accommodation.

Two Petitions to Parliament being on Foot, at the same Time, in the City of *London*, but widely different in the Contents of them, Mr. *Shute* appears again in the *Journals* of the Commons, declaring, That, with all Thankfulness, the Godly Party acknowledged the open Care of that House to all their Desires: That they did subject their Money and Lives, to the last Drop of Blood in their Veins, to be disposed of by Parliament:

‘But they desired to clear themselves from an Imputation cast upon them by the Malignants, that they petition against Peace. This, he said, was far from their Intentions; but their Desires were for an honourable and secure Peace: That the Malignant Party went about to get Hands to a Petition to procure a Treaty, that the Enemy might gain Time to recollect their broken Strength; well knowing that they are so, and that they want Powder and Ammunition.

He then presented a Copy of the adverse Petition, which was read; but, after returning Thanks to Mr. *Shute* and the rest of the Citizens, for this fresh Mark of their Esteem, the further Consideration of this Petition was deferred to another Time; And, a Day or two after, Mr. *Shute*, it seems, growing too bold in addressing the House, two of the Members were ordered to acquaint him, That the Commons resented some Expressions used by him, and admonished him how to demean himself hereafter, when he came to give Information to them.

Both

Both Houses of Parliament had been long jealous of their Neighbours the *Dutch*, for sending Supplies of Men, Money, &c. to the King. And Mr. *Strickland*, their Agent in *Holland*, had often presented Memorials to the States on this Subject; when, in truth, the King had nothing from thence but what was bought up by the Sale of the Queen's Jewels, or her own Money, except what the Prince of *Orange*, her Son-in-Law, supplied: However the Parliament thought necessary, at this Time, to draw up a Declaration, and sent it to Mr. *Walter Strickland* at the *Hague*, to be by him presented to the States, to prevent any Supplies coming to the King from that Quarter. The Form of which stands thus in the *Lords Journals* of the 12th of this Month:

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
December,

WE the Lords and Commons in the Parlia-
ment of *England* assembled, did, with
much Contentment and Satisfaction, receive the
Answer of the High and Mighty Lords, the Lords
the States General of the United Provinces, to the
Declaration presented to them on our Behalf, by
Walter Strickland, Esq; finding therein many lively
Expressions of their Affections to the Peace and
Prosperity of this Kingdom, and a due Resent-
ment of our Troubles, and of their Care and Re-
solution of hindering the Passage of any Men, Mu-
nition, or Arms, which might foment and increase
the unhappy Differences and Combustions, where-
with this Nation is miserably distracted and distem-
pered; which we gladly and thankfully received
as a Means of our present Safety, and a Help to-
wards the settling a desired Peace betwixt his Ma-
jesty and his most loyal Subjects, and a Founda-
tion of more near and beneficial Conjunction be-
twixt this Kingdom and that State; for Preserva-
tion of the Protestant Religion, and Relief of many
oppressed Princes and States, against the common
Enemy, both theirs and ours: But this Hope and
Contentment hath been much impaired by the
frequent

The Parlia-
ment's Remon-
strance to the
Dutch against
selling Ammuni-
tion to the King.

88 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 28. Car. I.
1642.

December.

frequent Experiments we have had of the Transportation of Men, Munition, and Arms, from those Parts which have been employed against us; and many undoubted Advertisements of the continual Preparations and Endeavours of divers Traitors and Fugitives of this Nation, now residing in the United Provinces, to procure great Quantities of Treasure and other Warlike Provisions to be conveyed over from those Parts against the Parliament and Subjects of this Kingdom; and particularly that Col. *Goring*, Capt. *Byron*, Sir *Francis Mackworth*, Capt. *Lloyd*, Capt. *Brett*, and Capt. *Wyndham*, with divers Hundreds of Soldiers, being in the Pay of that State, are either lately shipped, or ready to embark, from some of those Parts belonging to the same, for *Newcastle*; and to join with the Army of Papists and other ill-affected Persons, raised in the North Parts of this Kingdom, against the Parliament, and for the Subversion of the Protestant Religion here; which hath exceedingly encouraged that Party, and confirmed his Majesty in adhering to those evil Counsellors, who have been the Authors of the public Troubles and Miseries of this Kingdom, and the rejecting the many humble Petitions that he would be pleased, according to the Laws of the Kingdom, to return to his Parliament; and, by their Counsel and Advice, to secure our Religion and the Laws against the wicked Plots and Designs, which have long been, and still are, in Agitation for the Subversion of both; in doing whereof we have offered, and are still ready, to secure his Majesty's Person, Honour and Estate, in any Manner which may be expected from true Christians and loyal Subjects; and which we solemnly profess, in the Presence of Almighty God, to be our real Intention and hearty Desires to perform; and that whatsoever is pretended and published to the contrary, as if we had admitted any Design, or expressed any Endeavours, to the Hurt of his Person, or Prejudice of his Sovereignty, proceeds from the
false

‘ false and malicious Scandals of such as are Enemies An. 18. Car. I.
‘ to the Public Peace : 1642.

December.

‘ Wherefore we entreat that wise and prudent
‘ State to fulfill those Promises and Declarations,
‘ which they have made to us, of restraining and
‘ prohibiting the Transportation of Men, Arms,
‘ Money, or any Warlike Provisions against us ;
‘ and that they will enquire into the Faults and
‘ Neglects of those Officers, who have suffered so
‘ many Breaches and Violations thereof ; that they
‘ will be pleased, with all just Favour, to admit of
‘ such Complaints and Informations as shall be made
‘ unto them, by Mr. *Strickland*, in that Behalf ;
‘ and that they will look upon this not only as a Mat-
‘ ter of Civil Respect to this House, but as that which
‘ concerns the Honour of God, the Defence of Re-
‘ ligion, and their own Safety and Liberty ; who,
‘ if we be ruined, will not only be deprived of an
‘ affectionate and useful Alliance, but environ’d with
‘ such Enemies as, by the same Rules and Princi-
‘ ples by which they have been active to seek our
‘ Ruin, will be carried on to all Kind of Practices
‘ and Endeavours to ruin them.’

The History of this Intestine War will be best known by the Letters of Intelligence, which were sent to the Parliament, from different Parts of the Kingdom ; and though they may perhaps, sometimes, exaggerate their own Victories, and other Advantages gained over the King’s Forces ; yet, at the same Time, as these Letters lay open their own Wants and Necessities, the inserting them, in their proper Order of Time, will not only illustrate several Passages in the Course of this Work, but open many Scenes of Importance, hitherto concealed from the Public. We shall begin with a Letter from *Devonshire*, which was, on the 13th of this Month, presented to the House of Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference ; and is entered in the *Journals* of the former only. It was addressed to the Lords, and others, of the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom, at *Westminster*.

Right

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

Right Honourable,

A Letter from
Devonshire, gi-
ving an Account
of the State of
Affairs in the
West of England.

According to our Duty, and Trust reposed in us, we have used our best Endeavours for the Preservation of this County; and although little Assistance hath been afforded us by the People here, to what we expected, yet God, that never fails those that go on in his Way, and rest upon his Power and Goodness, hath so blessed us now in this Time of Straits, that he hath done great Things for us by small Means: To him therefore be the Glory and the Praise.

Upon Tuesday the 29th of November, Captain Thompson and Captain Pymme, by Command of Colonel Ruthen, went to Plimpton, to keep that Town, with their Troops, and about 70 Dragoons and 200 Foot, if they saw it might have been kept without great Hazard; but, the next Day, hearing the Enemies were marching from Tavistock, with (as was related to us) 3000 Horse and Foot, and eight Pieces of Ordnance; and finding the Town of Plimpton not to be kept without as great a Force as should come against it, by reason the Town lies so scattering, and several Villages so near it; and so, lest the Enemy should come between them and Plymouth, they drew forth towards the Enemy; but, Night coming on, they could not come to give them Charge, without Hazard and Damage one of another in the Dark; they then went to Plymouth.

The Day after, being Thursday, Colonel Ruthen, with four Troops of Horse and the aforesaid Dragoons, went to Plimpton to view the Town, and to see the Motion of the Enemy; and, finding the Town as was related to him, he then drew towards Plymouth, and stood upon the Lary for the Space of three Hours; forcing the Enemy, who attempted one Charge to have drawn us to their Ambuscades, to fly presently; and durst not (with all their Force, which we judge was at least 2500 Horse and Foot then left, for many ran away the Night before) give us a Charge upon fair Ground; but that Night they went to Plimpton, where they continued till Wednesday the 7th of this present Month.

Colonel

Colonel Ruthen, with the aforesaid four Troops of Horse and about 100 Dragoons, about Three of the Clock in the Morning, marched from Plymouth over Rubart Downs, being a Bye-way to Modbury; where were gathered together, by the Sheriff's Commands, 3 or 4000 Men, some with Arms, and some without; and we came so privately that they did not discover us untill we were within a Mile of the Town; which did so amaze them, that after Sir Ralph Hopton drew up all the Men he could presently get, he, with Sir Nicholas Slanning, ran away and escaped; and after a small Skirmish with those that stood to it, with the Loss of one Man and two hurt, and three or four Horses, we took Prisoners, the Sheriff Sir Edmund Fortescue, and his Brother; Sir Edward Seymour, Knight of the Shire for Devonshire, and his Son; Mr. Basset, Capt. Pomeroy, Capt. Wood, Capt. Penrose, Lieut. Barns of Exon, and many others.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
December.

From thence we marched that Day, a long March of sixteen Hours on Horseback, with our Prisoners, to Dartmouth, to the Gladding of the Hearts of the good People there; for, while we were upon our March towards Modbury, one Mr. Thomas Leigh was in Treaty with Sir Ralph Hopton, about the Delivery up of the Town, as we were informed; and, by his own Confession since, he had got a Warrant to free his House from Plundering; this Mr. Leigh we have also taken, and, with the rest of the Prisoners, have sent to Plymouth, this Morning, in a Frigate called the Crescent, by one Capt. Plunket.

We ran a great Hazard in this Service, as your Honours may judge, for the Enemy lay on both Sides with all their Forces; Part at Plimpton and Part at Totness: But the Lord carried us along in our Way, and delivered the Enemies of his Truth and of our Liberties, into our Hands, and made many more to fly before us: The Prisoners Colonel Ruthen hath ordered to be sent from Plymouth, with the first fair Wind, to London; and we now lie here, expecting some Force from Exon to join with us; and, if we can have but 1000 Dragoons, we hope to do the Enemy much Damage.

We

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

December.

We hear, this Day, that since our Coming hither the Enemy is advanced with the greatest Part of their Force to Totnells; what are left at Plimpton we know not. If speedy Supply comes not of Men, Money, and Arms, we fear they will plunder most of the good Towns in this County; and what it may grow to, if God doth not mightily work for us, we know not. Your Honours know of what great Concernment the Keeping of this County is, and we doubt not but the great Need of Assistance will be sufficient to move your Honours to take into Consideration the Premises; which that your Honours would be pleased to do, is the humble Petition of

Your obedient Servants,

Dartmouth, December 9,
1642

WILLIAM RUTHEN.
ALEXANDER PYMME.
GEORGE THOMPSON.
ANTHONY ROUSE.
LEWIS DICK.

At the foregoing Conference the Lords were informed, That, upon Occasion of this Letter, the Commons had passed these Votes following, wherein they desired their Lordships Concurrence:

Mr. Holles appointed Commander of those Parts in Chief.

1. ' That Mr. *Holles* be desired to command the Forces in the *Western* Parts in Chief.
2. ' That the Lord-General be desired to grant a Commission to Mr. *Holles* accordingly.
3. ' That a Committee of Lords and Commons may recommend to the City the State of the *Western* Counties, and earnestly move them, in regard of the Importance of those Counties, to assist the setting forth of a considerable Strength to be sent into those Parts; that the Letter from *Dartmouth* be communicated to the City of *London*; and that those Committees of both Houses may be a standing Committee, to take Care of the Furtherance and Sending away such Supplies as are resolved to be sent.

The Lords agreed to all these Votes, and the following Peers were appointed to be Committees to join

join with a proportionable Number of the House of An. 18. Car. I.
Commons, viz. the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Bolingbroke*, the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*, the Lords
1642.
Grey de Werk, *Brooke* and *Wharton*.
December.

Nothing further occurs worth our Notice till

December 16. When a Message came from the The Parliament
Lord-General, with a Relation that the Parliament's order a Day of
Forces had taken the Castle and City of *Winchester*, Thanksgiving
with the Lord *Grandison* and 24 other Commanders *Winchester*,
Prisoners, 700 Soldiers, 600 Horse, and 600 Arms,
with the Loss of a few Men only. For which Victory
the Lord-General intended to give public Thanks
to God, the next Lord's Day, at *Windsor*, for this
great Success without Loss of Blood. His Lord-
ship desired the Lords would give Order that a
public Thanksgiving might be observed, the same
Day, in *London* and *Westminster*. On which the
House ordered, That the Lord Mayor be desired to
cause public Thanks to be given within the said
City and Liberties; the Justices of Peace for *West-*
minster and *Middlesex* were also ordered to do the
same, and every where to express their Joy, by
ringing of Bells, &c. for this Victory.

At the same Time a Letter from Lord *Fairfax*,
was read, giving a very particular Account of the
State of Affairs in the *Northern* Counties; which we
shall give at Length, as well as all other Matters of
Intelligence sent up to Parliament. It was address'd
to the Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

May it please your Lordship,

UPON Saturday last I received a Declaration Lord *Fairfax's*
of Parliament, with a Commission from his Ex- Account of the
cellency the Earl of *Essex*, to command in Chief over State of the *Nor-*
thern Counties,
the Forces of the North, and other adjacent Counties;
which great Honour and Trust, far above my Ambi-
tion or Merit, by your Lordships conferred on me, I
shall exercise with all Care and Fidelity; not doubt-
ing but that your Lordships will enable me therein,
with such other Supplies as the Necessity of the Service
shall require, and that represented from hence.

The

94 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

December.

The State of Affairs in these Parts, since my last Dispatch of the first of this Month, stands in this Manner: The Earl of Newcastle is come to York, and joined his Forces to the Earl of Cumberland, making in all, as I am informed, about 8000 Men, Horse and Foot, of which there is about 2000 Horse and Dragoons; a Strength far too potent to be resisted by the small Power which I have here, whereof I send a List inclosed: Our Strength was once estimated by ourselves far greater than now it appears; for upon the Earl of Newcastle's coming over the Tees, Sir Edward Loftus with all the Richmondshire Men, and Sir Henry Anderson with all the Cleveland Men and the rest of the North-Riding, which were estimated at 1000 Men, did all return to their own Houses, save about 130 Men brought hither by Sir Matthew Boynton, some other Gentlemen, and one Troop of Horse raised by Sir Henry Foulis, and about forty Horse more brought hither by Capt. Anderson. Besides this Defect, our Numbers are decreased by Sir Hugh Cholmley, to whom I have sent divers Orders to march Northward, to join with Capt Hotham and the rest, in resisting the Earl of Newcastle's Entry, before he came into Yorkshire; and since his Entry, to come to me and the rest of the Army at Tadcaster, but he found such Impediments as he could do neither; and now I hear he is gone to Scarbrough, and taken his Forces with him, which were about 700 Men; Col. Boynton, whose Regiment consisted of 800 Foot, is likewise marched towards Hull, although I sent him divers Orders to march up hither to assist the Forces at Tadcaster, giving me neither Reason of his not coming to me, nor of his March towards Hull. I understood that Sir John Gell had raised 800 Men in Derbyshire, and sent unto him to march hither to our Succour; but I have received an Answer from him, that he is not able yet to stir from thence: From Sir Anthony Irby, nor the Lincolnshire Men, I hear nothing, though I have sent to them express Messengers: So our whole Strength here (upon Return of the former sent into the North) consisting of twenty-one Companies

of

of Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, and one Com-
pany of Dragoons, we did send, of them, two Com-
panies of Foot to secure Selby, and one Company to
secure Cawood Castle; and quartered the rest, part
of them at Wetherby, under Command of Capt. Ho-
tham, whom I have nominated to be Lieutenant-Ge-
neral of the Army, and the rest at Tadcaster, under
my own Command.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

Upon Tuesday receiving Intelligence that the Earl
of Newcastle, with his whole Forces, intended to fall
upon our Quarter at Tadcaster, I sent to Capt. Ho-
tham, to bring up the Forces at Wetherby; which
being done, and the Earl of Newcastle's Army come
in Sight, we drew our Men into the uttermost Part
of our Quarter, where we had raised some Breast-
Works for our Musqueteers: There the Fight began
about Eleven of the Clock, and so continued, in sharp
Dispute, untill about Four of the Clock in the Even-
ing; in which Time there was at least 40,000 Mus-
quet-Shot discharged on both Sides, and great Numbers
of Canon-Shot.

The Enemy had once won Part of the Town and
beaten our Men, and placed some of their Companies
in two or three Houses, which did much endanger us;
but in the End our Men, with great Courage, forced
them out again, recovered and burnt the Houses, and
killed many of the Enemy's Men that were there plac-
ed; and, in Conclusion, forced the whole Army to re-
treat, leaving very many of their Men dead, and very
great Numbers wounded: The certain Numbers, nor
Qualities of the Persons we could not take, but it is
generally said by the Country People that there were at
least one hundred found killed and burnt, and we
took seventeen Prisoners in the Fight: On our Part
we lost six Men, and Capt. William Lister, a vali-
ant and gallant Gentleman, who was shot with a Mus-
quet Bullet in the Head; we had about twenty more
wounded, but lost not one Prisoner in the Battle; tho'
divers of our Men, being negligent of their Duty, stay-
ed behind us when we quitted the Quarter; and so
were taken there by the Enemy, the next Day, and
made Prisoners. In this Fight our Men behaved them-
selves

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

December.

selfes with very great Resolution, far beyond Expectation, in so much, as I conceive, we might have maintained the Place still, if we had been furnished with Powder and Shot; but having spent in a Manner all our whole Store of Bullet, Match, and Powder, I advised with the Commanders, and, by general Consent, it was thought fit to rise with our Forces, and to march to Cawood and Selby, to secure those Places; and there to receive Supplies of Ammunition and Men: This was accordingly done, and now I am at Selby with Part of the Army, and the rest with Capt. Hotham, at Cawood.

Yesterday I sent my Son, Sir Thomas Fairfax, with five Companies of Foot, and two Troops of Horse to Leeds; intending he should continue there to secure that Place, and the other Clothing Towns, against the Earl of Newcastle's Forces, if it were possible; but the Enemy's Forces were laid so strong in the Way, as he could not pass; so he only beat up a Quarter of the Enemies in a small Village, took five Prisoners, and retreated to Selby.

This Letter was ordered, by both Houses, to be printed: And it is highly probable that no more of it was then thought proper to be laid before the Public, because in *Rushworth's Collections* all the following Paragraphs are left out, but are here supplied from the *Lords Journals*.

Thus, my Lord, I have briefly represented the Condition of the Army at present; which, I must confess, I fear will very suddenly grow worse, if not utterly broken up; and that especially for want of Money, I having not above a Week's Pay provided before-hand, and no visible Means left to raise Maintenance for them, unless I should give the Soldiers free Quarters upon the Country: A Cure, in my Conceit, as dangerous as the Disease, and peradventure not possible to be effected if the Enemy be still Masters of the Field, and cut off our Men as they go abroad to levy Sustenance; which they may do, and yet not able to beat up our Quarters.

I have hitherto supported this Army by the Loans An. 18. Car. I.
and Contributions, for the most Part, of the Parishes 1642.
of Leeds, Halifax, and Bradford, and some of the
small Cloathing Towns adjacent; being the only well-
affected People in the Country; who, I much fear, may
suffer by this Popish Army of the North, meerly for
their good Affection to Religion and the Public Liberty.
Of the rest of the Country I was not able to draw any
considerable Help, the Enemy having Garrisons in so
many Places, who threaten to ruin any that should
assist the Parliament and their Cause with Money, or
other Helps. December.

My Lord, in Sum, the State of the Country is thus :
The Enemy is mighty, and Master of the Field, plen-
tifully supplied from his Majesty, and the Popish and
Malignant Party, with Monies and all other Necess-
aries. The well-affected Party, as now it is divided,
not considerable; the Aid from Lincolnshire, Derby-
shire, and other Counties, very uncertain; the Want
of Money here such as will force us to disband within
ten Days. If the Enemy become once absolute Masters
of Yorkshire, they will force Contributions and Suc-
cours from the Country, which will raise a very for-
midable Army, and put the whole Cause in Peril, if
God do not miraculously defend it.

I beseech their Lordships seriously to consider of it,
and send such speedy Supplies of Men and Money, as
may enable me to go forward in the Service; which I
shall not fail to do with a constant Fidelity.

Their Lordships have, heretofore, assigned 2000 l.
for our Succour; but the most Part of it is still at
London, where it lies for want of Exshange or Con-
voy: And therefore what shall now be sent must come
either by sufficient Convoy of Forces by Land, or else
by Sea to Hull, and so hither to me. The Scots Of-
ficers came hither Yesterday; but now we are so strait-
ened that we have no Men to resort to us to put under
their Command, nor have we any Money to pay them.

The further Relation of these Affairs I leave to
Capt. Hatcher, who follows these Letters purposely to
give true Relation to the House of these Affairs; he
hath been an Eye-Witness to most of the Passages in

98 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

this Country, from the first of raising of Arms; to his farther Expression I shall leave it, with this Addition only, That if the Country or Cause suffer, their Lordships will discern, by this Relation, in whom the Fault hath been, and impute it accordingly; for nothing hath been omitted, possible to be effected, by

Your Lordship's most faithful

Dated December 10,
1642, from Selby.

and humble Servant,

FERD. FAIRFAX.

Some Votes were also sent up, this Day, from the Commons, and agreed to by the Lords; amongst which was one for securing all Popish Lords, and others of Quality, within the Cities of *London, Westminster, and Southwark*; and for effectually and speedily sequestering their Estates, Offices, &c. towards the Advancement of Money for the Army.

Another, That the Earl of *Warwick*, and other Commissioners of the Admiralty, should take Care to send some Ships to ride upon the Northern Coasts, to prevent the Arrival of any Forces or Ammunition from *Holland* or elsewhere; the Parliament having then received fresh Intelligence of such being ready to embark from those Parts.

It was ordered, also, That if any Colonel, Captain, or other Officers of *Scotland*, should bring into *England* any Forces of Horse or Foot, by Contract of their Agents there, to oppose the Army of Papists and their Adherents now raised, they should be entertained.

December 17. There had been some Time canvassing, in both Houses, certain Articles, as Propositions for a Peace, to be presented to the King; and, this Day, the remaining Part of them was debated in the House of Lords; but the farther Consideration thereof deferred to the 19th.

Some Prisoners having been taken at *Brentford, Marlborough*, and elsewhere, the King now resolved to proceed against them in a legal Way, for
High

High Treason. The famous Col. *John Lilburn* An. 18. Car. 1.
 was one of the first brought to the Bar, at *Oxford*,
 before Judge *Heath*; and was indicted for actual
 levying War against the King, by the Name of
John Lilburn, Yeoman. He demurred to this
 Indictment, on account of his being a Gentleman,
 of an antient Family in the Bishoprick of *Durham*;
 the Record being therefore amended, he pleaded,
 That what he did was in his own Defence, and by
 Command of Parliament; and that he never had,
 nor ever would bear Arms against the King, &c.
 He and others were found guilty; but, to prevent
 the Execution of them, the Parliament threatened
 the *Lex Talionis*, and published a Declaration in
 this Form:

1642.
 December.

Col. *Lilburn*, &c.
 having been con-
 victed, at *Oxford*,
 for High Treason,

‘ **W** Hereas Information hath been given to
 the Lords and Commons assembled in
 Parliament, That *Clifton Catesby*, *John Lilburn*,
 and *Robert Vivers*, Captains in the Army, raised
 by Authority of both Houses of Parliament, for the
 necessary Defence of the true Protestant Religion,
 the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, under the
 Command of *Robert Earl of Essex*, Captain-Ge-
 neral thereof, were taken Prisoners by the Forces
 raised against the Parliament, in executing their
 several Duties and Services, according to the Or-
 dinances of both the said Houses, and after carried
 Prisoners to *Oxford Goal*; and, having been most
 barbarously used, are now questioned and proceed-
 ed against by way of Indictment, before Sir *Ro-
 bert Heath*, Knight, one of his Majesty’s Justi-
 ces of the King’s Bench, and others, by Colour
 of some Commission or other Authority from his
 Majesty, for High Treason and other supposed
 Misdemeanors; whereas many have been taken
 Prisoners by the Parliament’s Forces, in the Act of
 War against the Parliament; which, by the Laws
 and Statutes of this Realm, is Rebellion and High
 Treason against the King and Kingdom, and the
 Actors therein Traitors; and yet none of them
 hath

To prevent their
 Execution the
 Parliament de-
 clare they will
 make Reprizals.

100 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 13. Car. 1. hath hitherto been put to Death, or otherwise
1649.

December.

severely dealt with by the Parliament:

It is therefore ordered and declared by the said
Lords and Commons, That all such Indictments
and other Proceedings against the said Capt. *Cates-*
by, Capt. *Lilburn*, and Capt. *Vivers*, or against
Capt. *Wingate*, who have done faithful and good
Service to the Commonwealth; or against any
other Person, or Persons, who have done, or shall
do, Service in the said Army; or for the Raising
of any Money, Plate, Horse, or Arms, for the
Maintenance thereof; or otherwise in Execution
of, or Pursuance of, an Order or Ordinance of both
or either of the said Houses of Parliament, for the
Defence of the Public Safety, are unjust and ille-
gal; and the said Sir *Robert Heath*, and all other
Commissioners, Justices, Sheriffs, Jurors, and
other Officers and Ministers of Justice, and other
Persons whatsoever, are hereby required and in-
joined to surcease any further Proceeding against
the said Persons before-named, or any other, for
any the Causes aforesaid, upon the said Indict-
ments or otherwise.

And the said Lords and Commons do further
declare, That if the said Persons before-named, or
any of them, or any other, shall be put to Death,
or other Hurt or Violence offered to their or any
of their Persons, for, or by reason of, any such
Service done, or to be done, by, or according to
any Order or Ordinance of both or either the said
Houses, the like Punishment shall be inflicted by
Death, or otherwise, upon such Prisoners as have
been, or shall be, taken by the Forces raised by
Authority of both Houses of Parliament; and if
the said Sir *Robert Heath*, or any other Com-
missioner, Justice, Sheriff, Juror, or other Of-
ficer, or Minister of Justice, or other Person, shall do
contrary to this Ordinance in any the Premises,
they and every of them for so doing shall be
proceeded against, and dealt with, as Enemies to
the King and Kingdom.

December

December 19. The Lords went again on the An. 12. Car. 1.
Propositions for Peace, and a great Debate ensued
thereupon. The third Article, concerning Delin-
quents, was read, and put to the Question, Whether
the House shall make this Proposition to the King,
That All which are impeached by the House of
Commons, at this Time, shall be left to take their
Trial by Parliament? It passed in the Negative.

1642.
December.

On the same Day the City of *London*, by an
Order of Common Council, presented a Petition
to the House of Lords and Commons, in which
was inclosed another to his Majesty; which, after
their Approbation, they desired might be conveyed
to him. At the same Time was presented another
Petition from many Citizens and Inhabitants of that
City. Both these were for Peace and a speedy
Agreement: Upon the former the House of Com-
mons passed two Votes, to which the Lords con-
sented, declaring their great Approbation thereof, and
that it was fit this Petition to the King should be pre-
sented to him. The other met with a quite differ-
ent Reception. From the Fate of these two Peti-
tions the Reader will be enabled to form a Judgment
of the Temper and Disposition of the Parliament.
Neither of them are mentioned in the Collections of
the Times; but we meet with a Copy of the latter
in the *Lords Journals*.

To the Right Honourable the Lords and Commons
assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers Citizens,
Inhabitants of the City of *London* and Liberties
thereof, with the Inhabitants of the Borough of
Southwark and Places adjacent,

Sheweth,

THAT the present Sense of our Miseries, and the
Apprehension of the inevitable Ruin both of the
Church and Commonwealth, make us become Suitors
to this Honourable Assembly, the likeliest Means,
God, for our Relief; to consider our distressed Estate,
and provide a speedy Remedy for our present and fu-
ture

A Petition from
several Citizens
of *London* to the
Parliament for
Peace;

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

December.

ture Evils; earnestly to desire you to weigh the Care and Judgment of your Predecessors; who, by a known Law, settled and preserved our Protestant Religion, our Liberties and Properties, with a right Understanding between King and Subject, which produced Peace and Plenty in our Estates; and to reflect, with serious Thoughts, upon our present Distempers, violating Religion by Papists and Sectaries, engaging our Nation in a civil and destructive War, invading our Laws and Liberties, endangering all our Lives, and utterly disabling us to relieve our distressed Brethren in Ireland.

We beseech you likewise to consider the Effects of a Civil War, as the Destruction of Christians, and the unnatural Effusion of Blood; Fathers against Sons; Brothers by Brothers, Friends by Friends, slain; then Famine and Sickness, the Followers of a continued War, making Way for a general Confusion and Invasion by a foreign Nation; whilst our Treasure is exhausted, our Trade lost, and the Kingdom dispeopled: These Things, weighed and enlarged by your Wisdoms, we doubt not will be as strong a Motive in you to labour, as in us to desire, a speedy Peace and happy Accommodation.

Wherefore we humbly crave that, not lending Ear to any the Fomenters of the present War, under what Pretence soever; or remembering ought that may increase Jealousies or continue Divisions between his Majesty and the Houses of Parliament; you will tender his Majesty, according to his Royal Intimations, such Propositions for Accommodation as he may, with Honour and Safety to the whole Kingdom, accept; for the effecting whereof we shall be ready to assist you with the best and utmost of our Abilities; and, whilst you endeavour for Peace, we shall send up our Prayers to Heaven for the Blessing of Peace upon you and all that desire it.

The Petitioners withdrew, and the House took into Consideration what Answer to give to their Petition; and, after Debate, the Gentleman-Usher

Of ENGLAND. 103

was commanded to let those that brought this Petition know, That their Lordships have received a Complaint against this Petition from the House of Commons, and will take the same into Consideration: And a Committee was appointed to consider of, and to take Examinations about, the managing and procuring of this Petition.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

Which is ill received by them,

The Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of the City, upon presenting their own Petition to the Commons, protested against this latter, saying, They had damned it by a public Act; and did desire that when hereafter any Petition came to Parliament, in the Name of the City of *London*, and was not attested by the Hand of the Town-Clerk, it might be rejected, and not esteemed as a Petition from their City.

And protested against by the Lord Mayor, &c.

Dec. 20. Although a Vote had passed the Day before concerning Delinquents, That they were not All to be included in their designed Propositions to the King for Peace, the House of Commons had got that Order, in some Measure, over-ruled: For tho' a Committee of Lords had been appointed to consider of the naming of such Delinquents as were to be excepted out of their Act of Grace, who this Day brought in their Opinion, That those only who had been impeached before the first of *January* last, should be proceeded against in Parliament; yet the Lord *Digby*, particularly, though he had been impeached since that Time, was left to the Judgment of Parliament.

The Lords resolve to except some Delinquents from Trial by Parliament.

Then the Committee proceeded to name such Persons as were fit to be removed from the King; as, the Marquis of *Hertford* to lose his Office about the Prince; the Earl of *Bristol*, the Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, (eldest Son of the Earl of *Worcester*) Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Fermyn*, and Mr. *Wilmot*, to be removed from Court. And, as the *Journal* says, after a long Debate, the following Question was put: 'Those that are of Opinion to agree with the Committee, That, at this Time, such as the Committee have named to be impeached by the House of

104 *The Parliamentary History*

Ab. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

December.

of Commons, should be left to the Trial of Parliament, omitting the rest of those which are impeached, say Content; and it passed affirmatively. On which the following Lords entered their Dissent; and, after repeating the two last Questions of Yesterday and To-day, carried against them, they proceeded to say,

A Protest enter'd thereupon.

WE, whose Names are subscribed, do conceive that the Demanding, by this House, of some to be left to Justice, and leaving out of others, who are under the like Impeachment of High Treason, and have been, by Force of Arms, protected from being brought to a Trial in the highest Court of Judicature, is an Example of very ill Consequence: Because we conceive that it is not proper for this House to move the House of Commons, in the Stopping of their Proceedings upon Impeachments; and that it doth not only give Encouragement to a King to attempt the like Stoppage of Justice by Force, and, from this Precedent, to stand upon the Protecting of Persons impeached; but to Subjects also, who may be induced to undertake any Thing in Hopes of Impunity, even from the Desires of this House; which hath not demanded any one of those to be left to Trial, who, since his Majesty's Going to York, have been impeached of High Treason, for actual levying War against the King and Kingdom.

Upon these, amongst other Reasons, we have demanded our Right of Protestation; and do now accordingly enter it, to clear ourselves from any Inconveniences that may follow from these Votes; which are, in our Opinion, very prejudicial to the Privileges of Parliament and the Liberty of the Subject.

WARWICK.

PETERBOROUGH.

MANCHESTER.

SAY and SELE.

WHARTON.

BOLINGBROKE.

WILLOUGHBY of Parham.

BROOKE.

GREY de Werk.

Next

Next was read the Whole of the Propositions for An. 18. Car. 1,
Peace, which were agreed on by the Lords, and or-
dered to be sent down to the Commons; but, as
they laid a long Time in that House, being not
presented to the King till above a Month after this,
and were also much altered from this Copy, it can-
not be amiss to give it here, and postpone the other
to its proper Place. By this Means may be evi-
dently seen, That the Lords were much more in-
clined to an Agreement than the Commons, by the
Softness of these Propositions, and the Harshness
of the other.

1642.
December.

The said Propositions were as follow :

YOUR Majesty's most humble and faithful
Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Par-
liament assembled, having always in their Thoughts
the Glory of God, your Majesty's Honour, and
the Prosperity of your People; and being most
desirous to put an End to these Miseries which
now infect, and further threaten, a Desolation of
this Kingdom if not timely prevented; and that
they may provide for the Safety of your Majesty's
Royal Person, and for the Defence of your loyal
Subjects, against all such as would, in their Mind,
destroy the Worship of God in his true Religion,
the laws of this Land, and the Rights and Privi-
leges of Parliament; and also to settle such Way
for the future, as the like or other Distractions and
Distempers may not again break forth, do most
humbly beseech your Majesty to accept of and
grant these their most humble Desires and Propo-
sitions, as the most necessary and effectual Means
thereunto, through God's Blessing; and that there-
by you Majesty may live in as great Honour as
any of our Royal Ancestors have done, and be
as formidable to your Enemies as any of your
Predecessors have been; and that your Subjects,
with Peace and Plenty, may, with Gladness of
Heart, perform their Duties to God and your Ma-
jesty,

The Propositions
to the King for
Peace, as drawn
up by the House
of Lords.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

‘ jesty, and enjoy their just Liberties under your
‘ most gracious Protection.

‘ That your Majesty will be pleased to give the
‘ Royal Assent unto the Bill for taking away super-
‘ stitious Innovations,

‘ To the Bill against scandalous Ministers,

‘ To the Bill against Pluralities,

‘ To the Bill for a Consultation to be had with
‘ godly, religious, and learned Divines : And

I. ‘ That your Majesty would be pleased to pro-
‘ mise to pass such other good Bills, for settling of
‘ the Church Government, as, upon Consultation
‘ with the Assembly of the said Divines, shall be
‘ resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, and,
‘ by them, to be presented unto your Majesty :
‘ And that your Majesty will confirm the Decla-
‘ ration, passed in both Houses, for the taking away
‘ of Bishops, Deans and Chapters ; and that such
‘ unnecessary Ceremonies, as are offensive to tender
‘ Consciences, may not be pressed upon your Maje-
‘ sty’s good Subjects, as hath already been graciously
‘ promised by your Majesty.

II. ‘ That the Rights, Liberties, and Privileges
‘ of Parliament may be no ways infringed, but
‘ maintained.

III. ‘ That such as have been impeached by the
‘ House of Commons, before the first Day of Ja-
‘ nuary, 1641, and likewise the Lord *Dign*, shall
‘ be left to their due Trial in Parliament ; hat the
‘ Marquis of *Hertford* may be removed from his
‘ Charge about the Prince ; the Earl of *Bissol*, the
‘ Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Jer-*
‘ *myn*, and Mr. *Wilmot*, may be removed from the
‘ Verge of the Court.

IV. ‘ That your Majesty will be pleased to pass
‘ an Act in such Manner, as may vindicate and se-
‘ cure the Privilege of Parliament from the ill Con-
‘ sequences of the late Precedent, in the Charge and
‘ Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbolter*, now Earl
‘ of *Manchester*, and the five Members of the House
‘ of Commons.

V. ‘ That

V. ' That your Majesty, upon the humble Petition of both Houses of Parliament, will be pleased

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

December.

' to grant your Letters Patent to
' to be Chief Justice of your Court of King's Bench;
' to the Lord Chief Justice *Banks*, to be continued
' to be Chief Justice of your Court of Common
' Pleas; to Mr. Justice *Foster*, to be Chief Baron of
' your Court of Exchequer; and that Mr. Justice
' *Reeve* may be continued one of the Judges in the
' Court of Common Pleas; to Mr. Justice *Bacon*,
' to be continued one of the Judges in your Court of
' King's Bench; to Mr. Serjeant *Wylde*, to be one
' of the Judges of your Court of King's Bench; to
' Mr. Serjeant *Roll*, to be one of the Judges of
' your Court of King's Bench; to Mr. Serjeant
' *Pheasant*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of
' Common Pleas; to Mr. Serjeant *Atkins*, to be one
' of the Judges of your Court of Common Pleas;
' to Mr. Serjeant *Creswell*, to be one of the Barons
' of the Court of Exchequer; to Mr. *Samuel Brown*
' and Mr. *John Puleston*, to be two of the Barons
' of your Court of Exchequer; and that all of them
' may hold their Places *quamdiu se bene gesserint*.

VI. ' That such Justices of the Peace, that have
' been lately out of the Commission of the Peace in
' the several Counties of *England* and *Wales*, may
' be restored; and that the Lord-Keeper may be
' commanded to revoke the Commission and omit
' such as are unfit for that Government.

VII. ' That your Majesty's Royal Assent may
' be given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by
' both Houses of Parliament, for the satisfying and
' paying of the Debts wherein the Kingdom now
' stands engaged.

VIII. ' That all Acts of the Council-Table, that
' do concern Government, may be attested under
' the Hands of those who give the Advice.

IX. ' That an Act of Oblivion may pass for all
' Crimes and Offences committed, or pretended to
' be committed, excepting the Persons desired to be
' brought to their Trial in Parliament.

X. ' That

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

December.

X. 'That your Majesty's general Pardon may
' be granted to all, excepting such as before-named.XI. 'It is humbly desired that your Majesty will
' declare your Pleasure, whether you will not have
' a Cessation from all Manner of Acts of Hostility
' for fourteen Days; the Cessation to commence
' from such a Time as shall be agreed on by your
' Majesty and the two Houses of Parliament.XII. 'That the Laws against Popish Recusants
' may be put in due Execution.'

Dec. 22. Petitions came up from different Parts of the Kingdom to the Lords, all crying loudly for Peace. To which the Lords returned this Answer: 'That they approved of their Desires for Peace and Agreement between the King and Parliament, which was always desired and endeavoured by that House; and that they were then about it, and hoped for good Success.'

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Stamford* was read, giving an Account of the Surrender of *Bristol* to the Parliament; and that he was raising a very considerable Number of Forces in those Parts.

Nothing else material occurs in the *Journals*, till the last Day of this Month; when a new Subscription, for the further Maintenance of the Army, seems to be warmly promoted in the House of Lords: And the Peers under-written subscribed their Names and Sums, as follow:

	£.		£.
A Subscription in the House of Lords, for Maintenance of the Parliament's Army.	Earl of <i>Warwick</i> —500	Ld. Visc. <i>Say and Sele</i>	100
	Earl of <i>Manchester</i> 300	Lord <i>Brooke</i> —	200
	Earl of <i>Bolingbroke</i> 200	Lord <i>Fielding</i> —	500

It was ordered, also, That the Speaker of that House should move, on the first of *January* next, to know the Answer of those Lords who have not subscribed to the Maintenance of the Army, as well as the Assistants also attending that House.

That

That the Parliament was driven to great Straits for want of Money at this Time, is also evident from a Message sent to the House of Commons, this Day, importing, That there was a great Necessity for Money, and that the City of *London* was willing to make a further Subscription, if the Members of Parliament would set a good Example in that Particular. That divers Lords had already subscribed to this Purpose, and the Speaker was ordered to know the Answers of those who had not; and others were appointed to take the Subscriptions of the Assistants this Afternoon; therefore the Commons were desired to take the same Course with their Members, that it might be recommended with all Expedition to the City of *London* to do the like.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
December.

Thus ended the Calendar Year of 1642; and a very busy Year it was, both in respect of the various Multiplicity of Parliamentary Affairs, or rather Military Affairs transacted in Parliament, and the dismal Apprehensions each Party in the Kingdom must be in, of being plundered, burnt out, ruined, or slain by the other: So that the safest *Asylum* for any single Person was, then, a Station in the King's or the Parliament's Army.

All the Prisons, in and about *London*, were full of Malignants and Delinquents, as they were then called by the Parliament; insomuch that, besides the common Prisons, *Windsor* Castle, *London* House, the Lord *Petre's* House in the City, the Deanery of *St. Paul's*, *Ely* House, and *Lambeth* House, as *Winchester* House in *Southwark* had been before, were made use of for that Purpose.

The King at this Time kept his Court at *Oxford*, his Army being quartered conveniently in the neighbouring Towns, this Season not being proper for Action. Hither great Numbers of both Houses of Parliament had resorted to him; insomuch that, in a short Time, they constituted a Kind of separate House of Lords and Commons of themselves; as will be shewn hereafter.—But to proceed with the *Journals*.

January

110 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

January.

A new Bill proposed relating to the Militia.

January 2. The Earl of Northumberland, from a Committee appointed to consider of a Bill to settle the Militia, reported what they had done in that Business. Great Difficulties appearing hereupon, the Lords thought fit to respite the offering any Bill for that Purpose till the King should return to Parliament; but, in the mean Time, to make ready a Bill which should declare, That the King should not dispose of the Power of the Militia without the Parliament, nor the Parliament without the King; that, to prevent all Jealousies, both Sides might have an equal Power.

Jan. 3. The Scots Commissioners presented two Memorials to Parliament, complaining, That their Army in Ireland, on English Pay, were almost starved for want of it; and that 40,000 l. the remaining Part of the Brotherly Assistance-Money, tho' long due, was yet unpaid. The Parliament excused both these Neglects; laid the Blame on the Civil War and the present Distractions of the Times; but promised as speedy a Payment as possible, according to that Justice and Honour which they owed to all Men, but in a more especial and affectionate Manner to their Brethren of Scotland.

Jan. 4. The Commons sent up a Message to the Lords, and with it a Letter they had just received from their General, the Lord Fairfax, in the North; which we here give in its own Words. It was address'd to one of their Members:

A Letter from Lord Fairfax concerning the Proceedings of the two Armies in Yorkshire.

I Have of late addressed some Relations of my Proceedings here, to the Committee appointed for the Safety of the Kingdom; being assured that they would, from Time to Time, impart them to both Houses of Parliament; that such Consideration might be had of them as the Necessity of the Cause requires. Now I address this Relation to you, not doubting but it shall be imparted to both Houses of Parliament, and to the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom; that the Affairs of this Country being known to them all, they may

OF ENGLAND. III

may be provided for as their *Wisdoms* shall see convenient. An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

January.

I have, formerly, advertised that the Earl of Newcastle's Army have seiz'd upon Leeds, where they plundered the well-affected Party, and raised a very great Sum of Money out of those that they could draw to compound for their Securities. From Leeds they marched, on Sunday the 18th of this Month, with five Troops of Horse, six Companies of Dragoons, 200 Foot, and two Drakes of the Earl of Newcastle's Army; besides Sir William Savile, and divers other Gentlemen of Yorkshire and their Forces, that join'd themselves with them. They came to Bradford about Ten o'Clock in the Morning, intending to surprize the Town in Time of Prayer; but the Town having Scouts abroad, had Notice of their Coming, and gave the Alarm to the Country, who came in to their Succour from the Parts adjoining; yet they had not in all above 80 Muskets, the rest being arm'd with Clubs, and such rustick Weapons, with which small Force they put the Cause to Trial with the great Strength of the Enemy; who planted their Drakes, and discharged each of them seventeen Times upon the Town, untill a Town's Man, with a Fowling-piece, kill'd one of the Cannoneers; and then they all, with great Courage, issued from the Town upon the Enemy, killed many of them, took about 30 Prisoners, and forced the rest to retreat, leaving 40 of their Muskets and a Barrel of their Powder, with much other Provvisions, behind them; and this with the Loss of but three Bradford Men.

The Report of the Country is, That the Enemy, amongst those that were killed, lost Col. Evers, Captain Bynns, and another Commander; that Col. Goring, General of the Horse, with the Earl of Newcastle, was wounded; that Serjeant-Major Carr is taken Prisoner; and it is generally reported that 150 more ran away upon the Retreat, and are not since returned to Leeds.

In this Victory the Hand and Power of God was most evident, the Town being open on all Sides, and of itself not being defensible; assaulted on every Side by a mali-

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

January.

malicious and bloody Enemy, and defended by a few half-naked Men; there being in the Town not above 80 Muskets before they got 40 more by the Spoils of the Enemy: So that the Slaughter was, for the most Part, with Clubs, and Scythes mounted on Poles, when they clos'd and came to Hand-Blows. With this Defeat the Enemies are so enraged, that they threaten utter Ruin to Bradford; whereupon the Town's Men sent to me for Succour of Men and Arms, and I have sent my Son, with Sir Henry Foulis, to them with three Troops of Horse and 120 Dragoons. These are safely arrived there, and received with great Joy and Acclamation of the Country, who flock to him, and offer themselves most willingly to serve against the Popish Enemies, if Arms could be furnished to them. He hath already surprized some Victuals sent in, upon Warrants, to the Enemy at Leeds, by the over-awed Country; and he hath sent Capt. Mildmay with his Troop of Horse and some Dragoons into Craven, to stop the raising of Money and Forces in that Country; which is attempted by the Earl of Cumberland, who is lately retired from York to Skipton; and I hope he will leave nothing unattempted that may conduce to the Safety of the Country, so far as can be expected from the few Forces he hath with him.

The Earl of Newcastle proceeds in raising Money, by all the illegal and oppressive Ways that can be devised; and, both by the Commission of Array, and by Presses made in the Churches, raiseth all the Men he can. This being attempted in Cleveland by certain of the disaffected Gentry, their Expectation was prevented; the Resort and Appearance of the People stopped, and the Commissioners themselves forced to fly, by Sir Hugh Cholmley, to whom I sent special Order for that End. I hear he hath also been at Malton, and there surprized both the Receiver and the Monies raised out of the Country thereabouts, by those Warrants. I cannot hear, certainly, what Monies or Men the Earl of Newcastle hath raised since he came into this Country; but he grants Commissions to sundry convict Recusants to raise Troops of Horse, as, Sir John Middleton, Sir Walter Vavasor, Mr. Tindale,

dale, and others; who, I hear, are now raising their An. 18. Car. I.
Men: And I hear daily Complaints of horrible Plun- 1642.
ders and Spoils done by that Army, and those by special
Order, and in such Manner, as, if they be not speedily
restrained, and this Popish Army expelled the Coun-
try, they will not only utterly ruin all Trade and Com-
merce; but discourage and disable all Husbandry; and
so bring Poverty and Famine upon the Land.

January.

Since my last Estimate of our Forces, there is little
Alteration of them; only 120 Dragoons of Sir An-
thony Irby's Regiment are come hither, which I sent
to Bradford with my Son. Col. Boynton, with his
Regiment, being 500 Foot and 40 Horse, are come
hither; but Captain Crompton's Dragoons, as he
complains to me, are all run away; so I have given
him a new Commission to raise a Company. For any
other Supplies, I cannot expect them untill the Aids come
from the South; for Sir Hugh Cholmley, as I hear,
cannot bring 130 Men; and those are so much desired
to be retained in the North-Riding, to interrupt
the raising of Men in that Country in Aid of the Earl
of Newcastle, as I do not press his March this Way;
and for the Lincolnshire Aids, expected to be sent
us, I cannot hope for any from them; having this
Day received a Letter by Captain Hatcher, wherein
the Earl of Lincoln, and the Committee at Lincoln,
write they are not able to defend themselves against
500 Foot, three Troops of Dragoons, and two
Troops of Horse, with seven Pieces of Ordnance, sent
to Newark by the Earl of Newcastle; and therefore
desire Help from me.

I have formerly represented to the Committee the
extreme Want of Money here, and how impossible it is
to raise any, the Enemy being Master of the Field. I
have sent to Sir John Hotham, Sir Edward Rhodes,
Sir Hugh Cholmley, and Capt. Hotham; but they
all alledge great Necessities of their own, and help me
with none; so that I am put upon such Straits, as sel-
dom happen, to retain an Army together, and withall
serve against a more potent Enemy; having neither
Money to pay them, nor free Quarters to give them.
If a speedy Supply of Money do not come, I much fear
VOL. XII. H the

An. 18. Car. I. *the Soldiers will steal away and desert the Service. I have just now received your Letters, signifying that the House hath designed us 10,000 l. to be presently sent, and will take further Care for all Necessaries to be supplied; for this, I beseech you, return my humble Thanks, and assure them that they shall want no Care nor Fidelity in me to advance the Service, so highly concerning the Laws and Religion of the Land.*

1642.

January.

I am now about to procure Billets, for fourteen Days, on the Inhabitants of the Towns where I quarter, and to engage for the Payment as soon as the Money comes to me. All this I beseech you to represent to the Honourable Assembly, whose Care I doubt not but will supply all our Wants now represented; especially hastening down the Forces of the Southern Parts with the Monies intended for our Supplies.

It is advised by the Commanders here, not to fall upon any of the Enemy's Quarters at this Time, untill we are stronger, or have certain Intelligence of their Weakness; in the mean Time we lie still waiting for Opportunities, which shall not be neglected, if once offered unto

Your affectionate Friend

Selby, Dec. 29,
1642.

and Servant,

FERD. FAIRFAX.

P. S. The Enemy hath not made any Attempt upon our Quarters since our Remove from Tadcaster, untill this Morning; when five Troops of Horse and three Companies of Dragoons from Sherburne, fell upon our Quarter at Bryton, where two Companies of our Foot and one Company of Horse quarter'd. They came in so fast with our Scouts, that they were in the Town before many of our Men could be drawn out; and yet the most Part of our Soldiers carried themselves with such Resolution, as they forced the Enemy to retreat in great Confusion, and took three of them Prisoners; and this with the Loss but of one Man on our Part.

After

After the reading of this Letter, an Order was made to send the Lord *Fairfax* a Supply, and to trust to his known Justice and faithful Service for the due Management of it. An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.
January.

There was nothing material done in the House of Lords for some Days after this, except an Order made for quashing an Agreement which had been entered into by both Parties in *Cheshire*, in order to keep Peace in that County; it being urged, as in the like Case before in *Yorkshire*, which we have particularly taken Notice of in our last Volume, That it was dangerous to the whole Kingdom for one County to stand neuter, and withdraw itself from the Assistance of the rest. An Agreement of
Neutrality in
Cheshire, quashed
by Parliament.

A Declaration was also made and agreed to, for raising more Money by a fresh Subscription, and that the Speakers of both Houses were to take the Answers of the Members, &c. of each, to learn what they will subscribe for the Maintenance of the Army. The Lord Mayor of *London* was likewise ordered to call a Common Hall, and some Members of both Houses were appointed to go thither, to exhort the Citizens to do the like. Means for raising
more Money for
Maintenance of
the Army.

Jan. 10. A Case happened in the House of Commons, which, though trivial in itself, may not be improper to take Notice of. In one of the Debates relating to the Propositions for Peace, the House divided on the Question; when the Tellers came to make their Report of the Numbers, they could not agree upon it, three being of one Opinion, and the fourth of another. The House then divided again, and all that were not present at the first Telling were required to withdraw. The Tellers reported the Numbers to be thirty-three on each Side: But one Member present at the first Division and Telling, yet came not in upon the second Telling, till the Numbers were given in and reported by Mr. Speaker, was desired to be counted; a Debate arose whether he should or not, coming not in till the Report was made: The House divided again on this Question; but before it was told, the Noes yielded. Remarkable Divisions on the Propositions for Peace.

An. 18. Car. 1. ed, and that Member being added to the Yeas,
1642. made their Number thirty-four.

January.

Many Copies of Instructions are entered at this Time for the Parliament's Lord-Lieutenants, and other Agents in the several Counties; and also a second Declaration concerning the King's Commission of Array:^b All of them too tedious for our Purpose: But

A Relation of the Manner of presenting a Petition from the City of London to the King at Oxford. On the 12th of this Month a Relation was read in the House of Lords, sent up by the Commons, concerning the Carrying and Delivery of a Petition from the City of London, to the King at Oxford. This Relation was made by the City's Commissioners appointed for that Purpose; and, since the Consequences of it are somewhat curious, deserves a Place in these Enquiries. The Petition is not entered in the *Journals*, being a Work of Common Council only; but we have met with a printed Copy of it, and the King's Answer to it, with some Speeches made by a Committee of both Houses, sent to attend the reading of them in the *Guildhall*, which we shall give: And first the Relation itself, as it stands in the *Journals*:

‘ **A**T this Common Council Sir George Garret, Sir George Clark, Knights and Aldermen, Mr. Peter Jones, Mr. George Henley, Mr. Richard Bateman, and Mr Barney Reames, Commissioners lately appointed by this Court to make their Address unto his Majesty, with an humble Petition, in the Name of the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of this City, did make their Relation in Writing, which followeth in these Words:’

On Monday the second of January we came to Oxford, between One and Two o’Clock in the Afternoon; where, tho’ we could get no Lodgings before Night,

^b *Husbands’s Collections*, from p. 850, to 891.

yet presently we dispatched one to give the Lord Falkland Notice of our coming. About Three o'Clock we did all of us attend his Lordship, at his Lodgings in New College; with whom we sent one also to the Court, to receive his Majesty's Order for Admission into his Presence; who returning unto us, and bringing us Word, that his Majesty would receive the Petition at Five o'Clock, we accordingly all of us came to the Court. After some small Time of Attendance we were admitted unto his Majesty in his Withdrawing-Chamber, and the Petition publicly read in his Majesty's Presence; unto which his Majesty presently made Answer unto this Effect, That he was glad of the Occasion this Petition would give him, to let the City know some of his Declarations; which, although he had already caused them to be put in Print, yet he doubted might be kept from the Knowledge of his People in the City: That he doubted the Petitioners promised more than they could perform, to wit, *To defend his Majesty from Tumults*; when, as he heard, they could not maintain Peace and Quiet among themselves: That his Answer should be full, which he would expect should be published and made known to all his People in the City. And he added this Question, Whether they had petitioned the Parliament also, to remember them of their Duty to his Majesty? To this it was presently answered, That we were only Messengers of this Petition, and could give no Answer to that Question.

On Tuesday we had no Audience, and only attended our Answer; but, on Wednesday the fourth of January, we address'd ourselves for our Dispatch, by a Message unto the Lord Falkland, and received his Majesty's Order to attend at Three o'Clock that Afternoon; which we did accordingly; and, being called in, his Majesty gave us a Paper, which, he said, was his Answer to the Petition; and so delivered it into the Hands of a Gentleman called Mr. Heron, standing by him; who, he said, should go with us, and see it done accordingly. And having demanded which was

An. 18. Car. I.
1642

January.

the greater Assembly, a Common Council or a Common Hall; and it being answered, That a Common Hall was the greater Assembly, his Majesty twice expressly commanded us that this his Answer should be published at a Common Hall; that there might be fair Play and above-board, and that the People of the City might be disabused, and know the Truth.

This done his Majesty dismissed us, as we thought; but presently we were recalled, and his Majesty said, He would send some Persons to be amongst us in the City, to inform the City and him of the Truth; whom he would expect they should protect, seeing they did protect Persons ill-affected to his Majesty; and that he should see by that, how they were able to protect his Majesty.

This Relation we make according to our best Remembrance.

The foregoing Narrative being read, it was declared, That the House of Commons held it very necessary, if their Lordships shall so please, that some Committees of both Houses be present at the Common Hall; to hear what shall be read from his Majesty by Mr. Heron: And if it should prove to be the same that is printed, which contains Matters very scandalous to the Parliament, dangerous to the City and whole Kingdom, seeming purposely designed to stir up Mutiny in the City, that then they might be ready to take off the Aspersions laid upon the Proceedings of both Houses; and to shew their Confidence in the Loyalty, Wisdom, and good Affection of the City; that they will not be misled nor distemper'd by any such Scandals and Aspersions: And if it prove not the same, but do contain any other Aspersions, they might likewise clear the Honour and Justice of their Proceedings as they shall see Cause; and the House of Commons desires their Lordships to join with them in this also, that whatsoever the Message did appear to be, they should yet clear the two Houses of Parliament,

not-

notwithstanding all the Taxes laid upon them by that Book; having done nothing but agreeable to their Duty to the King and Kingdom; and that the Loyalty and Modesty of the City, expressed in their Petition to his Majesty, wereto be commended.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
January.

The Commons also offered to their Lordships Consideration some Observations, extracted out of the King's Answer, with their Reply thereunto.— But all these, being recited and enlarged upon in the following Speech of Mr. *Pymme*, we pass over.

The next Day the whole Affair was transacted at the *Guildhall*, and a particular Account taken of it, and printed by Order of the House of Commons, with an Introduction and Remarks upon it. Mr. *Rushworth* hath the Petition, Answer, and subsequent Speeches in his *Collections*^c; and as the printed Copy, above-mentioned, is much more circumstantial, we shall give it from that Authority^d.

The INTRODUCTION.

THAT Observation, Man's Extremities are God's Opportunities, was never more abundantly and experimentally made good than in these latter Days; and in none of these more than on Friday the 13th of January, 1642, in and toward the City of London, where his Majesty's unexpected Answer to an humble Petition, presented to his Majesty at Oxford, from the Lord Mayor and Common Council of that Honourable City, made many sad Hearts; not only in regard that all the unwearied and loyal Endeavours of Parliament and City, with other Parts of the Kingdom, have made no deeper Impression upon his Majesty's Heart, the greatest Treasure for which they have contended; but also in some doubtful Expectation what Advantage such Spirits might have made of it, at least

to

^c In Volume V. p. 110.

^d Published, with the Licence of Mr. *Ellyng*, Clerk of the House of Commons, by *Peter Cole*, the Printer of the other Speeches at the *Guildhall*, which are already given in this Volume.

An. 13. Car. 1.
1642.

January.

to the unsettling of the Peace, and disuniting the Spirits of the City, who steer all their Actions by that Maxim of Policy, Divide & impera, divide and do what you will: The rather when they observe that the Counsel of some not so Well-wishers, certainly, to the Public Safety, as to their own private Interests, had prevailed with his Majesty that his Answer should be published at a Common Hall, by his Majesty's express Order for that Purpose, when as the Petition was humbly tendered to his Majesty from a Common Council. To avoid all Inconveniences, it pleased the Wisdom and Goodness of Heaven to direct the Parliament to chuse an Honourable Committee of Lords and Commons to be present at the reading thereof; and the Governors of the City to order that all the Companies should first meet at their several Halls, and then come in their City Habits to the Guildhall, where his Majesty's Answer was to be read: When the Committee of both Houses, with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and such a Confluence of Liverymen as hath not been seen there in the Memory of the oldest Man in the City, being met, the Lord Mayor commanded the Town Clerk to read, in the Audience of that great Assembly, the City's Petition, which here follows:

*To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,
The HUMBLE PETITION of the Mayor, Aldermen,
and Commons of the City of London,
Sheweth,*

The said Petition read at a Common Hall.

THAT the Petitioners, your Majesty's most humble and loyal Subjects, being much peirced with the long and great Divisions between your Majesty and both your Houses of Parliament, and with the sad and bloody Effects thereof, both here and in Ireland, are yet more deeply wounded by the Misapprehension which your Majesty seemeth to entertain of the Love and Loyalty of this your City, as if there were some Cause of Fear or Suspicion of Danger to your Royal Person, if your Majesty should return thither; and that this

' is

‘ is made the unhappy Bar to that blessed Reconcili- An. 18. Car. I.
 ‘ liation with your great and most faithful Council, 1642.
 ‘ for preventing that Desolation and Destruction,
 ‘ which is now most apparently imminent on your
 ‘ Majesty and all your Kingdoms:

January.

‘ For Satisfaction therefore of your Majesty, and
 ‘ clearing of the Petitioners Innocency, they most
 ‘ humbly declare, as formerly they have done, That
 ‘ they are in no way conscious of any Disloyalty,
 ‘ but abhor all Thoughts thereof: And that they
 ‘ are resolved to make good their late solemn Prote-
 ‘ station and sacred Vow made to Almighty God,
 ‘ and, with the last Drop of their dearest Bloods,
 ‘ to defend and maintain the true Reformed Protest-
 ‘ ant Religion; and, according to the Duty of their
 ‘ Allegiance, your Majesty’s Royal Person, Honour,
 ‘ and Estate; (whatever is maliciously and most
 ‘ falsely suggested to your Majesty to the contrary) as
 ‘ well as the Power and Privileges of Parliament,
 ‘ and the lawful Rights and Liberties of the Subject;
 ‘ and do hereby engage themselves, their Estates,
 ‘ and all they have, to their uttermost Power, to
 ‘ defend and preserve your Majesty and both Houses
 ‘ of Parliament from all Tumults, Affronts, and
 ‘ Violence, with as much Loyalty, Love, and
 ‘ Duty, as ever Citizens expressed towards your
 ‘ Majesty, or any of your Royal Progenitors in their
 ‘ greatest Glory.

‘ The Petitioners therefore, upon their bended
 ‘ Knees, do most humbly beseech your Majesty to
 ‘ return to your Parliament, accompanied with your
 ‘ Royal, not your Martial, Attendance; to the
 ‘ End that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be
 ‘ settled and secured; and whatsoever is amiss in
 ‘ Church and Commonwealth reformed by their
 ‘ Advice, according to the Fundamental Constitu-
 ‘ tions of this Kingdom; and that such a Peace
 ‘ may thereby be obtained, as shall be for the Glory
 ‘ of God, the Honour and Happiness of your Ma-
 ‘ jesty and Posterity, and the Safety and Welfare of
 ‘ all your loyal Subjects; who (the Petitioners
 ‘ are fully assured, whatsoever is given out to
 the

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

January.

the contrary) do unanimously desire the Peace here.
in expressed.*And the Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.*

MICHELL.

*This being done, the King's Messenger^a being wish-
ed to read his Majesty's Answer to that Petition,
made some Apology to be excused; partly willing to
intimate that his Commission was but to deliver the
Answer to the Lord Mayor, (which seemed very
strange to Standers-by, who were ready to conclude,
that if his Majesty's Command had been of no larger
Extent, the Trouble of a Common Hall might well
have been spared) and partly pleading the Inaudible-
ness of his Voice in such a vast Assembly; but being
deemed the fittest for that Service by the Honourable
Committee, the Lord Mayor and his Brethren, he then
read his Majesty's Answer, which here follows:*

As also the
King's Answer
to it.

HIS Majesty hath graciously considered this
Petition, and returns this Answer: That
his Majesty doth not entertain any Misapprehen-
sion of the Love and Loyalty of his City of Lon-
don. As he hath always expressed a singular Re-
gard and Esteem of the Affections of that City,
and is still desirous to make it his chief Place of
Residence, and to continue and renew many
Marks of his Favour towards it; so he believes
much the better and greater Part of that his City
is full of Love, Duty, and Loyalty to his Majesty;
and that the Tumults which heretofore forced his
Majesty, for his Safety, to leave that Place, tho'
they were contrived and encouraged by some prin-
cipal Members thereof, (who are since well known,
though they are above the Reach of Justice) con-
sisted more of desperate Persons of the Suburbs,
and the neighbouring Towns, who were misled
by the Cunning and Malice of their Seducers,
than of the Inhabitants of that City. He looks

^a Capt. Heron, Son of Sir Edward Heron, High Sheriff of Lin-
colnshire, who had been voted a Delinquent, for executing the King's
Commission of Array in that County.

‘ on his good Subjects there as Persons groaning An. 18. Car. I.
 ‘ under the same Burden which doth oppress his 1642.
 ‘ Majesty, and awed by the same Persons who be-
 ‘ gat these Tumults, and the same Army which
 ‘ gave Battle to his Majesty: And therefore as no
 ‘ good Subject can more desire, from his Soul, a
 ‘ Composure of the general Distractions; so no
 ‘ good Citizen can more desire the Establishment of
 ‘ the particular Peace and Prosperity of that Place
 ‘ by his Majesty’s Access thither, than his Majesty
 ‘ himself doth.

January.

‘ But his Majesty desires his good Subjects of
 ‘ London seriously to consider what Confidence his
 ‘ Majesty can have of Security there, whilst the
 ‘ Laws of the Land are so notoriously despised and
 ‘ trampled under Foot; and the wholesome Govern-
 ‘ ment of that City, heretofore so famous over all the
 ‘ World, is now submitted to the arbitrary Power
 ‘ of a few desperate Persons of no Reputation, but
 ‘ for Malice and Disloyalty to him: Whilst Arms
 ‘ are taken up not only without, but against, his
 ‘ Consent and expresse Command; and Collections
 ‘ publickly made, and Contributions avowed, for the
 ‘ Maintenance of the Army which hath given him
 ‘ Battle, and therein used all possible Means Trea-
 ‘ son and Malice could suggest to them, to have ta-
 ‘ ken his Life from him, and to have destroyed his
 ‘ Royal Issue; whilst such of his Majesty’s Subjects,
 ‘ who, out of Duty and Affection to his Majesty,
 ‘ and Compassion of their bleeding Country, have
 ‘ laboured for Peace, are reviled, injured, and mur-
 ‘ dered, even by the Magistrates of that City, or by
 ‘ their Directions.

‘ Lastly, What Hope his Majesty can have of
 ‘ Safety there, whilst Alderman *Pennington*, their
 ‘ pretended Lord Mayor, (the principal Author of
 ‘ those Calamities which so nearly threaten the Ruin
 ‘ of that famous City) *Ven*, *Foulke*, and *Mainwa-*
 ‘ *ring*, all Persons notoriously guilty of Schism and
 ‘ High Treason, commit such Outrages in oppres-
 ‘ sing, robbing, and imprisoning, according to their
 ‘ Discretion, all such his Majesty’s loving Subjects
 ‘ whom

An. 13. Car. I.

1642.

January.

whom they are pleased to suspect but for wishing well to his Majesty: And his Majesty would know whether the Petitioners believe that the Reviling and Suppressing the Book of Common Prayer, (established in this Church ever since the Reformation) the Discountenancing and Imprisoning godly, learned, and painful Preachers; and the Cherishing and Countenancing of Brownists, Anabaptists, and all Manner of Sectaries, be the Way to defend and maintain the true Reformed Protestant Religion? That to comply with, and assist Persons who have actually attempted to kill his Majesty; and to allow and favour Libels, Pasquils, and seditious Sermons against his Majesty, be to defend his Royal Person and Honour according to the Duty of their Allegiance? Whether to imprison Men's Persons, and to plunder their Houses, because they will not rebel against his Majesty, nor assist those that do? Whether to destroy their Property, by taking away the Twentieth Part of their Estates from them; and, by the same arbitrary Power, to refer to four Standers-by of their own Faction, to judge what that Twentieth Part is, be to defend the lawful Rights and Liberties of the Subject? And if they think these Actions to be Instances of either, whether they do not know the Persons before-named to be guilty of them all? Or whether they think it possible that Almighty God can bless that City, and preserve it from Destruction, whilst Persons of such known Guilt and Wickedness are defended and justified amongst them, against the Power of that Law by which they can only subsist?

His Majesty is so far from suffering himself to be incensed against the whole City, by the Actions of these ill Men, though they have hitherto been so prevalent as to make the Affections of the rest of little Use to him; and is so willing to be with them and to protect them, that the Trade, Wealth, and Glory thereof (so decayed and eclipsed by these public Distractions) may again be the Envy

of

of all foreign Nations; that he doth, once more, An. 13. Car. 1.
graciously offer his Free and General Pardon to all 1642.
the Inhabitants of that his City of London, the
Suburbs, and City of Westminster, (except the
Persons formerly excepted by his Majesty) if they
shall yet return to their Duty, Loyalty, and Obedience. And if his good Subjects of that his City of London shall first solemnly declare, That they will defend the known Laws of the Land, and will submit to, and be governed by, no other Rule: If they shall first manifest, by defending themselves, and maintaining their own Rights, Liberties, and Interests, and suppressing any Force and Violence unlawfully raised against those and his Majesty, their Power to defend and preserve him from all Tumults, Affronts, and Violence: Lastly, If they shall apprehend, and commit to safe Custody, the Persons of those four Men who enrich themselves by the Spoil and Oppression of his loving Subjects, and the Ruin of the City, that his Majesty may proceed against them by the Course of Law, as guilty of High Treason, his Majesty will speedily return to them with his Royal, and without his Martial, Attendance; and will use his utmost Endeavour that they may, hereafter, enjoy all the Blessings of Peace and Plenty; and will no longer expect Obedience from them, than he shall, with all the Faculties of his Soul, labour in the Preserving and Advancing the true Reformed Protestant Religion, the Laws of the Land, the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and the just Privileges of Parliament.

January.

If, notwithstanding all this, the Art and Interest of these Men can prevail so far, that they involve more Men in their Guilt, and draw that his City to sacrifice its present Happiness and future Hopes to their Pride, Fury, and Malice, his Majesty shall only give them this Warning, That whosoever shall, henceforward, take up Arms without his Consent; contribute any Money or Plate, upon what Pretence of Authority soever, for Maintenance of the Army under the Command of the Earl

126 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

Ab. 18. Car. I.

1642.

January.

‘ Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebellion
‘ against him; or shall pay Tonnage and Pound-
‘ age, till the same shall be settled by Act of Par-
‘ liament; every such Person must expect the se-
‘ verest Punishment the Law can inflict; and, in
‘ the mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any
‘ Part of his Estate within his Power, for the Re-
‘ lief and Support of him and his Army, raised and
‘ maintained for the Defence of his Person, the
‘ Laws, and this his Kingdom: And since he de-
‘ nies to his Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his
‘ Subjection, by giving Assistance to Rebels, which,
‘ by the known Laws of the Land, is High Trea-
‘ son, his Majesty shall likewise deny him the Bene-
‘ fit of his Protection; and shall not only signify to
‘ all his foreign Ministers, that such Person shall re-
‘ ceive no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall,
‘ by all other Ways and Means, proceed against him
‘ as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this King-
‘ dom.

‘ But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his
‘ good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the
‘ Acts of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection,
‘ Loyalty, and Merit towards their Princes; the
‘ Renown they have had with all Posterity from, and
‘ the Blessings of Heaven which always accompanied,
‘ those Virtues; and will consider the perpetual Scorn
‘ and Infamy, which unavoidably will follow them
‘ and their Children, if infinitely the meaner Part
‘ in Quality, and much the lesser Part in Number,
‘ shall be able to alter the Government so admi-
‘ rably established, destroy the Trade so excellent-
‘ ly settled, and to waste the Wealth, so industri-
‘ ously gotten, of that flourishing City; and then
‘ they will easily gather up the Courage and Resolu-
‘ tion to join with his Majesty in Defence of their
‘ Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto
‘ hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty,
‘ and his Kingdom, happy.

‘ For concurring with the Advice of his two
‘ Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to
‘ the Commonwealth, may be as well at this Di-
‘ stance,

‘ stance as at *Whitehall*; his Majesty doubts not
 ‘ but his good Subjects of *London* well know how
 ‘ far (beyond the Example of his Predecessors) his
 ‘ Majesty hath concurred with their Advice in pas-
 ‘ sing of such Laws, by which he willingly hath
 ‘ parted with many of his known Rights, for the
 ‘ Benefit of his Subjects, which the Fundamental
 ‘ Constitutions of this Kingdom did not oblige
 ‘ him to consent to; and hath used all possible Means
 ‘ to beget a right Understanding between them;
 ‘ and will therefore apply themselves to those who,
 ‘ by making just, peaceable, and honourable Propo-
 ‘ sitions to his Majesty, can only beget that Con-
 ‘ currence.’

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

January.

After the King's Messenger had read this once upon the Hustings, in the Audience of those Honourable Persons, he was, for the Help of the Lowness of his Voice, and the Advantage of the great Multitudes in the Hall, willed to read the same a second Time in the Clock-house, in the Audience of the Body of that Assembly; among whom, after he had finished his Work, an inconsiderable Company near the Door made some Offers towards an Acclamation; but finding no expected Eccho to answer their Shout, they wound up in a little Modesty and a great deal of Silence, upon which the Earl of Manchester delivered his Speech as followeth:

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,

‘ **T**HIS Assembly can never be looked upon by any Members of both Houses of Parliament, but there must be some Offering of Gratitude made to you; of Thanks and Acknowledgements for your former large-hearted Expressions of Affection and Care for the Preservation both of the Parliament and Kingdom: The Occasion why my Lords and these Gentlemen of the House of Commons are come hither is this, They have read an Answer to an humble Petition of the Lord Mayor and Common Council and Citizens of *London* to his
 Ma-

The Earl of
Manchester's
Speech to the
Citizens on that
Occasion;

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This Answer they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some Observations by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pymme, that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's Answer, in the following Speech:

My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,

And Mr.

Pymme's, by way of Reply to the King's Answer.

I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That, in this Answer which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Aspersions upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tendernefs of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been full

full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true Answer to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your Petition was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an Answer of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

January.

‘The first Observation I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforced, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from Whitehall, and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

‘In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty’s Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons’ House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windſor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Asperſion cast upon this City, that any tumultuous

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

January.

tuous Carriage of yours was the Occasion of his Majesty's leaving the Parliament, and withdrawing himself to remoter Parts.

‘ It is affirmed, *That the Government of your City hath been managed by a few desperate Persons, and that they do exercise an arbitrary Power.* In Answer to which the two Houses of Parliament give you this Testimony, That you have, in most of the great Occasions concerning the Government of the City, followed their Direction; and that Direction, which they have given, and you have executed, they must and will maintain to be such as stands with their Honour in giving it, and your Trust and Fidelity in the Performance of it.

‘ It is objected in the third Place, *That Contributions have been publickly made, for the Maintenance of that Army which did join Battle with the King, and did, by all the Means that Treason and Malice could suggest, endeavour to take away his Life, and destroy his Issue.* To this I am commanded so say, That the Design of bringing up the *English* Armies, the gathering together of the Cavaliers about *White-hall*, the violent coming to the House of Commons, the King's going into the North and raising Armies there, are clear Evidences that Violence was first intended, and divers Practices were made against the Parliament, before they took any Course, or made any Preparation to take up Arms, for their Defence; for the Danger of his Majesty's Person they were sorry for it, and did, by divers humble Petitions, labour to prevent it; and as touching the Royal Issue, they have sufficiently declared to the World their good Affections towards them, by the Care they have taken both for the Safety and Maintenance of those who are left here.

‘ It is further expressed in this Answer, *That the King demands the Lord Mayor, Mr. Alderman Fowke, Col. Ven, and Col. Manwaring, to be delivered up as guilty of Schism and High Treason.* Concerning which I am commanded to tell you, as the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, That this Demand is against the Privilege of Parliament,

two

two of them being Members of the Commons House; most dishonourable to the City, that the Lord Mayor of *London* should be subjected to the Violence of every base Fellow, be assaulted, seized on, without due Process or Warrant, which the Law doth afford every private Man; and that you should be commanded to deliver up your Chief Magistrate, and such eminent Members of the City to the King's Pleasure, only because they have done their Duty in adhering to the Parliament, for the Defence of the Kingdom; and that it is against the Rules of Justice that any Men should be imprisoned upon such a general Charge, when no Particulars are proved against them; and this you are to take Notice of, as the Answer to those Scandals, and to that Disgrace upon my Lord Mayor, and the other Members of the City.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642:
January.

‘ And I am further to tell you, That there is little Cause for his Majesty to make this Demand, considering that he himself doth, by Force, keep away many accused in Parliament; as my Lord *Digby*, and many more impeached of High Treason, besides divers other great Delinquents, that stand charged there for heinous Crimes; all which, by Force, are kept from the due Proceedings and legal Trial of Parliament.

‘ It is alledged in this Answer, *That my Lord Mayor, and those other Persons named, are Countenancers of Brownists and Anabaptists, and all Manner of Sectaries.* To this I am commanded to say, That hereof there is no Proof: It doth not appear that they give any such Countenance to Sectaries of any Kind whatsoever; and if it did, his Majesty hath little Reason to object it, while, notwithstanding the Profession he hath often made, *That he will maintain the Protestant Reformed Religion*, he doth in the mean Time raise an Army of Papists; who, by the Principles of their Religion, are bound, if Power be put into their Hands, to destroy and utterly to root out the Protestants, together with the Truth which they profess.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

January.

It is affirmed, *That Men's Persons have been imprisoned, and their Houses plundered, because they will not rebell against his Majesty.* To this I am commanded to declare, That no Men's Houses have been plundered by any Direction of the Parliament, but that they have been very careful to restrain all such violent Courses, so far as they were able; and that they have never committed any Man, but such as, by due Information, they conceived to be seditious Persons, and like to trouble the Peace of the State.

‘It is objected further, *That the Property of the Subject is destroyed, by taking away the twentieth Part by an arbitrary Power.* To this they say, That in that Ordinance it doth not require a twentieth Part, but doth limit the Assessors that they shall not go beyond a twentieth Part; and that this is done by a Power derived from both Houses of Parliament; the Lords, who have an Hereditary Interest in making Laws in this Kingdom; and the Commons, who are elected and chosen to represent the whole Body of the Commonalty, and trusted for the Good of the People, whenever they see Cause to charge the Kingdom. And they say further, That the same Law, that did enable the two Houses of Parliament to raise Forces to maintain and defend the Safety of Religion, and of the Kingdom, doth likewise enable them to require Contributions, whereby those Forces may be maintained; or else it were a vain Power to raise Forces, if they had not a Power likewise to maintain them in that Service for which they were raised.

‘And to this Point I am commanded to add this further Answer, That there was little Reason for this to be objected on his Majesty's Behalf, when it is well known that, from the Subjects which are within the Power of his Army, his Majesty doth take the full yearly Value of their Lands, and in some Cases more; that not only particular Houses, but whole Towns, have been plundered by Command and Design; and that, by Proclamations, Men are declared to forfeit all their Estates, because they will

will not obey arbitrary Commands; and this is commonly practised by his Majesty, and on his Part: And therefore there was little Reason to charge the Parliament with so necessary and moderate a Contribution as the twentieth Part.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
January.

‘ It is declared, *That the King expects to be kept from Tumults and Affronts.* Upon which I am commanded to observe, That his Majesty’s Expressions, in his Answer, tend to the making of a Division in this City, and to the raising of a Party which may make some Disturbance in that orderly Government which is now established; both which will certainly prove equally destructive to him and both Houses of Parliament; and more prejudicial to his quiet Abode here, than any Thing that hath ever been acted by the Houses of Parliament, or the present Governors of the City.

‘ They observe further that, in this Answer, *His Majesty doth profess that he will seize upon the Estates of all that shall contribute any Thing towards the Maintenance of the Parliament’s Army, and will put them out of his Protection; and, by his Ministers in foreign States, will take such Course that they may be proceeded against as Enemies;* that is, destroyed and spoiled. To which the Lords and Commons do declare, That this is an Excess of Rigour and Injustice beyond all Example, that particular Men should lose their private Estates here without Law or judicial Proceeding; and that our Prince, who owes Protection to the Kingdom as well as to particular Persons, should suffer the Wealth thereof to be robbed and spoiled by foreign States: Upon due Consideration whereof, they hope his Majesty will be induced by better Counsel to forbear the Execution than that by which he hath been persuaded to publish such a Resolution.

‘ Besides these Observations out of the Answer, I am to observe one out of a Narrative that was received from the Common Council, that the King did declare, *That he would send some Messengers here to observe your Carriage in the City, and what was done amongst you.* The Parliament have just Cause

134 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition
 1642. and Trouble; and therefore desire you to observe
 January. them and find them out, and that they may know
 who they are.

‘ I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all Likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frightened by any Thing that is in this Answer, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made; and, at last, (the Company ready to be dissolved) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following :

‘ Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, that if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force; and you shall always find, that this Protection

tion
 but t
 Com

W
 zens,
 gave
 the j
 after
 artic
 with
 the l

So
 was
 secte
 and
 conv
 appe
 Desir
 ding
 of a
 as it
 and
 Affe
 may
 the
 abov

T
 of L
 occa
 the f

T
 ‘ V
 ‘ C
 ‘ by
 ‘ ce
 ‘ th
 ‘ kn

tion of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, An. 18. Car. I.
but to all others that have done any Thing by their
Command.' 1642.

January.

Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, and the like.

So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.

The ill Reception the King's Answer to the City of London's Petition met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following Letter and Declaration to the Sheriffs.

Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,

WE received a Petition lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of London, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us, as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that Petition was framed, and where

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of London, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

January.

where perused and examined before it was approved by those from whom it seemed to be sent, yet we were so willing to enter into a Correspondence with that our City, and to receive any Address and Application from them, according to that Invitation we had given by our late Proclamation; and were so glad to find that there was yet some Hopes they would look to the Peace and Happiness of that City, and at last sever themselves from any Faction or Dependence, which might insensibly involve them in those Calamities they did not foresee; that we returned such a gracious Answer thereunto, so full of Candour and Affection, that the meanest Inhabitant of that our City, if he carefully consider the same, will find himself concerned in it, and that we have had an especial Care of his Particular.

With this Answer of ours we sent a Servant of our own, in the Company of those who had been so well used here, to require and see that it might be communicated to the whole Body of that our City; not doubting but that both it, and the Bringer, should receive such Entertainment there, as might manifest their due Regard of us, and of our Affection to them: But, to our great Wonder, we find that, after ten Days Attendance, and suffering a ridiculous Pamphlet to be published in our Name, as if we retracted our former Resolutions, (which Pamphlet we have caused to be burned by the Hand of the Hangman, as we also require you to see done) instead of that Admission we expected to our Messenger and Message, Guards of armed Men have been brought to keep our good Subjects, to whom that our Answer was directed, from being present at the Reading thereof; and Speeches have been made by Strangers, (who have been admitted to the City Councils, contrary to the Freedom and Custom of those Meetings) to blast our said Answer, and to dishonour and slander us; which if our good Subjects there shall suffer, we shall be much discouraged in

in our desired Correspondence with that our City, and so, by the Cunning and Power of those Incendiaries, mentioned in our Answer, Alderman Pennington, (who to shew his great Loyalty to us, and his Fitness to be Chief Magistrate of such a City, being informed that a desperate Person there said, *That he hoped shortly to wash his Hands in our Blood*, refused to send any Warrant, or to give any Direction to any Officer, for his Apprehension) Ven, Fowke, and Manwaring, who have plunged that our City into such unspeakable Calamities, in which they would still keep it to cure their own desperate Condition, our good Subjects there are not suffered to receive our gracious Answer to that Petition.

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

We have therefore thought fit to write these our Letters to you, requiring you, the Sheriffs of our said City, to take Care for the publishing that our Answer (which we herewith send you) to our good Subjects of that our City: And our Pleasure is, That you the Masters and Wardens of the several Companies of our said City forthwith summon all the Members of your several Companies, with all the Freemen and Apprentices (whose Hopes and Interests are so much blasted in these general Distractions) belonging thereunto, to appear at their several Halls; where you shall cause our said Answer, together with these our Letters, to be publickly read; that all our good Subjects may clearly understand how far we have been from begetting, how far we are from continuing or nourishing, these unnatural Civil Dissentions; and how much it is in their own Power to remove the present Pressures, and to establish the future Happiness and Glory of that famous City; and may seriously weigh every Part of that our Answer, as well that which carries Caution in it for the future, as Pardon for what is past: For assure yourselves, for the Time to come, we shall proceed with all Severity against such who shall incur the Penalty of the Law in those Points, of which we have given them so fair a Warning in our

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

January.

our said Answer : And whosoever shall not behave himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such Person hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he must not hope for any Security by us; and, to that Purpose, we shall henceforward have a very inquisitive Eye upon the Actions of all our Subjects, that some Example may be made, how easy it is for us to punish their Disloyalties abroad, who, for a Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

And, to the End that none of our good Subjects of that our City may think themselves bound to obey any of the Orders or Commands of the pretended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do still accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take our Life from us, it is well known to those Citizens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so graciously confirmed by us, and of which we presume our good Subjects there do still desire to receive the Benefit) that the said *Isaac Pennington* was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted, to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; that in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the Plurality of Voices, chosen; and that this Man was never presented to, or admitted by us, in such Manner as is prescribed by their Charter; neither had that Judge, who presumed to swear him, any more Colour of Law or Authority to administer such an Oath to him, than he hath to do the same Tomorrow to any other Alderman of the City: And we do therefore hereby declare the said *Isaac Pennington* not to be Mayor of that our City of *London*, and to have no lawful Authority to exercise the same; and that our good Subjects of that our City ought not to submit to any Orders, Directions, or Commands, which shall issue from him as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that the same are void, and of none Effect.

And

‘ And we do once more require you the Sheriffs
 ‘ of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of
 ‘ the same, in which all our good Subjects of that
 ‘ City will assist you, that you cause the said *Isaac*
 ‘ *Pennington*, *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, to be
 ‘ apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that
 ‘ we may proceed against them as guilty of High
 ‘ Treason, and as the principal Authors of those Ca-
 ‘ lamities which are now so heavy upon our poor
 ‘ Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly re-
 ‘ medied, will in a short Time utterly confound a
 ‘ Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an Esti-
 ‘ mation in all the Parts of Christendom.

An. 18 Car. I.
 1642.
 January.

‘ And whereas we are informed that one *Brown*,
 ‘ a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and
 ‘ one *Harvey*, a Silkman, have exercised great In-
 ‘ solencies and Outrages in that our City; and when
 ‘ many of our good Subjects there have assem-
 ‘ bled together, in a peaceable and modest Manner,
 ‘ to consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City,
 ‘ the said mutinous and seditious Persons have pre-
 ‘ sumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against
 ‘ them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wounded,
 ‘ and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and Plea-
 ‘ sure is, That if the said *Brown*, *Titchborne*, and
 ‘ *Harvey*, or either of them, shall so far neglect our
 ‘ gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage them-
 ‘ selves in those unwarrantable and seditious Courses,
 ‘ you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise Power to
 ‘ suppress the said Force; and that you, and all our
 ‘ Ministers of Justice, use your utmost Means to
 ‘ apprehend the said Persons, and to bring them to
 ‘ condign Punishment: And we do hereby declare,
 ‘ That it shall be lawful for any of our loving Sub-
 ‘ jects to resist and oppose the said Persons, if they
 ‘ shall hereafter, in such a warlike Mannner, en-
 ‘ deavour to molest them, as they would do Rebels
 ‘ and Traitors.

‘ And we hope that all our good Subjects of that
 ‘ our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice
 ‘ of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our
 ‘ so

140 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.
January.

‘ so freely passing by and pardoning the Offences
‘ there committed against us, as we have offered by
‘ our Proclamation and our late Answer; and of
‘ our very earnest Desire to be with them, and to
‘ reside amongst them for their Comfort, Support,
‘ and Protection; if they shall, by first providing
‘ for their own Security, in such Manner as we
‘ have directed them in our late Answer, give us an
‘ Instance that we may be safe there too; and that
‘ they do likewise observe, that, being by such Vio-
‘ lence kept from them, we have done our utmost
‘ Endeavour to continue and advance the decayed
‘ Trading of that our City, by permitting and en-
‘ couraging all Resort and Traffick thither; and
‘ therefore if, by the stopping of Carriages, and
‘ seizing Commodities by other Men, the Com-
‘ merce and Correspondence be broken between
‘ that Place and our good Subjects of other Counties,
‘ they will impute that Mischief to the true Authors
‘ of it, and look upon us only as not able to help
‘ them. ’

‘ Do but your Duties, and this Cloud, which
‘ threatens a present Confusion, will quickly vanish
‘ away; and you will enjoy all the Blessings of a
‘ happy Nation, to the which no Endeavour of ours
‘ shall be wanting. ’

*Given at our Court at Oxford, this 17th Day of
January, 1642.*

The

^a This Passage of the King's Letter seems to allude to a Declara-
tion of Parliament made the 9th of this Month, whereby it was
ordained, ‘ That no Ships whatsoever should, from thenceforth, make
any Voyage for the fetching of Coals or Salt from *Newcastle, San-
derland, or Blythe*; or carrying of Corn, or other Provision of
Vidual, untill the Town of *Newcastle* should be freed from the
Forces there raised, or maintained, against the Parliament; and that
Town be reduced into such Hands, and Condition, as should de-
clare themselves for King and Parliament. And that if any Ship
should, at any Time after the first of *February* then next coming,
bring into any Port or Place of this Kingdom, any Coals or Salt la-
den from *Newcastle, Sunderland, or Blythe, or any of them*, untill
further Order be taken by both Houses of Parliament, that every
such Ship, and the Master and Sailors in the same, should be seized
upon, and stayed in such Port and Place where they come in, untill
the two Houses of Parliament, being thereof informed, should take
further Order and Direction therein. ’

The
their Re
the sever
their Ha
the Lor
special C
fters of
opposing
Custody
Thus
mittees
quences
to retur
at *Wes*

On t
an Ord
or Wag
dities w
go to
with an
cial Lic
obedien
should
And tha
that ma
Oxford
or Serv
Parliam
or refic
appreh
ingly.
About
Proclam
the nex
Oxford
lic, tha
longing
clamat
pal Per
same T

The Sheriffs having acquainted both Houses of An. 18. Car. 1.
 their Receipt of the foregoing Letter from the King, 1642.
 the several Companies were forbid to assemble at
 their Halls according to his Majesty's Order, and
 the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs were desired to take
 special Care to prevent the same: And some Ma-
 sters of Companies, that were chief Promoters in
 opposing this Order of Parliament, were taken into
 Custody. Which the Par-
 liament forbid
 them to do;

Thus much for the Proceedings of the Com-
 mittees at the *Guildhall* in *London*, and the Conse-
 quences of that Meeting:—It is now high Time
 to return, and see what other Business was doing
 at *Westminster*.

On the 16th of this Month the Commons made
 an Order, That no Carriers, Waggoners, Carts,
 or Waggoners, or Horses laden with any Commo-
 dities whatsoever, should be permitted hereafter to
 go to *Oxford*, or any Part of the King's Army,
 with any Manner of Provisions, without the spe-
 cial License of that House: And in case of Dis-
 obedience to such Order, their Persons and Goods
 should be seized upon, and kept in safe Custody.
 And that diligent Search be made for any Monies
 that may be carried, or conveyed, by any Person to
Oxford: Also another Order, That if any Agent,
 or Servant, to any Person bearing Arms against the
 Parliament, should presume to come to *Westminster*,
 or reside about *London*, they should be forthwith
 apprehended as Spies, and proceeded against accord-
 ingly. And stop all Pro-
 visions from go-
 ing to the King's
 Army, &c.

About this Time the King having issued out a
 Proclamation for adjourning all the Courts of Justice,
 the next Term, from *London* and *Westminster* to
Oxford, this was thought so prejudicial to the Pub-
 lic, that the Parliament forbid the Officers be-
 longing to the said several Courts to obey this Pro-
 clamations, or the King's Letters sent to the princi-
 pal Persons concerned in them. However, at the
 same Time, they thought fit to send a Petition to
 his
 The King ad-
 journs the Term
 to *Oxford*.

142 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I. his Majesty, offering Reasons against the said Removal, and praying that the King would revoke his Orders therein: To this the Lords received an Answer, which was read in their House, on the 18th of this Month, and was to this Effect: ^b

1642.
January.

His Majesty's
Reasons for so
doing.

HIS Majesty hath seriously weighed the Reasons, presented unto him by both Houses of Parliament, to induce his Majesty to revoke his late Proclamation for the adjourning of the Term, and returns this Answer:

That the Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of *England* being, in regard of his Majesty's most important Affairs, necessarily to attend his Majesty, his Majesty hath likewise appointed his High Court of Chancery to be held in the Place where his Majesty resides; that so his Subjects may have their Causes determined by the Supreme Judge of that Court: But is well content that the Masters of the Chancery, that are Assistants to the House of Peers, shall, notwithstanding his said Proclamation, continue their Attendance upon that House where they are Assistants.

For his Court of Wards, upon which so essential a Part of his Majesty's Revenue depends, it concerned him to draw the same to him; since, being at *London*, it will prove of no Advantage or Supply to his Majesty's Occasions, by reason of the Stops there of all Money from coming to him: And therefore he shall expect the Presence of the Council of that Court here, the Time of the Term being so short that they may speedily return again to the Service of the Houses, who have not used to deny their Members Leave, for so short a Time, to attend his Majesty's Service, to which by Law they are bound; besides that his Majesty doubts not but he may, for a convenient Time, upon pressing and urgent Occasions, especially for the

Dis-

^b From the *Lords Journals*: This Answer of the King is omitted by *Rushworth* and *Husbands*, though the following Ordinance, in Reply to it, is inserted in both those Collections.

‘ Discharge of another necessary Duty, dispense with An. 18. Car. I.
 ‘ a Peer’s Attendance upon the House, without any 1642.
 ‘ Breach of Privilege, seeing it hath not been denied
 ‘ in former Parliaments. }
 January.

‘ For the Danger of his Majesty’s Subjects in their
 ‘ Passage, by reason of the several Armies, his Ma-
 ‘ jesty doth not know that they are to pass through
 ‘ more Armies to his City of *Oxford*, than they
 ‘ must to his City of *London*; or that the Courts of
 ‘ Justice cannot proceed with the same Freedom and
 ‘ Liberty where his Majesty’s Army is, as where
 ‘ there is an Army against him; but his Majesty will
 ‘ take Care that his good Subjects shall no way suffer
 ‘ by his Army here, which he can, by no Means,
 ‘ undertake for the other Army at *London*.

‘ For the Records of the several Courts, his Ma-
 ‘ jesty expects and requires Obedience from the Of-
 ‘ ficers thereof, according to his Proclamation; as no
 ‘ doubt his Subjects will take Care for the particular
 ‘ Evidences that concern themselves; and for the
 ‘ safe Carriage and Conveyance of both, that they
 ‘ suffer not, in the least Degree, by his Majesty’s
 ‘ Army, his Majesty will surely provide; neither
 ‘ can the Prejudice be great to his Subjects, the
 ‘ Courts of Equity being no further removed from
 ‘ the Courts of Law.

‘ The Reason of his Majesty’s Adjournment of
 ‘ the Courts of Law till *Craftino Purificationis*, is
 ‘ for the great Danger his good Subjects must un-
 ‘ dergo by passing through the Armies: And his
 ‘ Majesty much fears his good Subjects will have
 ‘ little Benefit by their legal Proceedings, whilst his
 ‘ Majesty and the Law are no better able to defend
 ‘ one another.

‘ For these Reasons, and those expressed in his
 ‘ Proclamation, his Majesty can by no Means re-
 ‘ voke his said Proclamation; but it being his un-
 ‘ doubted Right to adjourn or remove the Terms to
 ‘ what Place he pleases, if he hath yet any undoubt-
 ‘ ed Right, his Majesty expects Obedience to his
 ‘ said Proclamation and to every Part thereof.’

This

An. 18. Car. 1.

1642.

January.

This Answer of the King's was ordered to be communicated to the Commons: And, a few Days after, both Houses passed the following Ordinance, to justify their Conduct in not suffering the Adjournment of the Courts to *Oxford*.

An Ordinance of Parliament, forbidding any Obedience to the King's Proclamation for such Adjournment.

THE Lords and Commons having taken into their serious Consideration a Proclamation, dated at *Oxford* the 27th of *December* last, for the adjourning of the Court of Chancery, the Court of Wards and Liveries, the Duchy of *Lancaster*, the Court of Requests, the Receipt of his Majesty's Exchequer, and of the First Fruits and Tenths, from the City of *Westminster* unto the City of *Oxford*; and for adjourning the Courts of King's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer, unto the Return *Craftino Purificationis*, found it to tend much to the Prejudice of the Commonwealth to remove the said Courts and Receipts to *Oxford*, where the Body of an Army, raised against the Parliament and the Authority thereof, now resides; and therefore, in Performance of the Duty and Trust reposed in them by the Kingdom, whom they represent, did exhibit their humble Advice and Petition to his Majesty, with the Reasons inducing them thereunto, to revoke the said Proclamation; and, with all Humility, desired that the said Courts and Receipts might be kept at their several usual Places and Times, and not at *Oxford*: But his Majesty, giving still more Credit to the Suggestions of those wicked and malignant Persons that yet encompass him, than to his highest and most faithful Council, returned his negative Answer, and expressly denied to repeal this Proclamation:

Now, the Lords and Commons clearly discovering the great Inconveniences and Mischiefs that necessarily must happen to his Majesty's most faithful and best-affected Subjects, in case those Courts and Receipts be removed to *Oxford*; where such of them as have Occasion to attend, cannot,

with

' wit
' his
' tha
' of t
' be
' the
' the
' Per
' som
' thin
' Par
' stroy
' vers
' upon
' sary
' Affi
' Pres
' if th
' Cou
' towa
' resid
' Misc
' of h
' there
' the f
' neces
' prove
' their
' them
' them
' And
' no Ju
' any o
' the f
' thing
' ment
' cutin
' sistan
' that
' about
' presun
' liame
VOL

‘ with any Safety to their Persons and Estates, repair; An. 18. Car. 1.
 ‘ his Majesty having, in effect, declared all Persons 1642.
 ‘ that have contributed any thing in Aid or Defence
 ‘ of the Parliament, and the Privileges thereof, to
 ‘ be guilty of High Treason; and, in pursuance
 ‘ thereof, by the Force and Power of the Army
 ‘ there remaining, have seized upon many of their
 ‘ Persons, where they are detained Prisoners, and
 ‘ some proceeded against as Traitors; having no-
 ‘ thing laid to their Charge but their assisting the
 ‘ Parliament, and opposing that Army raised to de-
 ‘ stroy it and the Kingdom: And finding that di-
 ‘ vers, both Judges and others, whose Attendance
 ‘ upon the said Courts and Receipts will be neces-
 ‘ sary, consist of Persons that are Members and
 ‘ Assistants to both Houses of Parliament, whose
 ‘ Presence at this Time cannot be spared; and that
 ‘ if the Records, necessary to be used in the said
 ‘ Courts, should be removed from the usual Places
 ‘ towards *Oxford*, in a Time when two Armies are
 ‘ residing near thereabouts, it would endanger the
 ‘ Miscarriage of them; which might ruin many
 ‘ of his Majesty’s Subjects, whose Estates depend
 ‘ thereupon: And that so long a Distance between
 ‘ the said Courts of Law and Equity, which have
 ‘ necessary Dependence one upon another, would
 ‘ prove exceeding prejudicial to many, thought it
 ‘ their Duty, in Discharge of the Trust reposed in
 ‘ them by the Commonwealth, as much as in
 ‘ them lieth, to prevent the said Inconveniences:
 ‘ And therefore do hereby declare and order, That
 ‘ no Judge, Minister, or other Person belonging to
 ‘ any of the said Courts or Receipts, shall repair to
 ‘ the said City of *Oxford*; or do or execute any
 ‘ thing belonging to the said Offices and Employ-
 ‘ ments, but in Places usual for the doing and exe-
 ‘ cuting thereof: And that no Member of, or As-
 ‘ sistant to, any of the two Houses of Parliament,
 ‘ that have any Place, Office, or Employment,
 ‘ about any of the said Courts or Receipts, shall
 ‘ presume to depart from their Attendance on Par-
 ‘ liament, without the special Leave of that House
 ‘ where-

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

January.

whereof they are Members or Assistants: And that
 no Person shall remove, or cause to be removed,
 any Records or Writings of any of the said Courts or
 Receipts to or towards the City of *Oxford*. And
 the Lords and Commons do declare, That if any
 Person shall disobey this Order, they will proceed
 against them as wilful Contemners of the Autho-
 rity of Parliament, and Disturbers of the Peace of
 the Kingdom.

And it is further declared and ordered by the said
 Lords and Commons, That no Judgment, De-
 cree, Order, and Proceedings whatsoever, that
 shall be given, made, or had, by or in any of the
 said Courts or Receipts, out of the usual Places
 where the said Courts and Receipts have been ac-
 customed to be held and kept, shall bind any Per-
 son that shall or may be concerned therein, with-
 out his own voluntary Consent: And that the said
 Lords and Commons will, by the Authority of
 both Houses of Parliament, protect and keep in-
 demnified all Judges, Officers, and other Persons,
 from any Damage or Inconvenience that may or
 can happen to them for yielding Obedience to this
 Ordinance.

The Commons had been, all the latter End of
 this Month, fully employed in settling the several
 Articles; by way of Propositions, to be presented to
 the King, for a general Pacification, which had been
 sent down to them from the Lords. After several
 Conferences, Altercations, and Emendations made
 by both Houses, and several Divisions on the prin-
 cipal Heads by the latter, they were at last finished
 on the 27th. And a Committee, consisting of four
 Lords and eight Commoners, was appointed to go
 to *Oxford*, for whom a Letter of Safe Conduct was
 desired. The King immediately returned one, and,
 on the first Day of *February*, the following Proposi-
 tions were presented to his Majesty, at *Oxford*, by
 the Parliament's Commissioners appointed for that
 Purpose. Their Titles and Names were, the Earls
 of *Northumberland*, *Pembroke*, *Sarum*, and *Holland*;
 for

for the Commons, the Lords *Wenman* and *Dungar-* An. 18. Car. I.
von, Sir *John Holland*, Sir *William Litton*, the Hon. 1642.
William Pierpoint, *Bulstrode Whitlocke*, *Edmund*
Waller, and *Richard Winwood*, Esqrs. February.

The HUMBLE DESIRES and PROPOSITIONS of the
 Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, tendered unto his Majesty, Feb. 1, 1642.

‘ **W**E your Majesty’s most humble and faith- The Parlia-
 ful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in ment’s Proposi-
 Parliament assembled, having in our Thoughts the tions for Peace,
 Glory of God, your Majesty’s Honour, and the King at Oxford.
 Prosperity of your People; and being most grie-
 vously afflicted with the pressing Miseries and Ca-
 lamities which have overwhelmed your two King-
 doms of *England* and *Ireland*, since your Majesty
 hath, by the Persuasion of evil Counsellors, with-
 drawn yourself from the Parliament, raised an
 Army against it, and, by Force thereof, protected
 Delinquents from the Justice of it; constraining
 us to take Arms for the Defence of our Religion,
 Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Parliament, and for
 the Sitting of the Parliament in Safety; which
 Fears and Dangers are continued and increased by
 the raising, drawing together, and arming of great
 Numbers of Papists under the Command of the
 Earl of *Newcastle*; likewise by making the Lord
Herbert of Ragland, and other known Papists,
 Commanders of great Forces; whereby many
 grievous Oppressions, Rapines, and Cruelties have
 been, and are daily, exercised upon the Persons and
 Estates of your People; much innocent Blood hath
 been spilt, and the Papists have attained Means of
 attempting, with Hopes of effecting, their mischie-
 vous Design of rooting out the Reformed Religion,
 and destroying the Professors thereof. In the ten-
 der Sense and Compassion of these Evils, under
 which your People and Kingdom lie, (according
 to the Duty which we owe to God, your Maje-
 sty, and the Kingdom for which we are trusted)
 do most earnestly desire that an End may be put

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

to these great Distempers and Distractions, for
 the preventing of that Desolation which doth
 threaten all your Majesty's Dominions; and as
 we have rendered, and still are ready to render,
 to your Majesty, that Subjection, Obedience, and
 Service, which we owe unto you; so we most
 humbly beseech your Majesty to remove the
 Causes of this War, and to vouchsafe us that
 Peace and Protection which we and our Ancestors
 have formerly enjoyed under your Majesty and
 your Royal Predecessors, and graciously to accept
 and grant these our most humble Desires and Pro-
 positions!

I. That your Majesty will be pleased to disband
 your Armies, as we likewise shall be ready to dis-
 band all those Forces which we have raised; and
 that you will be pleased to return to your Parlia-
 ment.

II. That you will leave Delinquents to a legal
 Trial, and Judgment of Parliament.

III. That the Papists may not only be disbanded,
 but disarmed according to Law.

IV. That your Majesty will be pleased to give
 your Royal Assent unto the Bill for taking away
 superstitious Innovations: To the Bill for the utter
 abolishing and taking away of all Archbishops,
 Bishops, their Chancellors and Commissaries,
 Deans, Sub Deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdea-
 cons, Canons, and Prebendaries, and all Chaun-
 ters, Chancellors, Treasurers, Sub-Treasurers,
 Succentors, and Sacristis; and all Vicars Choral,
 Choiristers, old Vicars and new Vicars of any Ca-
 thedral or Collegiate Church, and all other their
 Under-Officers out of the Church of *England*:
 To the Bill against scandalous Ministers: To the
 Bill against Pluralities: And to the Bill for Con-
 sultation to be had with Godly, Religious, and
 Learned Divines. That your Majesty will be plea-
 sed to promise to pass such other good Bills for
 settling of Church-Government, as, upon Con-
 sultation with the Assembly of the said Divines,
 shall

shall be resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, An. 18. Car. I.
and, by them, be presented to your Majesty.

1642.

February.

V. That your Majesty having expressed, in your Answer to the Nineteen Propositions of both Houses of Parliament, an hearty Affection and Intention for the rooting out of Popery out of this Kingdom; and that if both the Houses of Parliament can yet find a more effectual Course to disable Jesuits, Priests, and Popish Recusants, from disturbing the State or eluding the Laws, that you would willingly give your Consent unto it; that you would be graciously pleased, for the better Discovery and speedier Conviction of Recusants, that an Oath may be established by Act of Parliament, to be administered in such Manner as by both Houses shall be agreed on; wherein they shall abjure and renounce the Pope's Supremacy, the Doctrine of Transubstantiation, Purgatory, worshipping of the consecrated Host, Crucifixes, and Images; and the refusing the said Oath, being tendered in such Manner as shall be appointed by Act of Parliament, shall be a sufficient Conviction, in Law, of Recusancy. And that your Majesty will be graciously pleased to give your Royal Assent unto a Bill for the Education of the Children of Papists, by Protestants, in the Protestant Religion. That for the more effectual Execution of the Laws against Popish Recusants, your Majesty will be pleased to consent to a Bill for the true levying of the Penalties against them; and that the same Penalties may be levied and disposed of in such Manner as both Houses of Parliament shall agree on, so as your Majesty be at no Loss. And likewise to a Bill, whereby the Practice of Papists against the State may be prevented, and the Laws against them duly executed.

VI. That the Earl of *Bristol* may be removed from your Majesty's Counsels; and that both he and the Lord *Herbert*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Worcester*, may likewise be restrained from coming within the Verge of the Court; and that they

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

may not bear any Office, or have any Employments, concerning the State or Commonwealth.

VII. That your Majesty will be graciously pleased, by Act of Parliament, to settle the Militia, both by Sea and Land, and also the Forts and Ports of the Kingdom, in such a Manner as shall be agreed on by both Houses.

VIII. That your Majesty will be pleased, by your Letters Patent, to make Sir *John Bramston* Chief Justice of your Court of King's Bench; *William Lenthall*, Esq; the now Speaker of the Commons House, Master of the Rolls; and to continue the Lord Chief Justice *Bankes* Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas; and likewise to make Mr. Serjeant *Wylde* Chief Baron of your Court of Exchequer; and that Mr. Justice *Bacon* may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Rolle* and Mr. Serjeant *Atkins* made Justices of the King's Bench; that Mr. Justice *Reeves* and Mr. Justice *Foster* may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Pheasant* made one of the Justices of your Court of Common Pleas; that Mr. Serjeant *Creswell*, Mr. *Samuel Brown*, and Mr. *John Puleston* may be Barons of the Exchequer; and that all these, and all the Judges of the same Courts for the Time to come, may hold their Places, by Letters Patent under the Great Seal, *quamdiu se bene gesserint*; and that the several Persons, not before named, that do hold any of these Places before mentioned, may be removed.

IX. That all such Persons as have been put out of the Commission of Peace, or Oyer and Terminer, or from being *Custodes Rotulorum*, since the first Day of *April*, 1642, other than such as were put out by Desire of both or either of the Houses of Parliament, may again be put into those Commissions and Offices; and that such Persons may be put out of those Commissions and Offices as shall be excepted against by both Houses of Parliament.

X. That your Majesty will be pleased to pass the Bill now presented to your Majesty, to vindicate

cate

cate and secure the Privileges of Parliament from
the ill Consequence of the late Precedent, in the
Charge and Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbol-*
ton, now Earl of *Manchester*, and the five Mem-
bers of the House of Commons.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

XI. That your Majesty's Royal Assent may be
given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by both
Houses of Parliament for the satisfying and paying
the Debts and Damages, wherein the two Houses
of Parliament have engaged the Public Faith of
the Kingdom.

XII. That your Majesty will be pleased, ac-
cording to a gracious Answer heretofore received
from you, to enter into a more strict Alliance with
the States of the United Provinces, and other
Neighbour Princes and States of the Protestant
Religion, for the Defence and Maintenance there-
of against all Designs and Attempts of the Popish
and Jesuitical Faction to subvert and suppress it;
whereby your Subjects may hope to be free from
the Mischiefs which this Kingdom hath endured,
through the Power which some of that Party have
had in your Councils, and will be much encou-
raged, in a Parliamentary Way, for your Aid and
Assistance, in restoring your Royal Sister and the
Prince Elector to those Dignities and Dominions
which belong unto them, and the relieving the
other Protestant Princes who have suffered in the
same Cause.

XIII. That, in the General Pardon which your
Majesty hath been pleased to offer to your Sub-
jects, all Offences and Misdemeanors committed
before the 10th of *January*, 1641, which have
been, or shall be, questioned or proceeded against
in Parliament, upon Complaint in the House of
Commons, before the 10th of *January*, 1643,
shall be excepted; which Offences and Misde-
meanors shall, nevertheless, be taken and adjudged
to be fully discharged against all other inferior
Courts. That likewise there shall be an Excep-
tion of all Offences committed by any Person, or
Persons, which hath, or have, had any Hand or
Prac-

AN. 18. CAR. I.
1642.

February.

‘ tice in the Rebellion of *Ireland*; which hath, or
‘ have, given any Counsel, Assistance, or Encou-
‘ ragement to the Rebels there, for the Maintenance
‘ of that Rebellion; as likewise the Exception of *Wil-*
‘ *liam* Earl of *Newcastle*, and *George* Lord *Digby*.

XIV. ‘ That your Majesty will be pleased to re-
‘ store such Members of either House of Parliament
‘ to their several Places of Services and Employ-
‘ ment, out of which they have been put since the
‘ Beginning of this Parliament; that they may re-
‘ ceive Satisfaction and Reparation for those Places,
‘ and for the Profits which they have lost by such Re-
‘ movals, upon the Petition of both Houses of Par-
‘ liament; and that all others may be restored to
‘ their Offices and Employments, who have been
‘ put out of the same upon any Displeasure concei-
‘ ved against them for any Assistance given to both
‘ Houses of Parliament, or obeying their Commands;
‘ or forbearing to leave their Attendance upon the
‘ Parliament without Licence; or for any other Oc-
‘ casion arising from these unhappy Differences be-
‘ twixt your Majesty and both Houses of Parliament,
‘ upon the like Petition of both Houses.

‘ These Things being granted and performed, as
‘ it hath always been our hearty Prayer, so shall
‘ we be enabled to make it our hopeful Endea-
‘ vour, that your Majesty and your People may
‘ enjoy the Blessings of Peace, Truth, and Justice;
‘ the Royalty and Greatness of your Throne may
‘ be supported by the loyal and bountiful Affec-
‘ tions of your People; their Liberties and Pri-
‘ vileges maintained by your Majesty’s Protection
‘ and Justice; and this public Honour and Hap-
‘ piness of your Majesty and all your Dominions,
‘ communicated to other Churches and States of
‘ your Alliance; and be derived to your Royal Po-
‘ sterity and the future Generations in this Kingdom
‘ for ever.’

Mr. *Whitlocke*’s
Account of that
Affair.

Mr. *Whitlocke*, one of the Commissioners above-
mentioned, gives us the following Particulars rela-
ting to this remarkable Embassy: ‘ They had
‘ their

their fi
Christ-C
Prince,
of them
in the S
Degree
being a
Mr. *W*
and Mr
Though
nor the
Plot the
ment,
loner,
Agitatio
Mr. *W*
‘ Aft
Prince
‘ Th
tions to
and bei
Your M
King an
all thro

To
materia
Fairfax
the pre
the Lor
House,
this wh
the Pro
short A

My
‘ I W
‘ I ed
‘ try ne
‘ thoug

a This
Brother,

their first Access to the King in the Garden of *An. 18. Car. 2.*
Christ-Church, where he was walking with the
 Prince, and divers other Lords attending him: All
 of them kissed his Hand, not as they were ranked
 in the Safe Conduct, but according to their several
 Degrees. Mr. *Pierpoint* before the Knights, he
 being an Earl's Son^a; and Mr. *Winwood* before
 Mr. *Whitlocke*, he being the eldest Knight's Son;
 and Mr. *Waller* the last: The King said to him,
Though you are the last, yet you are not the worst,
nor the least in my Favour: The Discovery of a
 Plot then in Hand in *London*, to betray the Parlia-
 ment, wherein Mr. *Waller* was engaged with *Cha-*
loner, *Tomkins*, and others, which was then in
 Agitation, did manifest the King's Courtship to
 Mr. *Waller* to be for that Service.

1642.

February.

'After they had all kissed the King's Hand, the
 Prince gave them his Hand to kiss.

'The Earl of *Northumberland* read the Proposi-
 tions to the King, with a sober and stout Carriage;
 and being interrupted by the King, he said smartly,
Your Majesty will give me Leave to proceed? The
 King answered, *Ay, ay;* and so the Earl read them
 all through.'

To go on with this Affair, since nothing else
 material intervened, except a Letter from the Lord
Fairfax, out of the *North*, which we postpone for
 the present: — The *Journals* inform us, That
 the Lords Commissioners, at their Return to the
 House, *February 6*, made the following Report of
 this whole Proceeding; that when they presented
 the Propositions to the King, he made them this
 short Answer:

My Lords,

'I Was always for Peace, and am more concern-
 'ed in it than any, being the Father of the Coun-
 'try next under God. I cannot chuse but speak,
 'though I thought to have said nothing. I con-
 'fess

The King's An-
 swer to the Com-
 missioners.

^a This Gentleman's Father, the Earl of *Kingston*, and his elder
 Brother, the Lord *Newark*, were at this Time in the King's Army.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

February.

‘ fefs I am surprized, though I have seen somewhat
‘ of this, yet I believed them not to be such as these
‘ are. They that principally contrived and penned
‘ them, had no Thoughts of Peace in their Hearts,
‘ but to make Things worse and worse; yet I shall
‘ do my Part, and take as much Honey out of the
‘ Gall as I can. I will think of them, and take
‘ Time to give you my Answer.’

‘ That, two Days after, the King sent for them
again, and told them, That he had considered of the
Propositions, presented unto him from both Houses
of Parliament, and had returned this Answer, which
he commanded the Earl of *Holland* to read :

And to Parlia-
ment.

‘ **I**F his Majesty had not given up all the Faculties
‘ of his Soul to an earnest Endeavour of a Peace
‘ and Reconciliation with his People, or if he would
‘ suffer himself, by any Provocation, to be drawn
‘ to a Sharpness of Language, at a Time when there
‘ seems somewhat like an Overture of Accommo-
‘ dation, he could not but resent the heavy Charges
‘ upon him in the Preamble of these Propositions;
‘ and would not suffer himself to be reproached with
‘ protecting of Delinquents, by Force, from Justice;
‘ (his Majesty’s Desire having always been, that all
‘ Men should be tried by the known Law, and he
‘ having been refused it) with raising an Army against
‘ his Parliament; and to be told that Arms have
‘ been taken up against him, for the Defence of Re-
‘ ligion, Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Parliament,
‘ and for the Sitting of the Parliament in Safety;
‘ with many other Particulars in that Preamble,
‘ so often and so fully answered by his Majesty,
‘ without remembering the World of the Time
‘ and Circumstances of raising those Arms against
‘ him, when his Majesty was so far from being in
‘ a Condition to invade other Men’s Rights, that
‘ he was not able to maintain and defend his own
‘ from Violence; and without telling his good
‘ Subjects that their Religion, (the true Protestant
‘ Religion, in which his Majesty was born, hath
‘ faith-

‘ faithfully lived, and to which he will die a willing
 ‘ Sacrifice) their Laws, Liberties, Privileges, and
 ‘ Safety of Parliament, were so amply settled and
 ‘ established, or offered to be so, by his Majesty, be-
 ‘ fore any Army was raised against him, and long
 ‘ before any raised by him for his Defence; that if
 ‘ nothing had been desired but that Peace and Pro-
 ‘ tection which his Subjects and their Ancestors had,
 ‘ in the best Times, enjoyed under his Majesty, or his
 ‘ Royal Predecessors, this Misunderstanding and Di-
 ‘ stance between his Majesty and his People, and this
 ‘ general Misery and Distraction upon the Face of
 ‘ the whole Kingdom, had not been now the Dis-
 ‘ course of Christendom: But his Majesty will for-
 ‘ bear any Expressions of Bitterness, or of a Sense of
 ‘ his own Sufferings; that, if it be possible, the Me-
 ‘ mory thereof may be lost to the World; and there-
 ‘ fore, though many of the Propositions, presented to
 ‘ his Majesty by both Houses, appear to him very
 ‘ derogatory from, and destructive to, his just Power
 ‘ and Prerogative, and no way beneficial to his Sub-
 ‘ jects (few of them being already due to them by
 ‘ the Laws established, and how Unparliamentary it
 ‘ is by Arms to require new Laws, all the World
 ‘ may judge); yet, because these may be waved or
 ‘ mollified, and many Things that are now dark and
 ‘ doubtful in them cleared and explained upon De-
 ‘ bate, his Majesty is pleased (such is his Sense of
 ‘ the Miseries this Kingdom suffers by this unnatu-
 ‘ ral War, and his earnest Desire to remove them
 ‘ by an happy Peace) that a speedy Time and Place
 ‘ be agreed upon for the Meeting of such Persons as
 ‘ his Majesty and both Houses shall appoint, to dis-
 ‘ cuss these Propositions, and such others here fol-
 ‘ lowing, as his Majesty doth propose to them:

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

I. ‘ That his Majesty’s own Revenue, Magazine,
 ‘ Towns, Forts, and Ships, which have been ta-
 ‘ ken or kept from him by Force, be forthwith re-
 ‘ stored unto him.

II. ‘ That whatsoever hath been done or publish-
 ‘ ed contrary to the known Laws of the Land, or
 ‘ derogatory to his Majesty’s legal and known Power
 ‘ and

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

February.

and Rights, be renounced and recalled; that no Seed may remain for the like to spring out of for the future.

III. That whatsoever illegal Power hath been claimed and exercised by or over his Subjects, as imprisoning their Persons without Law, stopping their *Habeas Corpus*, and imposing upon their Estates without Act of Parliament, &c; either by both or either House, or any Committee of both or either, or by any Persons appointed by any of them, be disclaimed; and all such Persons so committed, forthwith discharged.

IV. That as his Majesty will readily consent, having done so heretofore, to the Execution of all Laws already made, and to any good Acts to be made, for the suppressing of Popery, and for the firm settling of the Protestant Religion now established by Law; so he desires that a good Bill may be framed for the better preserving the Book of Common Prayer from the Scorn and Violence of Brownists, Anabaptists, and other Sectaries, with such Clauses for the Ease of tender Consciences as his Majesty hath formerly offered.

V. That all such Persons as, upon the Treaty, shall be excepted out of the General Pardon, shall be tried *per Pares*, according to the usual Course and known Laws of the Land; and that it be left to that, either to acquit or condemn them.

VI. And to the Intent this Treaty may not suffer Interruption by any intervening Accidents, that a Cessation of Arms, and free Trade, for all his Majesty's Subjects may be first agreed upon.

This Offer and Desire of his Majesty he hopes will be chearfully entertained, that a speedy and blessed Peace may be accomplished. If it shall be rejected, or, by insisting upon unreasonable Circumstances, be made impossible, (which he hopes God in his Mercy to this Nation will not suffer) the Guilt of the Blood which will be shed, and the Desolation which must follow, will lie upon the Heads of the Refusers. However his Majesty is resolved, thro' what Accidents soever he shall

be

' be co
' what
' to ble
' vours
' Relig
' know
' Privile
' Protec
' he wil
' see th
' and H
' those
' jesty v
' for th

Upon
solved t
as a Ma
to desir
Though
But
actions
a Lette
which v
at a Co
of this
Speake

S I

IT is
you
this Co
Houses
us, wh
have m
been lon
to supp
by taki
upon th
the Pu
The
the Arr

' be compelled to recover his Rights, and with An. 18. Car. I.
' what prosperous Success soever it shall please God 1642.
' to bless him, that by his earnest constant Endeavours to propagate and promote the true Protestant
' Religion, and by his governing according to the
' known Law of the Land, and upholding the just
' Privileges of Parliament, according to his frequent
' Protestations made before Almighty God, which
' he will always inviolably observe, the World shall
' see that he hath undergone all these Difficulties
' and Hazards for the Defence and Maintenance of
' those; the zealous Preservation of which his Majesty well knows is the only Foundation and Means
' for the true Happiness of him and his People.'

February.

Upon the Reading of this Answer, the Lords resolved to communicate it to the House of Commons, as a Matter of great and serious Consideration, and to desire them to take it into their utmost Care and Thought.

But before we proceed any farther in the Transactions of *February*, it is necessary to take Notice of a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, in the North; which was delivered to the Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference, and read in that House on the first of this Month. The Letter was addressed to the Speaker:

S I R,

IT is most necessary that I continue my Relation to you of the State and Condition of the Affairs in this Country, that they may be made known to both Houses; and Provision made for Succours to be sent us, which have hitherto come very slowly, though they have made large Expressions of their Care. We have been long destitute of Money to pay the Army; and, to supply that Want, I have used all possible Industry, by taking up Money upon Exchange, and by calling upon the Country to supply me for the present upon the Public Faith.

Lord Fairfax's
Letter concern-
his taking of
Leeds.

The Want of Money doth so perplex the Part of the Army here, as I imagine the House will not expect

158 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
February.

pect any considerable Matter to be done by us; though, God be thanked, the Forces I send from hence, and are raised by the Country in other Places, are daily acting something to advance the Public Service. As in the North-Riding, where Sir Hugh Cholmley hath carried himself very bravely, giving several Defeats to the Enemy near Malton; and on Monday the sixteenth of this Month, joining his Forces to Sir Matthew Boynton, they fell upon Col. Slingsby at Gifbrough, where they defeated him and 600 Horse and Foot with him, that had done much Spoil in the North-Riding; they wounded and took Col. Slingsby himself, with 140 other Prisoners; killed a great many, and recovered 200 Arms with the Place. Amongst the Prisoners taken by Sir Hugh Cholmley at Malton, and here at Gifbrough, it is found that a great Number are Papists; and indeed the Strength of the Enemies will be found to consist much of Papists, and popishly affected, the Earl of Newcastle granting his Commissions, for raising Men, to Papists for the most Part. I have heard, of late, of Commissions granted to twelve Recusants of these Parts, whose Names I send inclosed; and it is not to be doubted he walks the same Ways in other Places, as well as here; which Courses have so advanced Popery, as I hear, that in York, where many Recusants are settled, Mass is ordinarily said in every Street; and such Affronts offered to the Protestants and the Ministry, as few dare resort to Church. In other Parts of the Country, I am informed that, for many Miles together, the religious Ministry are all either fled, or imprisoned; which Persecutions, if they be not timely repressed, will extirpate, or much depress, the Protestant Religion in these Parts.

About Bradford and Halifax, God hath blessed my Son and those small Forces with good Success against the Enemy, in several light Skirmishes: On Monday was Se'nnight he seized on the Lord Saville's House at Howley, and put about 190 Musqueteers into it; on Tuesday I sent Sir William Fairfax and his Officers, with some Arms, to raise his Regiment in these Parts; and, for his Convoy, I sent what Horse and
Dra-

Dragoon
to stay
Leeds

Yeste
he relat
Forces
Sir W
summon
fused,
themsel
fortified
and m
Entry i
Sides a
500 P
with th
and all
On our
and Ca
that, in
mas Ne
rest of
lantly.
ville, a
soon aft
Pontefr
by the
crossing
rowly e

Afte
intende
George
therein
taken I
tefract,
to inve
their E
that Ca
Yesterd
what I

Yeste
most P

Dragooners I could spare from hence, directing them An. 18. Car. I.
to stay with my Son to assist him in his Design against 1642.
Leeds.

February.

Yesternight I received Letters from him, wherein he relates to me, That on Monday last he drew his Forces out of Bradford, and marched to Leeds, where Sir William Saville commanded in Chief; my Son first summoned them by a Trumpet to yield, which being refused, the Assault began, wherein his Men carried themselves with great Resolution; for the Town was fortified on all Sides, furnished with two Brass Sakers, and manned with 1500 Soldiers, yet they forced an Entry in two Hours Fight. There were not lost on both Sides above forty Men, but he took four Colours, and 500 Prisoners, of which six are Commanders; and, with the Prisoners, they took many Arms, the Sakers, and all the Munition they had, which was not much. On our Part we lost thirteen Men, and Capt. Briggs, and Capt. Lee, both sore wounded; and I perceive that, in this Exploit, Sir William Fairfax, Sir Thomas Norcliffe, and Serjeant-Major Forbes, with the rest of the Commanders, carried themselves very gallantly. The People do observe that Sir William Saville, and the Chief Commanders on the other Side, soon after the Fight began, fled by secret Ways towards Pontefract, and their Men after them by Degrees; but, by the Way, Serjeant-Major Beaumont was drowned crossing the River, and Sir William Saville very narrowly escaped the like Fate.

After Leeds was thus won, my Son writes that he intended to have marched to Wakefield, where Sir George Wentworth commanded, but was prevented therein by the Enemies Fears; who, hearing he had taken Leeds, fled all away from Wakefield to Pontefract, and left the Town; so he hath sent some Forces to invest and keep that Place. Thus hath God blessed their Endeavours on that Side; and now I am told that Capt. Hotham and Sir John Saville are gone up Yesterday with some Forces into those Parts, but upon what Design I know not.

Yesterday Morning I had some Intelligence that the most Part of the Forces were marched, the Day before,

160 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 13. Car. I.
1642.

February.

fore, out of Doncaster; so I have sent my Serjeant-Major-General with six Companies of Foot to invest that Place, and to leave some Forces to keep it untill more Strength come to us out of the Southern Counties; which, if it could be hastened hither, might very much advance the Cause, and crush the Popish Forces before they be supplied by the Queen's Coming, or their Party in Scotland, of which there is some Expectation.

I desire you will make known to the House the great Extremities that are put upon me; and that a certain Course may be settled for supplying us with Money for the Entertainment of the Army, in such Season as our Men may be encouraged in the Service, and not fall into a Way of plundering for Want of Pay. My Son upon the taking of Leeds, though he entered it by Force, yet he restrained his Army from Pillaging; so I have ordered that the Malignants, in lieu of the Spoil challenged to be due unto the Soldiers, shall give them a Month's Entertainment, which I hope will content both Parties.

Yesternight Intelligence was brought to me, that the Earl of Newcastle hath drawn down all his Forces from the South Parts of Yorkshire, those only excepted that kept the Castle at Pontefract; for Yesterday he marched from Sherburne to York, with thirty-six Colours, two Pieces of Cannon, and forty-five other Carriages; the certain Cause I do not yet know, but suppose it is to meet the Arms and Munition coming from Newcastle; or to prepare for the Queen's Entertainment at York, which is much spoken of. I shall carry a vigilant Eye upon his Designs, and endeavour to prevent them, so far as can be expected, from the Forces under the Command of,

Sir,

Selby, Jan. 26,
1642.

Your most affectionate

Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. I have sent unto Mr. White, to be shewed unto you, three Papers found with Col. Slingsby, when he was taken at Gisbrough by Sir Hugh Cholm-

Cholm
necessar
have

The
the Ea
raise F
son of
Vavas
Sir Phi
Capt. S

After
Ordina

'W
'be po
'Parlia
'Relig
'becau
'Retur
'Heart
'have
'have
'cesses
'God
'An
'shewe
'Proof
'with
'profes
'dom,
'tion;
'tion is
'tion, a
'to pub
'be see
'Practi
'secon
'that
'drive
VOL

Cholmley; which may, peradventure, be thought necessary to be made known to the House, if Sir Hugh have not already presented the Transcript to you.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

February.

The Names of the Recufants in these Parts, to whom the Earl of Newcastle hath granted Commissions to raise Forces, are Mr. Robert Trapps, Mr. Stephenson of Thornton, Sir John Middleton, Sir Walter Vavasour, Mr. Ann, Mr. Tindale, Mr. Bretton, Sir Philip Hungate, Mr. Waterton, Mr. Thwinge, Capt. Sare, and Capt. Granger.

After the Reading of this Letter, the following Ordinance is entered in the *Lords Journals* :

‘ **W** Hereas many and fervent Prayers have been sent up to God, for his Blessing to be poured down upon the Endeavours of the Parliament in Maintenance of his own Cause and Religion, now openly assaulted by Papiſts; and because it is most just and necessary to observe the Return of these Prayers, that our Mouths and Hearts may be as much enlarged in Praises as they have been in Prayers, the Lords and Commons have thought fit to publish some late good Successes, as so many Answers from Heaven, which God hath given to the Prayers of his Servants.

‘ And whereas sundry late Declarations have shewed to the World divers Informations and Proofs concerning the raising of a Popish Army, with an Intention to subvert God’s true Religion professed, and by Law established, in this Kingdom, and to introduce Popish Idolatry and Superstition; that it may appear what was, before, an Intention is now Matter of Fact, and really put in Execution, a most certain and true Relation is here offered to public Notice and Observation; wherein it may be seen that this Popish Army hath set up the open Practice of their abominable Idolatry in York, the second City in the Kingdom; and are grown to that Height of Insolency, that they terrify and drive away the Protestant Ministers and People from

An Ordinance of
Parliament in
Consequence
thereof.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

February.

‘ frequenting their own Churches, and from the
 ‘ Practice of their own Religion; wherein they
 ‘ have given a Pattern and Pledge what they intend
 ‘ to do, and what must be expected from them,
 ‘ through the whole Kingdom. The Considera-
 ‘ tion hereof (whereby the most precious Things in
 ‘ the World, God’s Glory and true Worship, and
 ‘ the Salvation of the Souls of Men, are brought in-
 ‘ to Danger) ought to excite and stir up, and we
 ‘ are confident it will, the strongest Endeavours and
 ‘ most united Conjunctions, of all religious and
 ‘ well-affected Protestants and Patriots, to resist and
 ‘ suppress those common Enemies of God, in Pity
 ‘ to their Country and the Commonwealth; for
 ‘ now it plainly appears that, however they pretend
 ‘ to defend the Religion and the Laws, yet their main
 ‘ Intention is to establish Popery in this Kingdom,
 ‘ and to extirpate the Protestant Religion; which
 ‘ cannot be done without Subversion of the Laws,
 ‘ as the Papists have, almost, effected in *Ireland*.’

A Committee of
Sequestration ap-
pointed,

February 3. The Commons, after passing some
 Votes for sequestring the Estates, Real and Personal,
 of some particular Persons, appointed a Committee
 to consider of the sequestring and seizing the Estates,
 Real and Personal, of all such Persons as have been,
 are, or shall be, in actual War or Arms against the
 Parliament: And to have Power to appoint Seque-
 strators, to make Allowances to such as should be
 employed in this Service; and to use all other Means
 thought effectual to it. This was the first Begin-
 ning of an Ordinance of Parliament, which proved
 so extreme bitter to the Royalists in the Conse-
 quence.

An Ordinance for
assessing Monies
upon Malignants,

Feb. 4. Another severe Ordinance for the raising
 two Troops of Horse and one Regiment of Dragoons
 in the County of *Northampton*; and for assessing of
 Monies upon the Malignants, disaffected Persons,
 Papists, Bishops, Deans, Deans and Chapters, &c.
 for the Maintenance of the said Forces, was read
 and put to the Question, in the House of Commons,
 but

but it passed in the Negative, by forty-one Voices An. 18. Car. I. 1642. against twenty.

Feb. 7. The Lords took into Consideration the King's last Answer to their Propositions; and, first, it was agreed to proceed in the Treaty. Next it was proposed, That the Armies on both Sides should be totally disbanded, and to have a Cessation of Arms, that there might be a Treaty; when, after a long Debate, it was resolved in the Affirmative.

February.

Feb. 8. A Paper was read in the House of Lords, called, *A general Confession of National Sins*; which was agreed to by both Houses, and ordered to be used by their Ministers at the next public Fast. ^a

Several Days were employed in seeking out Ways and Means for raising of Money; and, amongst others, a Weekly Assessment was agreed on for the Maintenance of the Army; and an Ordinance was made for that Purpose. These new Kind of Taxes lay prodigious hard on the Citizens of London, and all those Counties which were within the Power of the Parliament. The King seems to have supported his Army at this Time, chiefly, by Gifts and Loans.

Feb. 13. The Commons sent up their Resolutions on the intended Treaty at Oxford. They told the Lords, in a Conference, That they agreed with them in some Things, and differed in others; and offered the following Votes of their House to their Lordships Consideration.

Resolved, 'That this House doth concur with the Lords in their Votes, That there shall be a speedy Disbanding of both Armies; and that there should be a fixed Time appointed for it. The Northern and Western Armies to be first disbanded, which shall be on the first Day of March next; and the Day for disbanding all the other Armies, on the tenth of the same Month.'

Resolved, 'That a Message be sent to his Majesty to desire his Consent for disbanding the Armies,

L 2

ac-

^a This Confession is in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 141.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

February.

according to the Votes of this House; and that Persons shall be appointed to treat with his Majesty concerning the Manner of Disbanding.

The Question being put, Whether there shall be a present Cessation of Arms, in order to the Treaty on the Propositions, before the Disbanding of the Armies? it passed in the Negative.

Resolved, 'That when his Majesty shall have assented to a Disbanding, and the Time and Manner of it; then the Time for an immediate Cessation shall be agreed on.'

They also presented the following Reasons why there should be no Treaty, upon the Propositions, before Disbanding:

THAT a Treaty, before the Disbanding, will be ineffectual to produce such a Peace as may secure Religion against the Designs of the Papists to destroy it, and the Prelatical Party to corrupt it; or to secure the Liberties of the Kingdom, and the Privileges of Parliament, against Projectors and Delinquents. The Grounds and Evidence whereof are these:

1. 'Because Papists, Malignants, and other Delinquents, are now in greatest Power about the King; and this Treaty is like to be managed by their Counsels, whose Hopes and Interests are built upon the Breach and Distemper betwixt the King and his People; whereof they having been the greatest Cause, will still endeavour to hinder such a Peace, as may interrupt their own Designs: Whereas, if the Treaty be after the Disbanding, the Authority of Parliament will be more powerful to remove such Impediments.

2. 'If the Treaty be before the Disbanding, it will not be safe for his Majesty to yield to any such Propositions as shall be for the suppressing of Papists and Malignants, his Person being in their Power; nor yet so safe for the Kingdom, whilst Arms are in their Hands, and so great a Party, both in *Ireland* and beyond the Seas, to encourage and assist them

them
any fu

3.
Treat
be can
to tal
shedde
Foot,
Sides
Bitter
the S
interru

4.
jesty,
fitions
for the
tation
both t
lidity
be free
ings, i
new I

5.
will en
the D
will b
for cor
as for
have m
he may
Ends f
all Del
Miserie
cessary
Charge
on the

To
the foll
' T
Armies
his M

them in resisting the Observance and Execution of An. 18. Car. I.
any such Treaty.

1642.

February.

3. ' If the Armies be once disbanded, though the Treaties should not succeed, yet the War cannot be carried on, but there will be Time of Mediation to take up those Differences without any further shedding of Blood: Whereas, if the Armies be on Foot, upon every Difference in the Treaty both Sides may be provoked, with more Animosity and Bitterness, to refer Matters to the bloody Trial of the Sword; and many intervening Accidents may interrupt the Treaty.

4. ' That it will be most honourable for his Majesty, and more safe for his People, that the Propositions be yielded after the Disbanding than before; for thereby his Majesty will be freed from the Imputation of granting any thing by Force; which might both trench upon his Honour, and weaken the Validity of the Things granted; and both Houses will be free from that Tax of unparliamentary Proceedings, implied in his Majesty's Answer, Of requiring new Laws by Arms.

5. ' That if the Treaty be before Disbanding, it will endanger, or delay, his Majesty's Consent to the Disbanding at the Time limited; for there will be the same Reason, on his Majesty's Part, for concluding the Treaty before the Disbanding, as for the beginning it; that so, if he be like to have more Advantage by Arms than by the Treaty, he may still have it in his Power to pursue the same Ends for which his Force was at first raised; and all Delays in that Kind will make the Burdens and Miseries insupportable to the Kingdom, by the necessary Maintenance of all the Armies, and other Charges and Mischiefs which will thereby fall upon the Subject.'

To these Reasons of the Commons was annexed the following Resolution:

' That, forthwith after the Disbanding of both Armies, this House will send a Committee to attend his Majesty, by an humble Treaty to give him

166 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I. due Satisfaction concerning the Propositions sent to them from his Majesty, and those presented from them to his Majesty.

1642.

February.

These Votes, Reasons, and Resolutions, laid before the Lords till the sixteenth of this Month, when they were quickened by another Message from the Commons. The Votes and Reasons were again read; and, after Debate, the Lords resolved, 'Not to recede from their former Votes, but to adhere to them, notwithstanding the Reasons of the House of Commons: To have a Conference with them, and acquaint them, That this House thinks it fit that the Time, from the Beginning of the Treaty, ought not to exceed twenty Days.

'That the King's Propositions, concerning his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, and the Propositions of both Houses for disbanding of all Armies, may be first treated of.

'That the remote Armies may be disbanded by the last Day of *March*, or sooner if it can be: That the King's Army under the Command of the Earl of *Forth*, and that under the Earl of *Essex* raised by Parliament, may be disbanded by the 10th of *April*, or sooner.

'That there may be a present Cessation of all Acts of Hostility on both Sides; and that all other Things may continue in the same State, without any further Intercourse, or free Passage, than is at present.

Lastly, 'Because that Money is necessary to maintain and support the Army, the Lords think fit to propose to the Commons to join with them in sending to the Lord Mayor of *London*, to call a Common Council the next Day, to move them to advance Money for the Supply of the Army.'

Feb. 17. The Debates on the disbanding, or not disbanding, the Armies before the Treaty, were this Day continued in the House of Commons; and, on two Divisions, one of them 76 against 73, and the other 86 against 83, it was carried to enter upon the Treaty before Disbanding. We meet with the following Speech of Sir *Benjamin Rudyard* of this
very

very Day^a; which probably was one great Means An. 18 Car. I.
of the Question's being carried in the Affirmative. 1642.

Mr. Speaker,

February.

I Do verily think that the Vote we have already Sir Benjamin
passed, for the disbanding the Armies the first Rudyard's
and tenth of *March*, will find us no farther on our Speech on that
Way than where we now are, besides the ill Acci- Occasion.
dents that may happen, and so much precious Time
spent, as till then.

' Sir, the main Business is, whether we shall have
a present Treaty or no. And this concerns us in
all that we have, and are. Since we refused a
Treaty at *Nottingham*, I do not find that we have
gotten much Ground, although our Army then was
fresh, full, and full paid; the People erect, bountiful,
and forward to the War. Now the Disposition of
the Kingdom, for the greatest Part, stands bent to-
wards a Peace: So that wheresoever the Refusal,
or Delay of the Way to it shall be fixed, the Dis-
advantage will fall on that Side. How clear soever
the Intentions of the House are, yet abroad it will
be taken but as a Shew without Reality, and so it
will be returned upon us.

' For the Propositions; I have not known, nor
heard, that all the Propositions in any Treaty of
Importance were ever swallowed whole. If some
be harsh and rough, they may be wrought and sup-
plied by wise Treaters, made fit for an acceptable
Agreement. If others be unpassable, they may be
totally rejected. Those that are our unquestionable
Rights, may be so claimed, and held.

' Mr. Speaker, we have already tasted the bitter
bloody Fruits of War, we are grown exceedingly
behind-hand with ourselves since we began it: If we
persist, there will such a Confluence of Mischiefs
break in upon us, as, I am afraid, will ruin the
King, the Kingdom, the Nation; unless God be
merciful to us, and do step in with a great Miracle,
for a little one will not serve our Turn.

' I

^a From the original Edition printed for Michael Young.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

February,

‘ I have long and thoughtfully expected that the Cup of Trembling, which hath gone round about us to other Nations, would at length come in amongst us ; it is now come at last, and we may drink the Dregs of it, the worst ; which God avert.

‘ There is yet some Comfort left, that our Miseries are not likely to last long : For we cannot fight here as they do in *Germany*, in that great, large, vast Continent ; where, although there be War in some Parts of it, yet there are many other remote quiet Places for Trade and Tillage to support it. We must fight as in a Cock-pit, we are surrounded with the Sea. We have no stronger Holds than our own Skulls, and our own Ribs, to keep out Enemies ; so that the whole Kingdom will suddenly be but one Flame.

‘ It hath been said in this House, That we are bound in Conscience to punish the Shedding of innocent Blood : But, Sir, who shall be answerable for all the innocent Blood which shall be spilt hereafter, if we do not endeavour a Peace, by a speedy Treaty ? Certainly God is as much to be trusted in a Treaty as in a War : It is he that gives Wisdom to treat, as well as Courage to fight, and Success to both, as it pleaseth him. Blood is a crying Sin, it pollutes a Land : Why should we defile this Land any longer ?

‘ Wherefore, Mr. Speaker, let us stint Blood as soon as we can. Let us agree with our Adversaries in the Way, by a present, short, wary Treaty. God direct us,’

Feb. 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons informed the Lords, That they agreed with them in all the Articles relating to the Treaty ; but these will fall apter in another Place.

Propositions from
the Citizens of
London, as to
raising Money,
disbanding the
Army, &c.

Feb. 20. New Propositions having been made to the Citizens for a considerable Advance of Money, some of the Aldermen and Common Council, this Day, attended the House of Lords ; when, being called in, they declared, ‘ That they were sent from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council

cil of
ships
the Ac
Council
to raise
Comm
which
to defi
mons,
the rai
Lord

1. ‘
vance
ample
at Gu
of it m

2. ‘
weekly
tion of

3. ‘
Defen
may b

4. ‘
and H
the we

5. ‘
divers
the Ci
no suc
counte
the Co
nified
Burge

6. ‘
if the
be col
the K
upon t
affecte
them ;
or for
Safety

cil of the City of *London*, to give their Lordships an Account of the Desire of both Houses for the Advancement of 60,000 *l.* which the Common Council have taken into Consideration, and voted to raise it speedily, if possible it may be; and the Common Council have many Things in Agitation, which are not yet digested; but think it fit humbly to desire of their Lordships, and the House of Commons, some Things that will give Encouragement in the raising of this Money, which they offer to their Lordships Consideration.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
February.

1. ' That both Houses would vouchsafe to advance the raising of 60,000 *l.* by their own Example, and pay it into the Hands of the Treasurers at *Guildhall*, in *London*, to the End that the Sight of it may encourage others.

2. ' That they may be eased in the Rates of the weekly Assessment, because it exceeds the Proportion of the County, if it be not too late.

3. ' That the 3000 *l.* per Month, granted for Defence of the City, out of the weekly Assessment, may be made 4000 *l.*

4. ' It is humbly desired that the Citizens Lands and Houses in the Country may not be rated for the weekly Assessment, so that they pay in *London*.

5. ' It is desired, in regard they are informed that divers Misinformations have been made concerning the City of *London* by private Persons, that hereafter no such Credit may be given thereunto, as to be accounted the Sense of the City, unless it proceeds from the Court of Aldermen or Common Council, signified by special Messengers of their own, or by their Burgesses, directed by one of the said Courts.

6. ' That it will much promote the said Service, if the Money assessed by virtue of divers Ordinances be collected forthwith in *London*, and other Parts of the Kingdom, that the Charge may not lye wholly upon the willing Party; for that otherwise the Well-affected will be either destroyed with them or for them; with them, if they should refuse as others do; or for them, by contributing, alone, to the Public Safety more than their Estates will bear.

7. ' That

An. 28. Car. I.
1642.

February.

7. 'That Search be made, without the Liberties, in the Parts adjacent, for suspected Persons; and that, upon the Disbanding, those that are called the King's Army may be enjoined to go to their several Habitations, and not to come to *London*, to the Disturbance of the Peace, Safety, and Welfare of the said City, and of the good Government thereof; and that, during the Time of the Treaty and Cessation, none of the said Army may be permitted to come to the City.

8. 'That to prevent Misapprehensions and Jealousies concerning the present Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, about the Treaty and Cessation, and Disbanding, it is humbly prayed it may be declared, That the Resolution of both Houses is the same as at the first, That nothing shall be done but that which tends to the securing the true Protestant Religion, the just Liberties of the Subjects, and Privileges of Parliament.

9. 'It is desired that the Ordinance for the weekly Assessment may pass forthwith, for securing the Reimbursement of the 60,000 *l.* which, otherwise, will not be raised.

'The Resolutions of both Houses are humbly desired herein, as an Encouragement to carry on the Business.'

The Answer returned to these Messages was,

'That their Lordships gave the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, Thanks for their Readiness and Care in the raising of 60,000 *l.* and to let them know that their Lordships hope nothing shall be done in this Treaty, but what shall be for the Security of the true Protestant Religion, the Privilege of Parliament, the just Privileges of the Subject, and the Security of the City of *London*.

'For the Ordinance for the weekly Assessment, this House hath passed it already, and sent it to the House of Commons; and concerning the making of 3000 *l.* Allowance a-week to be 4000 *l.* their Lordships will give the best Furtherance they can in it.

As

As for
them iFeb
the V
&c. to
Time
to whi
addres

My

I M
Lo
ticular
know
clearly
self a
my L
raise
it, th
to de
Lord
the l
emph
how
My
a Bu
at no
to th

Wi

A
Wil
his
poin
mar

Of ENGLAND. 171

As for other Particulars their Lordships will take An. 18. Car. 1.
them into Consideration.' 1642.

February.

Feb. 21. The House of Lords had sent a Copy of the Votes of both Houses concerning the Cessation, &c. to the Earl of *Essex*, their General; at the same Time desiring his Opinion and Advice about them; to which the General returned the following Answer, addressed to their Speaker:

My Lord,

I Must acknowledge the Obligation I have to the Lords, that they desire my Advice about the Particulars concerning a Cessation. My Lord, if I had known of it before it had been voted, I should have clearly delivered my Opinion, and then submitted myself and it to your Lordships greater Wisdoms; but, my Lord, now I know my Duty. The Arms you have raised are so dispersed, and so many Difficulties in it, that it is too great a Burden for me to undertake to deliver my Opinion; not doubting but that your Lordships, in your grave Wisdoms, have weighed all the Inconveniences that may happen to your Servants employed by you, during this Cessation, and the Ways how to prevent them before you voted the Cessation. My Lord, if I knew how to give a clear Answer to a Business I am so great a Stranger to, having been at none of the Debates, I should shew my Obedience to their Commands. I am,

Letter from the
Earl of *Essex*
concerning a Cessation.

My Lord,

Windſor, Feb. 20,
1642.

Your Lordship's

humble Servant,

ESSEX.

After this the House being informed that one Mr. *William Murray* was without, with a Letter from his Majesty to the Speaker, his Lordship was appointed to receive it; which contained only a Command to read the following Message in the House,

g-1

An. 18. Car. I. and afterwards to communicate it to the Commons.
1642.

February.

CHARLES R.

And the King's
Message on the
same Subject.

‘**W**Hereas his Majesty hath, together with
‘ a Treaty, proposed a Cessation of Arms
‘ to both his Houses of Parliament, now sixteen
‘ Days since, to which, as yet, he hath received
‘ no Answer: To the End that his Majesty may so
‘ clearly understand the Houses, that no such Impu-
‘ tations, as have been formerly, may after be laid
‘ upon him, upon Occasion of any thing that may
‘ intervene; his Majesty desires, if a Cessation shall
‘ be approved of by them, that the Day upon which
‘ the Cessation is thought fit to begin, and such par-
‘ ticular Limits and Conditions of that Cessation as
‘ are necessary to be understood and agreed on before
‘ the Cessation itself can actually begin, be proposed
‘ by them at the same Time, with their Approba-
‘ tion of it; since, as his Majesty supposes by the
‘ present great Preparation of several Forces of the
‘ Earl of *Essex* to march several Ways, that till
‘ such Time as this be done, they do not conceive
‘ themselves obliged to an actual Cessation: So nei-
‘ ther, till then, doth his Majesty conceive himself
‘ obliged to it.’

Hereupon the Lords resolved to have a Conference with the House of Commons, and communicate this Message and the Earl of *Essex*’s Letter to them; and to desire that a Committee of Members of both Houses may be appointed to consider in what Manner, and what Limitations, the Cessation of Arms may proceed in, and how to be carried on.

Feb. 23. The Parliament had sent a Petition to the King, which they called their Desire and Advice, That the next *Lent* Affizes, &c. should be put off, during these turbulent Times; they, this Day, received an Answer to it from the King, which was read in the House; and, for Connection Sake,

we

we give them both together. And, first, the De-An. 18. Car. 1.
fire and Advice: 1642.

February.

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament humbly
shew, That your Justices and other liege People, The Parliament
who are or shall be summoned, or have other Cause to desire the Lent
attend at the next Assizes and General Goal-Delivery Affizes may be
appointed to be shortly kept in the several Counties of put off.
England and Wales, cannot resort thither without
great Peril of their Lives, and Damage to their
Estates, by reason of the present miserable Distrac-
tions, and armed Forces being in all Parts of your
Realm: In regard whereof, the Lords and Commons
do humbly advise and desire your Majesty to command,
That the said Assizes and General Goal-Delivery be
not holden as is appointed; but that the same may be
deferred untill it shall please God to restore Peace un-
to your People.

His MAJESTY'S ANSWER to the foregoing DESIRE
and ADVICE.

HIS Majesty hath weighed the Desire and To which the
Advice of the Lords and Commons, sent King refuses his
in a Letter to the Lord Falkland from the Earl of Consent.
Manchester, concerning the putting off the Gene-
ral Assizes and Goal-Delivery throughout the
Kingdom. To which his Majesty returns this
Answer, That the present bloody Distraction of
the Kingdom (which his Majesty hath used all
possible Means to prevent, and will still to remove)
doth afflict his Majesty, under no Consideration
more, than of the great Interruption and Stop it
makes in the Course and Proceedings of Justice,
and the Execution of the Laws; whereby his
good Subjects are robbed of the Peace and Secu-
rity they were born to: And therefore, as much
as in him lies, he will advance that only Means
of their Happiness; at least they shall see that their
Sufferings, that Way, proceed not from his Ma-
jesty: And since they may now expect, by the
Laws,

174 The Parliamentary History

An. 28, Car. I.

1642.

February.

Laws, Statutes, and Customs of the Kingdom, the Assizes and General Goal-Delivery in every County, his Majesty thinks not fit to command the contrary; but will take severe and precise Order, that none of his good Subjects shall receive the least Prejudice, as they repair thither, by any of his Majesty's Forces; which Rule he shall be glad to see observed by others; and then he hopes, by the due Execution of the Laws, even these public Calamities may have some Abatement, and the Kingdom recover its former Peace and Prosperity.

The latter End of this Month was chiefly taken up in framing Articles to be sent to the King for a Cessation of Arms, before the intended Treaty began. And, after consulting with their Lord-General and a Council of War, a Form was drawn up; which, after many Conferences and Alterations, was, on the 28th of this Month, perfected, read, and agreed to by both Houses, and ran in these Words:

Articles of Cessation previous to the Treaty.

Whereas the Lords and Commons in Parliament, out of a tender Sense of the present Miseries and Distractions of the Kingdom, and for the obtaining and settling of a happy Peace between his Majesty and his People, have humbly presented his Majesty divers Propositions, to which he hath been pleased to make this Return: *That his Desire was, that a speedy Time and Place might be appointed for the discussing of those Propositions, and likewise some others proposed by his Majesty.* It is thereupon agreed in both Houses, that a Committee of both Houses shall be appointed to attend his Majesty, on or before the fourth of March, if his Majesty shall so please, to endeavour to give him all humble and fit Satisfaction concerning the said Propositions, both his Majesty's and their own.

And whereas, for the more speedy Removal of the bloody and miserable Effects of War, his Majesty hath likewise been graciously pleased, by a late Message, to signify his Desire, *That, for avoiding*

O
ing all
interr
of Ar
mitati
Desire
by the
of Ar
upon
joined
in th
Wale
Limit
Side
in an
herea
I.
Victu
dities
warr
as if
II.
out f
Artic
and c
on a
III.
shall
and,
than
spect
other
Forc
ford
near
Forc
Mile
men
twel
IV.
again
now

ing all intervening Accidents of War, which might interrupt this Treaty, there might be a Cessation of Arms under such particular Conditions and Limitations as should be agreed on: Their humble Desires therein concurring with his Majesty, it is, by them, assented and agreed, That a Cessation of Arms, in order to such a Treaty as is resolved upon by both Houses of Parliament, may be in-joined to all the Armies and Forces now on Foot in the Kingdom of England and Dominion of Wales, on either Side, under the Restrictions and Limitations hereafter following; and that neither Side shall be bound and limited by this Cessation in any otherwise, or to any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

An. 13. Car. I
1642.

February.

I. That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Money, Bullion, and all other Commodities, passing without such a Safe-Conduct as may warrant their Passage, may be staid and seized on, as if no such Cessation were agreed on at all.

II. That all Manner of Persons, passing without such a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the Article next going before, shall be apprehended and detained, as if no such Cessation were agreed on at all.

III. That his Majesty's Forces in *Oxfordshire* shall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatly*; and, in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Aylesbury* than *Brill*; and that, in *Berkshire*, the Forces respectively shall not advance nearer the one to the other than now they are; that the Parliament's Forces in *Oxfordshire* shall advance no nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*; those in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Oxford* than *Aylesbury*; that his Majesty's Forces shall take no new Quarters above twelve Miles from *Oxford*, any Way; and that the Parliament's Forces shall take no new Quarters above twelve Miles from *Windsor*, any Way.

IV. That no Siege shall be begun, or continued, against *Gloucester*; and that his Majesty's Forces, now employed in the Siege, shall return to *Cirencester*.

176 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

February.

‘ *cester*, and *Malmſbury*, or to *Oxford*, as ſhall be moſt for their Conveniency: That the Parliament’s Forces which are in *Glouceſterſhire* ſhall remain in the Cities of *Glouceſter*, *Briſtol*, and the Caſtle and Town of *Berkley*; or retire nearer to *Windſor*, as they ſhall ſee Cauſe; and that thoſe of *Wales*, which are drawn to *Glouceſter*, ſhall return into their Quarters where they were before they drew down to *Glouceſterſhire*.

V. ‘ That in Caſe it be pretended, on either Side, that the Ceſſation is violated, no Act of Hoſtility is immediately to follow; but, firſt, the Party complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on the other Side, and to allow three Days, after Notice given for Satisfaction: And in Caſe Satisfaction be not given or accepted, then five Days Notice to be given before Hoſtility begin: And the like to be obſerved, in the remoter Armies, by the Commanders in Chief.

‘ *Laſtly*, That all other Forces in the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, and not before-mentioned, ſhall remain in the ſame Quarters and Places as they are at the Time of the publiſhing of this Ceſſation, and under the ſame Conditions as are mentioned in the Articles before; and that this Ceſſation ſhall not extend to reſtrain the ſetting forth, or employing, of any Ships for the Defence of his Maſteſty’s Dominions.

‘ All which they humbly deſire his Maſteſty will be pleaſed to ratify and confirm, and that this Ceſſation may begin upon the fourth of *March* next, or ſooner if it may be, and continue untill the twenty-fifth of the ſame Month; and, in the mean Time, to be publiſhed to the Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers, and all other his Maſteſty’s loving Subjects on either Side; and that the Treaty intended may commence upon the fourth of *March* next, or ſooner if it may be; and the Continuance thereof not to exceed twenty Days.

The ſame Day a Petition was preſented to the Lords, from the City of *London*, by four Aldermen,

men,
made
Sum
of the
other
be a c
dinan
Citize
ing in
ing in
Th
ſince
Parlia
Comm
Th
rity to
per Ce
Monie
now fe
Kingd
the Lo
med a
Count
the Or
accord
a Wee
Not
ment’s
conclu
obey th
prejudi
ſons fo
the Po
public
niſtered
therefo
Juſtice
forbear
Lent V
thereof
Vor

men, importing, That by the Ordinance lately An. 18. Car. I. made for the weekly Supply of 10,000 *l.* the said Sum is too much for the City to bear, in regard of the Inequality between them and the Rates of other Counties, and they desired that there might be a clearer Explanation than is yet by the said Ordinance made: Also a full Declaration to free the Citizens of *London*, for their Houses and Lands lying in several Counties; they being assessed and paying in the City.

1642.

February.

Petition from the City of *London* for Relief in the Weekly Assessment.

The Aldermen were called in and told, That since their Petition was directed to both Houses of Parliament, the Lords would communicate it to the Commons, and consider of it in due Time.

The Commons sent up an Ordinance as a Security to the City for the late Loan of 60,000 *l.* at 8 *l.* per Cent. the Principal to be repaid out of the first Monies to be raised by the Weekly Assessment, now forthwith to be laid as well on the rest of the Kingdom as on the City of *London*. Agreed to by the Lords; and particular Commissioners were named and appointed to go down into the several Counties, to see this extraordinary Tax levied, and the Ordinance for it duly executed, which amounted, according to an Historian of that Age, to 33,580 *l.* a Week. ^a

Notwithstanding the King's Answer to the Parliament's Petition about putting off the Assizes, they concluded, That the Oath the Judges had taken to obey the King's Mandates, and that they might be prejudiced in obeying the Parliament, were no Reasons for holding the Assizes in these Times; when the Power of the Sword was so prevailing, that the public Justice of the Kingdom could not be administered in an equal and indifferent Way: They therefore ordained, That the several Judges and Justices of Assize of the several Courts, &c. should forbear to execute any Commissions of Assize this Lent Vacation, as they would answer the Contempt thereof at their Peril.

The Parliament forbid the Judges to go their Circuits.

VOL. XII.

M

The

^a Sir George Wharton's Chronology.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March.

Commissioners
appointed for the
Treaty at Oxford.

The last Thing that both Houses agreed upon, as this Day, was the naming and appointing Commissioners to go upon the *Oxford Treaty*. The Lords named the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Lord Viscount *Say and Sele*; and the Commons, Sir *William Armyne*, Sir *John Holland*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and Mr. *Whitlocke*. It was also ordered, That the Speaker of the House of Lords should send the Articles relating to the Cessation, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, the King's Principal Secretary of State; and likewise to desire a Safe-Conduct from his Majesty, for the Commissioners of both Houses to go to *Oxford* and back again.

An Ordinance of Parliament was now made for fortifying the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Borough of *Southwark*, and the stopping up all High-ways and Bye-ways leading to them, &c.

March 2. The neighbouring Counties associating with one another against the King, was much encouraged by the Parliament. The King did all he could to prevent it, by Proclamations, &c. and, this Day, one of them was sent up to the Lords by the Commons, with the latter's Resolutions and Votes upon it; to which they desired the Lords Concurrence: A Copy of which we think proper to insert, as a Specimen of many more, in the *Journals*, of the same Kind.

By the KING.

His MAJESTY'S PROCLAMATION, forbidding all his loving Subjects of the Counties of Kent, Surrey, Suffex, and Hampshire, to raise any Forces without his Majesty's Consent, or to enter into any Association or Protestation for the Assistance of the Rebellion against his Majesty.

The King's Proclamation against the Associations in Favour of the Parliament.

Whereas we have been informed of certain Propositions agreed upon by some seditious Persons of our several Counties of *Kent, Surrey, Suffex, and Hampshire*, for an Association betwixt the said Counties, to raise an Army of 3000 Foot
and

and 300 Horfe, and great Sums of Money for the Maintenance thereof, and an Invitation to our good

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

Subjects of those Counties, to enter into a Protestation to assist them in this odious and unnatural Rebellion: We do hereby declare, for the Satisfaction of all our loving Subjects of those Counties, and that they may not be seduced from their Obedience by the Cunning and Subtilty of those Men, That the Entry into such an Association and Protestation, and raising of Men, or contributing Money unto the same, is an Act of High Treason, and an Endeavour to take away our Life from us: And we do therefore straitly charge and command all our loving Subjects whatsoever, upon their Allegiance, not to enter into any such Association or Protestation; and that such as, by Colour of such Authority, have assembled together, do immediately disband, and repair to their Houses.

March,

And we do, once more, renew our Offer of a free and gracious Pardon to all our Subjects of our said four several Counties, excepting those whom we before excepted in our several Proclamations concerning those our Counties; against all which we shall proceed according to the Rules of the Law, as against Persons guilty of High Treason; and whom we do hereby require all our Officers and Ministers of Justice, and all our loving Subjects whatsoever, to apprehend, and cause to be kept in safe Custody.

And our express Pleasure is, and we do hereby will and command all the several Tenants of the Persons excepted in our Proclamation for those four Counties of *Kent, Surrey, Sussex, and Hampshire*, and all other Persons who are any ways indebted unto them, and all the Tenants to any other Person of any of the said Counties who is now in actual and open Rebellion against us, or who, after the publishing of this our Proclamation, shall contribute to the Maintenance of the Armies now in Rebellion against us, under the Conduct of *Robert Earl of Essex*, or of any other Person or Persons, or that shall join in any such traiterous

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

March.

Association or Protestation, That they forbear to pay any Rents or Debts due to the said several Persons, but detain the same in their Hands towards the Maintenance of the Peace of those Counties, and the Reparation of such Men who have suffered by the Violence of others.

And if any Soldier or Soldiers, now under Command against us in either of our said Counties, shall, within six Days after the publishing of this our Proclamation, apprehend and bring before us, or any Officers of our Army, or any other our Ministers of Justice, so that the Person apprehended be kept in safe Custody, the Bodies of any of the Persons so excepted by us, or of any of the Commanders or Officers now in Rebellion against us, in any of the said four Counties, such Soldiers, besides their Pardons, shall receive such liberal Rewards, by Pensions or otherwise, as their several Services, in respect of the Qualities of the Persons so apprehended, shall deserve.

And if any Commander or Officer, except the Person so excepted, now in Rebellion against us, in any of the said four Counties, shall, within five Days after this our Proclamation published, being convinced in his Conscience of his damnable Offence against God and us, in assisting this odious Rebellion, return to his Allegiance, and repair to our Army, and commit no hostile Act in the mean while against us, we shall not only pardon him, but so far employ him as his Quality and Demeanor shall deserve.

And we do hereby require all our loving Subjects, of what Degree or Quality soever, within our said four several Counties, upon their Allegiance, and as they tender the Cause of God, (the Protestant Religion being invaded and threatened to be rooted up by Anabaptists, Brownists, and Atheists) of us and our Posterity, (our Life being sought after in this Rebellion) and of themselves, (the Law and Liberty of the Subject being in apparent Hazard to be subjected to an arbitrary lawless Power of a few schismatical, factious, and ambitious

Of ENGLAND. 181

‘bitious Persons) to assist us in Person, or with the An. 18. Car. I.
 ‘Loan of Money, Plate, and Horses, in this our pre- 1642.
 ‘sent great Necessity.

‘And having said thus much out of our tender
 ‘Regard of our Subjects of those our Counties, if
 ‘they shall henceforward be guilty of the Premises;
 ‘and shall, either by Loan or Contribution, assist
 ‘the said Army of Rebels, or assemble and muster
 ‘themselves in Arms, without Authority derived
 ‘from us under our Hand; or shall enter into any
 ‘Oath of Association for opposing us and our Army,
 ‘and so compel us to send Part of our Forces thither
 ‘to reduce them to their Obedience, they must an-
 ‘swer to God and their Country for the Miseries
 ‘that must follow.

‘And our Pleasure is, That this our Proclamation
 ‘be read in all the Parish Churches and Chapels in
 ‘the said four several Counties.

*Given at our Court at Oxford, this sixteenth Day
 of February, in the eighteenth Year of our
 Reign.*

This Proclamation being read, the House of Com-
 mons desired their Lordships Concurrence in the
 following Votes:

1. ‘That in this Proclamation, prohibiting the ^{Votes of the}
 Association of divers Counties, and the Contribu- ^{Commons there}
 tions to the Army under the Earl of *Essex*, there are ^{upon.}
 contained divers false and scandalous Charges upon
 the Proceedings of Parliament; and that it is Trea-
 son to the Commonwealth in those that advised his
 Majesty to the setting forth of this Proclamation;
 and likewise in all such as shall publish the same, or
 act any thing upon it; and that the Houses will pro-
 ceed against them according to Law.

2. ‘That whosoever did advise the setting forth
 of this Proclamation, did thereby express a malici-
 ous Intention to hinder the Treaty, and the happy
 Peace and Union to be hoped from thence, between
 the King and the People.

M 3

3. ‘That

182 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March,

3. ' That these several Counties of *Kent, Surrey, Sussex, Hampshire*, or any other Counties, notwithstanding any thing in this Proclamation, may proceed to associate themselves.

4. ' That the Lords be moved that a Committee be nominated of some Members of both Houses, for drawing a Declaration for vindicating the Proceedings of Parliament from the Scandals in this Proclamation, and upon the other Matters contained in these Votes.'

The House of Commons also desired the Time might be taken Notice of, in the Declaration, when this Proclamation was made ; which was presently after the King had sent a Message to both Houses, desiring a Treaty and Cessation of Arms, that so all Differences might be settled betwixt his Majesty and the Parliament.

To all which the
Lords agree.

The Lords concurred with the House of Commons in all the aforesaid Votes, and nominated the Earls of *Northumberland*^a, *Pembroke*^b, *Holland*^c, *Warwick*^d, and *Bolingbroke*^e, and the Lord Viscount *Say and Sele*^f, to join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons to draw up the said Declaration.

March 6. This Day the Lords received an Answer from the King to their Articles of Cessation, which was as follows :

The King's Articles of Cessation.

' HIS Majesty hoped the Treaty would have been begun, and the Cessation agreed on long since ; and that much might, in this Time, have been concluded in order to the Peace and Happiness of the Kingdom ; but since, in almost a Month (for his Majesty's Propositions were made on the third of *February*, and he heard not since from both Houses till the first of *March*) no Consent hath been yielded to it, he conceives the Cessation cannot begin so soon as the fourth of this Month ; by which Time, though his Majesty uses no Delay in making his Answer) the same can hardly

^a *Algernon Piercy.*—^b *Philip Herbert.*—^c *Henry Rich.*—^d *Robert Rich.*—^e *Oliver St. John.*—^f *William Fiennes.*

‘ hardly be returned to them ; and many of the Ar- An. 18. Car. I.
 ‘ ticles now presented to him from both Houses con- 1642.
 ‘ cerning the Cessation, are so strict, that such of }
 ‘ his good Subjects, who are not of his Army (and March.
 ‘ for whom, generally, he shall always have a prin-
 ‘ cipal, just, and compassionate Regard) receive not
 ‘ any Benefit, or are restored to any Liberty there-
 ‘ by, which his Majesty shall ever insist upon, (when
 ‘ in Matters meerly concerning himself, he may
 ‘ descend to easier Conditions) and which he hath
 ‘ returned with such Alterations, as he doubts not
 ‘ both his Houses will consent to ; and do sufficient-
 ‘ ly manifest how solicitous his Majesty is for the
 ‘ Good of his People, and how desirous he is that,
 ‘ in this unnatural Contention, no more Blood of
 ‘ his Subjects may be spilt, (upon which he looks
 ‘ with much Grief, Compassion, and Tendernefs
 ‘ of Heart) even of those who have lifted up their
 ‘ Hands against him : And his Majesty therefore de-
 ‘ fires (against which he can imagine no Objection
 ‘ can be made) That the Cessation may begin upon
 ‘ the twelfth of this Month, or sooner, if the Con-
 ‘ ditions of the Cessation shall be sooner agreed on,
 ‘ and is willing the same shall continue for twenty
 ‘ Days ; in which Time he hopes by the Treaty,
 ‘ and a clear Understanding of each other, a full
 ‘ Peace and Happiness may be established through-
 ‘ out the Kingdom. And, during that Time, his
 ‘ Majesty is willing that neither Side shall be bound
 ‘ or limited by this Cessation in any otherwise, or to
 ‘ any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

I. ‘ That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition,
 ‘ Money, Bullion, and Victuals, passing for the
 ‘ Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe-Con-
 ‘ duct from the Generals of each Army, may be
 ‘ stayed and seized on, as if no Cessation was agreed
 ‘ on at all.

II. ‘ That all Officers and Soldiers of either Ar-
 ‘ my, passing without such Licence or Safe-Conduct
 ‘ as aforesaid, may be apprehended and detained,
 ‘ as if no such Cessation was agreed on at all : And
 ‘ that

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March,

that all Manner of Persons, his Majesty's Subjects, of what Quality or Condition soever (except Officers and Soldiers of either Army) shall pass to and from the Cities of *Oxford* and *London*, and back again at their Pleasures, during this Cessation; as likewise to and from any other Parts of his Majesty's Dominions, without any Search, Stay, or Imprisonment of their Persons, or Seizure and Detention of their Goods or Estates; and that all Manner of Trade, Traffick, and Commerce be free and open between all his Majesty's Subjects, excepting as aforesaid, between the Officers and Soldiers of either Army; or for Arms, Ammunition, Money, Bullion, or Victuals, for the Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe-Conduct as aforesaid; which may be a good Beginning to renew the Trade and Correspondence of the Kingdom, and whereby his good Subjects may be restored to the Liberty and Freedom they were born to, and have so happily enjoyed till these miserable Distractions; and which, even during this War, his Majesty hath, to his utmost, laboured to preserve; opening the Way, by most strict Proclamations, to the Passage of all Commodities, even to the City of *London* itself.

III. That his Majesty's Forces in *Oxfordshire* shall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatley*; and, in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Aylesbury* than *Brill*; and that in *Berkshire*, the Forces respectively shall not advance nearer the one to the other than they shall be at the Day to be agreed upon for the Cessation to begin; and that the Forces of the other Army in *Oxfordshire*, shall advance no nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*, and those in *Buckinghamshire* no nearer to *Oxford* than *Aylesbury*; and that the Forces of neither Army shall advance their Quarters nearer to each other than they shall be upon the Day agreed on for the Cessation to begin, otherwise than in Passage and Communication between their several Quarters respectively, without any Acts of Hostility to each other; but may

en-

enlarge themselves within their own Quarters respectively, as they shall find convenient. An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

IV. ' That the Forces of either Army in *Gloucestershire, Wiltshire, and Wales*, as likewise in the Cities of *Gloucester and Bristol*, and the Castle and Town of *Berkley*, shall be guided by the Rule express'd in the latter Part of the precedent Article.

March.

V. ' That in Case it be pretended on either Side, That the Cessation is violated, no Act of Hostility is immediately to follow; but first the Party complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on the other Side, and to allow three Days, after Notice, for Satisfaction; and in Case Satisfaction be not given or accepted, then five Days Notice to be given before Hostility begin: And the like to be observed in the remoter Armies by the Commanders in Chief.

VI. ' That all other Forces in the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, not before mentioned, shall remain in the same Quarters and Places, as they are at the Time of publishing this Cessation, otherwise than in Passage and Communication between their several Quarters, as is mentioned in the latter Part of the third Article: And that this Cessation shall not extend to restrain the setting forth, or employing, any Ships for the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions; provided that his Majesty be first acquainted with the Particulars, and that such Ships as shall be set forth be commanded by such Persons as his Majesty shall approve of.

Lastly, ' That, during the Cessation, none of his Majesty's Subjects be imprisoned, otherwise than according to the known Laws of the Land; and that there shall be no Plundering or Violence offered to any of his Subjects. And his Majesty is very willing, if there be any Scruples made concerning these Propositions and Circumstances of the Cessation, that the Committee for the Treaty, nevertheless, may immediately come hither, and so all Matters concerning the Cessation may be here settled by him.'

At

An. 13. Car. I.
1643.

March.

His Majesty
grants a Safe-
Conduct to all
the Parliament's
Commissioners,
except the Lord
Say.

At the same Time came a Letter of Safe-Conduct for all the Parliament's Commissioners, except the Lord *Say*. His Majesty's Reasons for objecting to the last were, ' That his Lordship was excepted against, by Name, in his Proclamation, at *Oxford*, of the third of *November*, and by Writ to the Sheriff proclaimed then in that County; in which his Majesty's Intention is declared to proceed against him as a Person guilty of High Treason; and so falling to be within the Case of Sir *John Evelyn*, who, upon the same Exception, was not admitted to attend his Majesty, with the rest of the Committee, at *Colebrooke*, in *November* last; yet his Majesty did signify, that in Case the House shall think fit to send any other Person in the Place of the Lord *Say*, who is not included in the like Exception, his Majesty hath commanded all his Officers, Soldiers, and other Subjects to suffer him as freely to pass and repass, as if his Name had been particularly comprized in the Safe-Conduct.'

With these Objections to the Lord *Say* came also the following Message relating to the Cessation:

' HIS Majesty is content that his Proposition concerning the Magazines, Forts, Ships, and Revenue, and the Proposition of both Houses for the Disbanding of the Armies, shall be first treated of, and agreed of before the proceeding to treat upon any of the other Propositions; and that, afterward, the second of his Majesty's, and the second of theirs, be treated on and agreed of, and so on in the same Order; and that, from the Beginning of the Treaty, the Time may not exceed twenty Days; in which, he hopes, a full Peace and right Understanding may be established throughout the Kingdom.'

After the reading of these Matters in the House of Lords, the Lord *Say* stood up and said, That he never heard of this Proclamation before; what he did was in Obedience to the Commands of the Parliament,

liament,
in Quie
claimed
his Dut
a Case
Thing
liament
and Ce
between
dered,
tend th
Service
trench
left it f
he sha
John E
Bot
confid
tion, a
about

Ma
mons,
cles fo
before
Gene
Comm
it, an
ing a
Purpo

M
Effect
he ha
and,
they
sue b
Verb

' T
' con

liament, for the settling of the County of *Oxford* An. 18. Car. I.
in Quietness and Security; and if he shall be pro- 1642.
claimed a Person guilty of High Treason, for doing
his Duty to the Commands of Parliament, it will be
a Case worthy their Lordships Consideration, as a
Thing which much concerns the Privileges of Par-
liament: But, for his Part, rather than the Treaty
and Cessation of Arms, for obtaining a happy Peace
between the King and Kingdom, should be hin-
dered, he desired the Lords to give him Leave to at-
tend this House, and dispense with his going on the
Service. But the Lords, conceiving this Precedent
trenched on the essential Proceedings of Parliament,
left it freely to the Lord *Say*, either to go or stay as
he shall think proper; as in the like Case of Sir
John Evelyn in the House of Commons.

Both Houses agreed to appoint a Committee to
consider of the King's last Message on the Cessa-
tion, and report back what they think fit to be done
about it.

March 7. A Message came up from the Com- The King's Ar-
mons, with their Thoughts on the King's last Arti- ticles of Cessa-
cles for a Cessation, That since the Parliament had, tion sent to the
before, sent Committees to consult with the Lord- Earl of *Essex*.
General about them, they think it fit that the same
Committee may be sent again to acquaint him with
it, and desire his Advice therein. The Lords *Field-*
ing and *Hunsdon* were sent to the General for that
Purpose.

March 9. These Lords reported to the House the
Effect of their Embassy to the Earl of *Essex*, That
he had called a Council of War to his Assistance;
and, upon due Consideration of the King's Articles,
they offered some Inconveniences which might en-
sue by accepting the same, which were read *in hæc*
Verba:

' THAT however any Cautions which his Ex- His Objections
' cellency shall propound by way of Advice to them.
' concerning the Cessation, as is now by his Maje-
' sty

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

March,

‘*fty propounded in these Articles may be subject to Misinterpretations, as if he were disaffected to Peace; nevertheless, in Satisfaction to the Desire of both Houses, his Excellency offereth unto their Consideration these following Inconveniences:*

‘*To the first Article these Difficulties are propounded:*

1. ‘*That it cannot possibly be known or discerned what Carriages of Arms, Ammunition, Bullion, and Victuals, are intended for the Use of the Army, and which are not; whereby continual Contentions are like to arise among the Guards of the respective Quarters, which will endanger the Violation of the Cessation, and the Breach of this Treaty.*

2. ‘*The Words in the last Clause being ambiguous, The Generals of each Army, ought to be made clearer by this Expression, The Generals of both Armies, as well of his Majesty’s as the Parliament’s Army.*

To the second Article:

‘*It is scarcely discernible who is a Soldier, and who not; and then he who was a Soldier Yesterday, may, To-day, be cashier’d to qualify him for another Design in either Army; and, as this Article lieth, 500 of his Majesty’s Army may be cashier’d for the Purpose, and sent into London, to be in the Head of the Malignant Party: Besides, if they be Soldiers or not Soldiers, the unrestrained Passage of all other Persons must, of Necessity, infuse Intelligence and bad Impressures in the Minds of Men in each Army; and the Passage of Commodities, which must be attended by divers Persons, will open a Way to the same Inconveniences; moreover, upon the free Passage of Commodities, will, of Necessity, follow the Importation of Money into each Army; which is agreed to be restrained by the first Article. Furthermore, in the Passage of Carriages, unsearched, by Water or Land, all Manner of warlike Provisions and contraband Goods may be pack’d up and carried into each Army, as soon as the Carriages, who pre-*

‘*tend*

'tend to go to another Place, be past the Guards of An. 18. Car. I.
'the respective Quarters: Neither can the Search of 1642.
'Goods and Persons be made without great Disputes
'and Quarrels, whereby daily Breaches and Inter-
'ruptions of the Cessation are to be expected.

'In Consideration of which Premises, it will be
'safer for the Subjects to restrain the Passage of
'Commodities for a small Time; which, being but
'twenty Days at the most, cannot be of any great
'Prejudice.

March.

'To the third Article:

'It is said that the Clause of the Communication,
'betwixt the several Quarters respectively, admits
'of so great a Latitude, that thereby the Forces of
'Cornwall and Newcastle may be drawn together
'without Violation of the Cessation.

'To the last Article:

'It is said that the former Part of this Article,
'prohibiting to imprison any Subject otherwise than
'by the known Laws of the Land, doth contradict
'the second Article, which giveth Licence to appre-
'hend and detain Soldiers that have no Safe-Conduct
'by Law of War.

'For the latter Part of this Article it is requisite
'to explain it thus, *That no Violence shall be offered*
'*to any Subject, unless it be in Case of Disobedience to*
'*the Order of one or both Houses of Parliament.*

A Message was sent to the House of Commons
by Sir Robert Rich and Mr. Page, to communicate
this Advice of the Lord-General to them, and to
desire that the select Committees of both Houses,
formerly appointed to consider of the King's Answer
touching the Articles of the Cessation of Arms, may
meet this Afternoon at Two o'Clock, and take this
Paper, sent from my Lord-General, into Consider-
ation; and prepare what they conceive fit to be
done thereupon, and offer the same to the Consider-
ation of both Houses.

But whilst these Affairs, tending towards Peace,
were in Agitation, both Sides were watchful to take
Ad-

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March.

The Commons
receive Advice of
Prince Rupert's
intending to as-
sault Bristol.

I. Advantage of each other, before the Cessation took Place, the Spring being now advanced, and the Season fit for Action. Accordingly

A Message was, this Day, brought from the Commons, desiring a present Conference, touching some Intelligence they had received from their Lord-General; which was agreed to.

The Speaker reported, 'That, at this Conference, the House of Commons acquainted their Lordships with Letters received from Sir Robert Cook, to let them know that Prince *Rupert* is within four Miles of *Bristol*, and intends to assault that City: Upon this the Lord-General intends, To-morrow, to march out from *Windfor* with the whole Army; but desires there might be some Course taken to furnish and supply Money and Victuals; for the effecting hereof the House of Commons have made some Votes, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence.

The Votes were read as follow:

1. 'That this House doth approve of the Lord-General's Resolutions to march, upon Information that the King's Forces are in Motion; and that Thanks be given unto him for his Care of the Safety of the Kingdom.

2. 'That the Lord Mayor be desired, that a Common Council be called to meet To-morrow at Ten o'Clock; and that a Committee of both Houses may go thither; and that a Supply of Money, and other Assistance, may be propounded and desired for the important Service of the Army now to march.'

Both these Votes were agreed to by the Lords.

Votes of both
Houses in Con-
sequence thereof.

Next it was reported, 'That the House of Commons have received some Letters from the *North*, by which it seems there is some Difference amongst the Officers which command in Chief there; whereupon the House of Commons have passed some Votes, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence, viz.

1. 'That Letters be sent to the Lord-Lieutenants and Deputy-Lieutenants of the Counties of *Lincoln*,

Not-

Notting
can, w
fax.

2.
in Perso
to the A
the Co
least, o
Army
and tha
dom de
The

Ma
port th
shot at
had lan
led a M
Lon
of this
Queer
of W
others
lington
had th
the S
had M
Way
her to
it wit
came
refres
Key,
Rece
to be
upon
'

Batt
had
King
findi

Nottingham, and Derby, to send what Forces they can, with all convenient Speed, to the Lord Fairfax. An. 18. Car. 1. 1642.

2. ' That the Lord Fairfax shall be desired to go in Person, if he can, with the best Strength he hath, to the Aid of Captain *Hotham*, in the East-Riding of the County of *York*; if not, to send 1000 Foot at least, or more, if he can spare them, to oppose the Army under the Command of the Earl of *Newcastle*; and that the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom do prepare these Letters.'

The Lords agreed to both these Votes also.

March 10. The Lords were informed of a Report that some Ships, set out by the Parliament, had shot at the House where the Queen lodged, after she had landed at *Bridlington*, in *Yorkshire*, and had killed a Man very near her Majesty. The Queen, on her Return to England, landing at *Bridlington*, the Parliament's Ships fire upon her Lodgings.

Lord *Clarendon* gives us the following Particulars of this Affair: ' About the Middle of *February* the Queen took Shipping from *Holland*, in a Dutch Man of War, assigned by the Prince of *Orange*, with others for her Convoy, and arrived safely in *Bridlington Bay*, upon the Coast of *Yorkshire*; where she had the Patience to stay on Shipboard, at Anchor, the Space of two Days, till the Earl of *Newcastle* had Notice to draw such Part of his Forces that Way, as might secure her Landing, and wait on her to *York*; which he no sooner did, (and he did it with all imaginable Expedition) but her Majesty came on Shore; and, for the present, was pleased to refresh herself in a convenient House upon the very Key, where all Accommodations were made for her Reception; there being many Things of Moment to be unshipped before she could reasonably enter upon her Journey towards *York*.

' The second Day after the Queen's Landing, *Batten*, Vice-Admiral to the Earl of *Warwick*, (who had waited to intercept her Passage) with four of the King's Ships, arrived in *Bridlington Road*; and, finding that her Majesty was landed, and that she lodged

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March.

lodged upon the Key, bringing his Ships to the nearest Distance, being very early in the Morning; discharged above 100 Cannon, (whereof many were laden with Cross-bar Shot, for the Space of two Hours upon the House where her Majesty was lodged; whereupon she was forced out of her Bed, some of the Shot making Way through her own Chamber, and to shelter herself under a Bank in the open Fields; which barbarous and treasonable Act, says his Lordship, was so much the more odious, in that the Parliament never so far took Notice of it as to disavow it.

This last Circumstance is confirmed by the *Lords Journals*, in which we find, That though that House, upon Information of the above Report, ordered, That the Earl of *Warwick* be desired to examine the Truth of this Business, and certify it to their House, when their Lordships would take it into further Consideration; yet nothing more was done upon it: But we are told in the *Commons Journals*, That it being suspected the Ships which brought over the Queen, then lying before *Bridlington*, had some Design upon *Hull*, a Letter was ordered to be sent to the Earl of *Warwick* to send some Ships from his Squadron, which might prevent any Mischief from that Quarter. — Her Majesty shortly after removed to *York*, where she had been many Weeks expected, as appears by some Passages in the last Letter from the Lord *Fairfax* to the Speaker of the House of Commons.

Her Majesty arrives at York.

Both Houses were employed several Days in framing, a-new, their Articles of Cessation, on the Military Plan laid down by the Earl of *Essex* and his chief Officers, and many Alterations and Emendations were made in them.

March 14. The Commons, at a Conference this Day, acquainted the Lords with divers Letters they had received from *Bristol*, concerning a bloody Massacre, as it is termed, intended to have been executed

ecuted
are no
Comm

1. Houses
Kingd

2. zing th
ed for
may be
Genera

3. giving
through

The
mittee
Declara
ed. A
down to
diery th
ness.

It was
ny Mess
and some
Articles
thorough
ordered t
ers, with
These tw
cy in the
we shall g

T H
b
fire of P
be freed
wherewi
War sho
pedition
Cessation
Vol. X

executed in that City. The Letters were read, but are not entered; upon Consideration thereof, the Commons made the following Votes:

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
March.

1. 'That a Declaration might pass from both Houses, to set forth this Conspiracy to the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That an Ordinance might pass for the seizing the Estates of all the Conspirators to be employed for the Maintenance of the War; and that they may be proceeded against, by Direction of the Lord-General, according to the Law of Arms.

3. 'The next Lord's Day to be appointed for giving public Thanks in the City, and another Day throughout the whole Kingdom.'

The Lords agreed to these Votes, and a Committee of both Houses was appointed to draw up a Declaration of the Fact, to be printed and published. A Letter of Thanks was also ordered to be sent down to *Bristol*, to the Mayor, Aldermen, and Soldiery there, for their careful Service in this Business.

It was not untill this Day, (*March 17*) after many Messages and Conferences between the Houses, and some Stiffness shewn on both Sides, that the Articles for a Cessation were wholly finished and thoroughly agreed to by them. They were then ordered to be sent to the King by their Commissioners, with full Instructions how to act in this Treaty. These two Instruments are of too much Significance in these Enquiries to be omitted. And, first, we shall give the Articles for a Cessation:

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, being still carried on with a vehement Desire of Peace, that so the Kingdom may speedily be freed from the Desolation and Destruction wherewith it is like to be overwhelmed if the War should continue, have, with as much Expedition as they could, consider'd of the Articles of Cessation, with those Alterations and Additions

The Parliament's
Articles for a
Cessation, as al-
ter'd by Advice of
the Earl of Essex.

194 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March.

‘ offered by his Majesty, unto which they are ready
‘ to agree in such Manner as is expressed in these
‘ ensuing Articles, viz.

I. ‘ That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition,
‘ Viſtual, Money, Bullion, and all other Commo-
‘ dities, paſſing without a Safe-Conduct from the
‘ Generals of both Armies, as well of his Maje-
‘ ſty’s as of the Armies raiſed by the Parliament,
‘ may be ſtayed and ſeized on, as if no ſuch Ceſſa-
‘ tion were agreed on at all.

II. ‘ That all Manner of Perſons, paſſing with-
‘ out ſuch a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the
‘ Article next going before, ſhall be apprehended
‘ and detained, as if no ſuch Ceſſation were agreed
‘ on at all.

III. ‘ That his Majesty’s Forces in *Oxfordſhire*
‘ ſhall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatley*;
‘ and, in *Buckinghamſhire*, no nearer to *Ayleſbury*
‘ than *Brill*; and that, in *Berkſhire*, the Forces re-
‘ ſpectively ſhall not advance nearer the one to the
‘ other than they ſhall be at the Day to be agreed
‘ on for the Ceſſation to begin: And that the Forces
‘ of the other Army, raiſed by the Parliament, ſhall
‘ advance no nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*, and
‘ thoſe in *Buckinghamſhire* no nearer to *Oxford* than
‘ *Ayleſbury*; and that the Forces of neither Army
‘ ſhall advance their Quarters nearer to each other
‘ than they ſhall be upon the Day agreed on for the
‘ Ceſſation to begin.

IV. ‘ That the Forces of either Army in *Glou-
‘ ceſterſhire*, *Wilts*, and *Wales*, as likewise in the
‘ Cities of *Glouceſter* and *Briſtol*, and the Caſtle and
‘ Town of *Berkley*, ſhall be guided by the Rule
‘ expreſſed in the latter Part of the preceding Ar-
‘ ticle.

V. ‘ That in Caſe it be pretended on either Side,
‘ that the Ceſſation is violated, no Act of Hoſtility
‘ is immediately to follow; but, firſt, the Party
‘ complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on
‘ the other Side, and to allow three Days after No-
‘ tice given for Satisfaction; and in Caſe Satisfac-
‘ tion

'tion be not given or accepted, then five Days No-
'tice to be given before Hostilities begin; and the
'like to be observed in the remoter Armies by the
'Commanders in Chief.

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.
March.

VI. ' That all other Forces in the Kingdom of
' *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, not before men-
' tioned, shall remain in the same Quarters and
' Places as they are at the Time of the publishing
' of this Cessation, and under the same Conditions
' as are mentioned in the Articles before: And that
' this Cessation shall not extend to restrain the setting
' forth, or employing of, any Ships for the Defence
' of his Majesty's Dominions.

VII. ' That as soon as his Majesty shall be plea-
' sed to disband the Armies, which both Houses
' earnestly desire may be speedily effected, and to
' disarm the Papists according to Law; the Sub-
' jects may then enjoy the Benefit of Peace in the
' Liberty of their Persons, Goods, and Freedom
' of Trade; in the mean Time, the Generals and
' Commanders of the Armies of both Sides shall
' be enjoined to keep the Soldiers from plundering;
' which the two Houses of Parliament have ever
' disliked and forbidden.

' And for the speedy settling of this so much de-
' sired Peace, they have thought good to send their
' Committees with Instructions, That, if his Ma-
' jesty be pleased to consent to a Cessation, so limit-
' ed and qualified, they may forthwith proceed to
' treat upon the Propositions; and because the Time
' is so far elapsed in these Preparations, they desire
' the Cessation may begin the 25th of this instant
' *March*, or sooner if it may be; and, in the mean
' Time, Notice to be given to all the Forces in the
' several and remote Parts; and the Commanders,
' Officers, and Soldiers are enjoined to observe this
' Cessation accordingly; to which they hope and
' pray that God will give such a Blessing, that
' thereupon Peace, Safety, and Happiness may be
' produced and confirmed to his Majesty and all his
' People.'

196 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1. INSTRUCTIONS, agreed on by the LORDS and COMMONS, in Parliament, for Algernoon Earl of Northumberland, William Lord Viscount Say and Sele, William Pierpoint, Esq; Sir William Armyn, Bart. Sir John Holland, Bart. and Bulstrode Whitlocke, Esq; Committees appointed to attend his Majesty upon the Propositions made by his Majesty to the Parliament, and likewise upon the other Propositions humbly presented from them to his Majesty.

1642.
March.
Their Instructions to the Committee appointed to go to Oxford.

I. **Y**OU shall present to his Majesty the Articles agreed on for the Cessation of Arms, humbly desiring his Majesty to ratify and confirm the same under the Great Seal; which being obtained, you are to send it up to the Parliament with all possible Speed; and shall likewise beseech the King to dispatch away Messengers to the Generals, Commanders, and Soldiers of all his Armies and Forces, with a strict Command and Injunction, that they observe those Articles of Cessation, according as they are agreed upon; as the two Houses likewise intend to give the like Direction to the Lord-General of the Armies raised for their Defence.

II. After his Majesty hath declared and ratified the Cessation, you shall then proceed to the Treaty, beginning with the first Proposition on his Majesty's Behalf, concerning his Majesty's own Revenue, his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, and thereunto make this Answer:

You shall declare, That the two Houses of Parliament have not made Use of his Majesty's own Revenue, but in a very small Proportion; which, for a good Part, hath been employed in the Maintenance of his Majesty's Children, according to the Allowance established by himself; and they will satisfy what shall remain due to his Majesty of those Sums received out of his Majesty's own Revenues, and shall leave the same to his Majesty for the Time to come. And you likewise

wife
resto
any o
ral A
made
TI
Tow
were
slight
which
Parts,
were
be rem
out C
Parlia
Th
within
shall b
Person
of the
confid
Tha
to the
Time
the C
Castles
Garriso
Care a
Troubl
Garriso
shall be
Forts,
Hands
be lik
Houses
That
Govern
and For
and For
jesty an
they sha
Forces r

‘ wise shall propound to his Majesty, That he will
 ‘ restore what hath been taken for his Use, upon
 ‘ any of the Bills assigned to other Purposes by several Acts of Parliament, or out of the Provision
 ‘ made for the War of *Ireland*:
 An. 18. Car. I.
 1642.
 March.

‘ That they will remove the Garrisons out of all
 ‘ Towns and Forts in their Hands, wherein there
 ‘ were no Garrisons before these Troubles, and
 ‘ slight all Fortifications made since that Time;
 ‘ which Towns and Forts, it is to be agreed on both
 ‘ Parts, shall continue in the same Condition they
 ‘ were in before; and that those Garrisons shall not
 ‘ be renewed, nor the Fortifications repaired, without
 ‘ Consent of his Majesty, and both Houses of
 ‘ Parliament:

‘ That for those Towns and Forts which are
 ‘ within the Jurisdiction of the *Cinque-Ports*, they
 ‘ shall be delivered up into the Hands of such a Noble
 ‘ Person as his Majesty shall appoint to be Warden
 ‘ of the *Cinque-Ports*, being such a one as they shall
 ‘ confide in:

‘ That the Town of *Portsmouth* shall be reduced
 ‘ to the Number of the Garrison, as was at the
 ‘ Time when the Lords and Commons undertook
 ‘ the Custody thereof: And such other Forts,
 ‘ Castles, and Towns as were formerly kept by
 ‘ Garrisons, as have been taken by them into their
 ‘ Care and Custody since the Beginning of these
 ‘ Troubles, shall be reduced to such Proportion of
 ‘ Garrison as they had in the Year 1636, and
 ‘ shall be so continued: And that all the said Towns,
 ‘ Forts, and Castles shall be delivered up into the
 ‘ Hands of such Persons of Quality and Trust, to
 ‘ be likewise nominated by his Majesty, as the two
 ‘ Houses shall confide in:

‘ That the Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and all
 ‘ Governors and Commanders of Towns, Castles,
 ‘ and Forts, shall keep the same Towns, Castles,
 ‘ and Forts respectively, for the Service of his Majesty
 ‘ and the Safety of the Kingdom; and that
 ‘ they shall not admit into any of them any foreign
 ‘ Forces raised without his Majesty’s Authority and

An, 18. Car. I.
1642.

March.

I. ' Consent of the two Houses of Parliament; and they
' shall use their uttermost Endeavours to suppress
' all Forces whatsoever, raised without such Au-
' thority and Consent; and they shall seize all
' Arms and Ammunition provided for any such
' Forces:

' That the Ships shall be delivered into the
' Charge of such a Noble Person as his Majesty shall
' nominate to be Lord High-Admiral of *England*,
' and the two Houses of Parliament confide in;
' who shall receive the same Office by Letters Pa-
' tent *quamdiu bene se gesserit*; and shall have
' Power to nominate and appoint all subordinate
' Commanders and Officers, and have all other
' Powers appertaining to the Office of High-Admi-
' ral; which Ships he shall employ for the De-
' fence of the Kingdom against all foreign Forces
' whatsoever, and for the Safeguard of Merchants,
' securing of Trade, the guarding of *Ireland*, and
' the intercepting of all Supplies to be carried to
' the Rebels; and shall use his uttermost Endea-
' vour to suppress all Forces which shall be raised
' by any Person without his Majesty's Authority,
' and Consent of the Lords and Commons in Par-
' liament; and shall seize all Arms and Ammu-
' nition provided for Supply of any such Forces:
' That all the Arms and Ammunition, taken out
' of his Majesty's Magazines, which shall remain
' in their Hands, shall be delivered into his Stores;
' and whatsoever shall be wanting, they will, in
' convenient Time, supply in Kind, according to
' the Proportions which they have received; and
' that the Persons, to whose Charge those public
' Magazines shall be committed, being nominated
' by his Majesty, shall be such as the Lords and
' Commons shall confide in. And you shall pro-
' pound to his Majesty, That he will restore all
' such Arms and Ammunition as have been taken
' for his Use, from the several Counties, Cities,
' and Towns.

III. ' To the Proposition made by the two
' Houses, concerning the Disbanding of the Ar-

'mies, you shall humbly desire his Majesty's An. 18. Car. I.
'speedy and positive Answer; unto which if he 1642.
'shall be pleased to give his Assent, you shall then
'beseech his Majesty, in the Name of both Houses, }
'that a near Day may be agreed upon for the Dis- }
'banding all the Forces in the remote Parts of }
'Yorkshire, and the other Northern Counties; as }
'also in Lancashire, Cheshire, and in the Domi- }
'nion of Wales, and in Cornwall and Devonshire; }
'and they being fully disbanded, another Day }
'may be agreed on for the disbanding of all }
'Forces in Lincolnshire, Nottinghamshire, Lei- }
'cestershire, and all other Places, except at Oxford }
'and the Quarters thereunto belonging, and Wind- }
'sor and the Quarters thereunto belonging; and }
'that, last of all, a speedy Day be appointed for }
'the Disbanding those two Armies at Oxford and }
'Windsor, and all the Forces Members of either of }
'them :

March.

'That some Officers of both Armies may speedily meet to agree of the Manner of the Disbanding; and that fit Persons may be appointed by his Majesty and the Parliament, who may repair to the several Armies, and see the Disbanding put in speedy Execution accordingly :

'That his Majesty do likewise remove the Garrisons out of Newcastle, and all other Towns, Castles, and Forts, where any Garrisons have been placed by him since these Troubles; and that the Fortifications be likewise slighted, and the Towns and Forts left in such State and Condition as they were in the Year 1636: And

'That all other Towns, Forts, and Castles, where there have been formerly Garrisons before these Troubles, be committed to the Charge of such Persons, to be nominated by his Majesty, as the Parliament shall confide in, and under such Instructions as are formerly mentioned.

IV. 'That if his Majesty shall be pleased to assent to these Propositions, concerning the Towns, Forts, Castles, Magazines, and Ships, that then
'his

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

March.

his Majesty be humbly intreated to name Persons of Quality to receive the Charge of the several Offices and Forts, Castles and Towns, to be forthwith certified to the two Houses of Parliament, that thereupon they may express their Confidence in those Persons, or humbly beseech his Majesty to name others; none of which Persons shall be removed during three Years next ensuing, without just Cause, to be approved by Parliament; and if any be so removed, or shall die within the said Space, the Person to be put into the same Office shall be such as both Houses shall confide in:

That all Generals and Commanders in any of the Armies, on either Side, as likewise the Lord-Admiral of *England*, the Lord-Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, all Commanders of any Ships, and Commanders of any Town, Castle, or Fort, shall take an Oath to observe these Articles aforementioned; and to use their uttermost Power to preserve the true Reformed Protestant Religion, and the Peace of the Kingdom, against all foreign Force, and all other Forces raised without his Majesty's Authority and Consent of the two Houses of Parliament.

V. You shall move his Majesty, That, for the better Dispatch of the Treaty, and the free Inter-course of Instructions and Advertisements betwixt the two Houses of Parliament and the Committee, that there may be a free Pass of Messengers to and from the Parliament and the Committees, without Search or Interruption; and his Majesty's Safe-Conduct to be obtained to that Effect, to such Persons as are, or shall be, appointed for that Service, viz. Mr. *John Rushworth*, Mr. *Michael Welden*, Mr. *John Corbet* of *Gray's Inn*, and Mr. *James Standish*.

Nothing else intervening worth our Notice, we shall go on with an Account of the Intelligence sent from the Commissioners, now at *Oxford*, to Parlia-

Parlian
read a
these V

To the
Sp

My

AS
Majest
comm
did in
the Ar
them t
self, a
from t
and to
he wo
send y
soon as

Oxford,
1

Bef
from t
direct

My

TH
cr
from
would
Term
in the
We h
The
the D

Parliament. And, this Day, *March 23*, the Lords An. 18. Car. I.
read a Letter from the Earl of *Northumberland* in
these Words: 1642.

March,

To the Right Honourable the Earl of *Manchester*,
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

AS soon as we came hither, between four and five o'Clock in the Afternoon, we sent to know his Majesty's Pleasure when we should wait on him, who commanded us presently to attend him, which we did in the Garden at Christ-Church; where I read the Articles for the Cessation, and we humbly presented them to the King, who read the Title of them himself, and said, There was a Difference in them from the Articles which he sent to both Houses; and told us, before he should be many Hours older, he would give his Answer to them; whereof I shall send your Lordships a speedy and faithful Account, as soon as we shall receive it.

Letters from that
Committee.

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 19,
1642.

Most humble Servant,

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

Besides the foregoing, there was another Letter from this Earl, of a later Date, read the same Day, directed as before, and was to this Effect:

My Lord,

THIS Afternoon my Lord Falkland and Mr. Secretary Nicholas came to us, with a Message from his Majesty, to know Whether, in case he would not agree to the Articles of Cessation, in Terminis, that we had any Commission to proceed in the Treaty upon the Propositions? I answered, We had not.

The Council have met often, and sat long, since the Delivery of the Articles of Cessation. Mr.
May

202 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. 1.
1642.

March.

May came to us from his Majesty, and said he was sent with a Message to both Houses of Parliament; the Contents he was commanded to let us know, which were, That his Majesty desired free Trade with the Limitations he formerly sent; and that there might be a Cessation by Sea as well as by Land. That, because there might be a Misunderstanding of Expressions, we might have Power to treat on the Articles of Cessation; if not, That the Treaty, upon the Propositions, might go on without a Cessation; and that all Prisoners taken in War, except Officers, might be set at Liberty. This is the Information he gave us; for the present I have no further Account to give to your Lordship, but that I am

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 22,
1642.

Humble Servant,

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

These Letters being produced at a Conference, they were found to correspond, *verbatim*, with others the Commons had received from their Commissioners at *Oxford*. At this Conference, also, a Letter was read, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, from the Lord *Falkland*, in which was inclosed a Message from the King, to both Houses, concerning the Cessation, dated at *Oxford*, *March 22*, in these Words.

CHARLES R.

The King's Ex-
ceptions to the
Parliament's last
Articles of Cef-
sation.

HIS Majesty hath immediately, upon their Arrival, admitted the Committee sent to him from both Houses of Parliament, (as the Messengers of Peace) to his Royal Presence, and receiv'd the Articles of Cessation brought by them; which are, in Effect, the same his Majesty formerly excepted to, though their Expression in the Preface to these Articles, of their Readiness to agree to those Alterations and Additions offered

by

by his Majesty, in such Manner as is expressed, An. 18. Car. I.
made him expect to have found, at least, some of
the real Alterations and Additions made by him
admitted; which he doth not discover.

1642.

March.

I. His Majesty desired, *That Provision might be made, and Licence given to his good Subjects, for their Freedom of Trade, Traffick, and Commerce,* (tho', in Matters which concerned himself more immediately, as in Arms, Ammunition, Money, Bullion, and Victuals for the Use of his Army, and the Passage of all Officers and Soldiers of his Army, he is contented the Restraining should be in such Manner as was proposed) of which his Majesty is so tender, that as he hath provided for the same by his gracious Proclamations, so he doth daily release and discharge such Merchandize and Commodities as are, contrary to those Proclamations, stayed by any of his Majesty's Forces.

To this Freedom and Liberty of his good Subjects, there is not the least Admission given by these Articles; so that they have not any Ease or Benefit by this Cessation; which his Majesty desires both Houses to consider of; and whether, if his Majesty should take the same Course to stop and interrupt the Trade of the Kingdom, as the other Army doth, a general Loss and Calamity would not seize upon his good Subjects?

II. His Majesty, to the End that a full Cessation might be as well at Sea as at Land, and he might be secured that the Ships, proposed to be set forth for the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions, shall be employed only to that End and Purpose, desired, *That they might be put under the Command of Persons to be approved of by his Majesty;* which is not consented to by these Articles; but their former, to which his Majesty excepted, strictly and entirely insisted on; by which (besides that Part of Hostility remains) the Conveying of any Number of Forces from one Part to any other, by that Means, remains free to them.

III.

204 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 18, Car. 1.
1641.

March,

III. ' For the Prevention of any Inconveniences
' which might arise upon real Differences, or Mi-
' stakes upon Latitude of Expression; (as if his Ma-
' jesty should now consent to these Articles propo-
' sed, in the Terms proposed, he must confess
' the Army, of which he complains, to be raised by
' the Parliament; and either himself to be no Part
' of the Parliament, or himself to have raised that
' Army) and for Prevention of that Delay which
' he foresaw could not otherwise be avoided, if,
' upon every Difference, the Question must be re-
' mitted to London, his Majesty desired, *That the*
' *Committee*, for whom he then sent a Safe-Conduct,
' *might have Liberty to debate any such Difference*
' *and Expressions, and reconcile the same, that all pos-*
' *sible Expedition might be used to the main Treaty.*

' In this Point of so high Concernment, no
' Power is given in these Articles; and the Com-
' mittee confessed to his Majesty they have no
' Power given, but are strictly and precisely bound
' to the very Words of the Articles now sent; and
' that before these are consented to by us, they
' cannot enter into any Treaty concerning the other
' Propositions.

IV. ' His Majesty desired, *That, during the*
' *Cessation, none of his good Subjects might be im-*
' *prisoned, otherwise than according to the known Laws*
' *of the Land.*

' This is in no Degree consented to; but the
' Privilege and Liberty, to which they were born,
' reserved from them till the disbanding of both
' Armies, though they are no Part of either Army;
' and so have no Benefit by this Cessation.

V. ' His Majesty desired, *That, during this Ces-*
' *sation, there should be no Plundering or Violence*
' *offered to any of his Subjects.*

' In the Answer to which, his Desire against
' Violence is not at all taken Notice of, nor is his
' Desire against Plundering anywise satisfied; his
' Majesty, not only intending by it the robbing of
' the Subject by the Unruliness of the uncom-
' manded Soldier (which their Clause of requiring
' the

the Generals and Officers to keep them from it seems to imply; and the Assertion, That the two Houses of Parliament had ever disliked and forbidden it, declares plainly to be their only Meaning;) but particularly the Violence and Plunderings used to his Subjects, by forcibly taking away their Goods for not submitting to Impositions and Taxes required from them by Orders or Ordinances of one or both Houses of Parliament, which are contrary to the known Laws of the Land.

An. 18. Car. I.

1642.

March.

VI. Besides, that there is no Consent given to those Alterations and Additions offered by his Majesty, whatsoever is pretended; for where an absolute Consent may be supposed, because the very Words of his Majesty's Article are wholly preserved, yet, by reason of the Relation to somewhat going before that is varied by them, the Sense of those Words is wholly varied too; as in the fourth Article, where the Part of the third Article, to which that did refer, is wholly left out: So that, upon the Matter, all the Propositions made by his Majesty, which did not in Terms agree with those presented to him, are utterly rejected.

For these Reasons, and that this Entrance towards a blessed Peace and Accommodation, which hath already filled the Hearts of the Kingdom with Joy and Hope, may be improved to the wished End, his Majesty desires, That the Committee now sent may speedily have Liberty to treat, debate, and agree upon the Articles of Cessation; in which they and all the World shall find that his Majesty is less solicitous for his own Dignity and Greatness, than for his Subjects Ease and Liberty: And he doubts not, upon such a Debate, all Differences concerning the Cessation will be easily and speedily agreed upon; and the Benefit of a Cessation be continued and confirmed to his People by a speedy disbanding of both Armies, and a sudden and firm Peace; which his Majesty above all Things desires.

If

206 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March.

‘ If this so reasonable, equal, and just Desire
‘ of his Majesty shall not be yielded unto, but
‘ the same Articles still insisted upon: Though his
‘ Majesty, next to Peace, desires a Cessation; yet,
‘ that the not Agreeing upon the one may not
‘ destroy the Hopes of, nor so much as delay, the
‘ other, he is willing however to treat (even with-
‘ out a Cessation, if that be not granted) upon the
‘ Propositions themselves, in that Order as is agreed
‘ upon, and desires the Committee here may be
‘ enabled to that Effect; in which Treaty he shall
‘ give all his Subjects that Satisfaction, That if
‘ any Security to enjoy all the Rights, Privileges,
‘ and Liberties due to them by the Law; or that
‘ Happiness in Church and State, which the best
‘ Times have seen; with such farther Acts of Grace
‘ as may agree with his Honour, Justice, and Duty
‘ to his Crown, and as may not render him less
‘ able to protect his Subjects according to his Oath,
‘ will satisfy them, he is confident, in the Mercy
‘ of God, that no more precious Blood of this
‘ Nation will be thus miserably spent.’

Resolutions of
both Houses at
a Conference
thereupon.

March 24. Another Conference was held about
this Affair; the Effect of which was, That the
House of Commons communicated to the Lords
some Resolutions, which they had made concern-
ing the King's last Message; wherein there was
an Offer to treat upon the Propositions, in case the
Cessation was not agreed on, to which they desired
their Lordships Concurrence. The Resolutions
were as follow:

1. ‘ That the Committee at *Oxford* shall have
Power to treat and debate with his Majesty upon
the two first Propositions, according to their In-
structions, for four Days after the Day of the Re-
ceipt of this Message, notwithstanding that the
Cessation be not yet agreed upon.

2. ‘ That the Committee, formerly appointed
to prepare the Articles of Cessation and Instructions
for the Committee at *Oxford*, shall consider of
an

an Answer to be made to his Majesty's Message An. 18. Car. I.
this Day received; and likewise prepare Reasons 1642.
to be sent to the Committee, for them to press the
Treaty, and debate the former Articles of Cessa-
tion; and to shew his Majesty the Grounds
why the Houses cannot depart from those former
Articles.'

March.

For the present, they thought proper to send the following Message to his Majesty; and the Additional Instructions to their Commissioners. And first the Message.

May it please your Majesty,

WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and Their Message to
Commons in Parliament, having recei- the King in con-
ved a Message from your Majesty, in which you sequence thereof,
'are pleased to express yourself not to be satisfied
'with the Articles of Cessation, presented unto you
'by our Committee now attending you at *Oxford*,
'and yet a Signification of your Majesty's Wil-
'lingness to treat upon the Propositions themselves,
'even without a Cessation; do, with all Humble-
'ness, give our Consent that our Committee shall
'have Power to treat and debate with your Maje-
'sty upon the two first Propositions according to
'their Instructions, for four Days after the Day
'of the Receipt of this Message, notwithstanding
'that the Cessation be not yet agreed upon; that,
'as much as in us lies, there may be no Delay in
'the Proceedings for the obtaining of a blessed
'Peace, and the healing up the miserable Breaches
'of this distracted Kingdom; and do purpose to
'represent, very speedily, unto your Majesty, those
'just Reasons and Grounds upon which we have
'found it necessary to desire of your Majesty a
'Cessation, so qualified as that is; whereby we
'hope you will receive such Satisfaction, as that
'you will be pleased to assent unto it; and, be-
'ing obtained, we assure ourselves it will be most
'effectual to the Safety of the Kingdom; and
'that Peace, which, with so much Zeal and loyal
'Affec-

208 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 18. Car. I.
1642.

March.

' Affection to your Royal Person, and in a deep
' Sense of the bleeding Condition of this poor
' Kingdom, we humbly beg of your Majesty's Ju-
' stice and Goodness'

The Additional Instructions were as follow :

My Lord ^a and Gentlemen,

And Additional
Instructions to
their Committee.

W Hereas, by your former Instructions, you are
tied up to a Circumstance of Time, and are not
to proceed unto the Treaty upon the Propositions, un-
till the Cessation of Arms be first agreed upon: You
are now authorized and required, as you may per-
ceive by the Votes of both Houses which you shall
herewith receive, to treat and debate with his Ma-
jesty upon the two first Propositions; according to those
Instructions, for four Days after the Day of the Re-
ceipt hereof, notwithstanding that the Cessation be not
agreed upon.

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

March 24,
1642.

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

Thus ends the legal Year 1642, with a distant
Prospect of Peace; but, however pleasing the Idea
of it was to some, and we believe much the greater
Part of the Kingdom, yet there were not wanting
those, who, for their own private Ends, spared no
Pains to change it into much more Blood and Slaugh-
ter than had, hitherto, happened in these distract-
ed Times. We may imagine that such Members
of the Commons, concerned in making an Order
of that House, on the twenty-fourth of this Month,
to forbid the Tower Guns to be fired on the 27th,
the Anniversary of the King's Accession, under Pre-
tence of the Expence of Powder, and of hinder-
ing

^a The Reason of this Address being *My Lord*, and not *My Lords*
was because the Lord Say did not go; and the House, lest they should
be thought to countenance the King's Objection, would not appoint
another in his Stead,

ing the great Concourſe of People, were of An. 29. Car. 1.
the latter Sort: And indeed this Order ſeems to
have been clandeſtinely obtained; for, the next
Day, *March* 25, a Motion being made and the
Queſtion put, Whether Liberty ſhould be given
to ſpeak againſt the ſaid Order? The Houſe di-
vided, and it was carried in the Affirmative, 61
againſt 56. What the Speeches were, *pro* and
con, on this Occaſion, we know not; but, ſoon
after, another Queſtion was put, Whether the
Order made, concerning the firing and diſcharging
the Guns of the Tower and Tower-Hill, ſhould be
revoked? This alſo paſſed affirmatively by a greater
Majority, 75 againſt 57: Whereby the Honour
of the Houſe was ſaved againſt a very great Inſtance
of ill Manners, or rather Diſloyalty, in thoſe who
had procured the above-mentioned Order.

Remarkable
Votes as to ob-
ſerving the An-
niverſary of the
King's Acceſ-
ſion,

The Tellers on this remarkable Occaſion were,
on the firſt Queſtion, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Peter*
Wentworth, with the Yeas; Sir *Robert Harley*
and Sir *Nevile Poole*, with the Noes. And, up-
on the ſecond Queſtion, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John*
Evelyn, with the Yeas; Sir *Walter Erle* and Mr.
Strode, with the Noes.

At the Opening of the Year 1643, the Eyes of
a bleeding and miſerable Nation were all turned to
the Treaty at *Oxford*, but to very little Purpoſe;
for, ſo far from any real Advantage being gain'd by
it, Matters were left in the ſame, or a worſe Situation
than before.

To ſhew how little Deſire many of the Houſe
of Commons had to bring this Treaty to a peace-
able Concluſion, we ſhall mention the following
Inſtances.—When the King deſired the Commiſ-
ſioners to get the Time, preſcribed for the Treaty,
enlarged, which was voted in the Lower Houſe on
the firſt of *April*, it was carried for the Enlarge-
ment, by the ſmall Majority of 62 againſt 56. And
it being reſolved, on that Vote, to give further
Time to *Friday* the ſeventh of *April*, for the Trea-
ty, the Queſtion was again put, Whether that

And Diviſions
relating to the
Treaty at Ox-
ford.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

April.

Day was concluded in this Term? and it passed in the Affirmative by yet a smaller Majority, 57 against 54. Two Days after, *April 3*, another Question was started, Whether, if the Commissioners received no positive Answer from the King, to the two first Propositions, by *Friday Night*, they should come away on *Saturday*? The House again divided, when 54 were for the Question, and 41 against it. But this last Order was, soon after, revoked, and the Time enlarged to the *Saturday* following. So that, it is plain, near one Half of the House, then present, were for knocking the Treaty down at once; and, 'tis too probable, were really against any Treaty at all. It shews also to what a low Ebb the House of Commons was then reduced, that, even at this critical Conjunction, scarcely one fifth Part of the Members were present: The Reasons for which, being set forth in the Beginning of this Volume, we pass over without further Remark.

We have already given the Initial Forms for the constituting this Treaty: What followed, as it takes up many Pages in the *Journals*, and is exactly printed in *Rusworth's* and *Husbands's Collections*, and in the Pamphlets published, both by the King and Parliament, at that Time, we pass over; and shall content ourselves with the Account of this unsuccessful Negotiation, as drawn up by those two Contemporary Opposites, the Earl of *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke*; the former of whom was, at this Time, attending the King's Service at *Oxford*; and the other employed, as himself tells us, by his Brother-Commissioners, in drawing up all their Papers to the King, which were afterwards transcrib'd by their Secretaries.—And, first, Lord *Clarendon*.

Lord *Clarendon's* Account of what passed between the King and the Commissioners there.

WHEN the Treaty was first consented to by the two Houses, they ordered that it should be upon the first Proposition made by his Majesty, and the first Proposition made by themselves; and that those should be first concluded on, before they proceeded to treat upon any of the other

other Propositions: So that the Committee, in the An. 19. Car. I.
first Place, appll'd themselves to his Majesty, upon 1643.
his own first Proposition, which was, *That his own* }
Revenue, Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, April.
which had been taken or kept from him by Force,
should be forthwith restored to him. To which the

Committee answered, ' That the two Houses had
' made use of his Majesty's own Revenue but in a
' very small Proportion, which in a good Part had
' been employed in the Maintenance of his Chil-
' dren, according to the Allowance established by
' himself: And the Houses would satisfy what
' should remain due to his Majesty of those Sums
' which they had received; and would leave the
' same to him for the Time to come. And they
' desired likewise, that his Majesty would restore
' what had been taken for his Use upon any of the
' Bills, assigned to other Purposes by several Acts
' of Parliament, or out of the Provision made for
' the War of *Ireland*: That all the Arms and
' Ammunition, taken out of his Magazines, should
' be delivered into his Stores, and whatsoever should
' be wanting they would supply in Kind, according
' to the Proportions they had received; but they
' proposed the Persons, to whose Charge those public
' Magazines should be committed, being nominated
' by his Majesty, might be such as the two Houses of
' Parliament might confide in; and that his Majesty
' would restore all such Arms and Ammunition, as
' had been taken for his Use, from the several
' Counties, Cities, and Towns.

' That the two Houses would remove the Gar-
' risons out of all Towns and Forts in their Hands,
' wherein there were no Garrisons before these
' Troubles, and slight all Fortifications made since
' that Time, and those Towns and Forts to con-
' tinue in the same Condition they were in before;
' and that those Garrisons should not be renewed,
' or the Fortifications repaired, without Consent
' of his Majesty, and both Houses of Parliament:
' That the Towns and Forts, which were within
' the Jurisdiction of the Cinque-Ports, should be

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

‘ delivered into the Hands of such a Noble Person
 ‘ as the King should appoint to be Warden of the
 ‘ Cinque-Ports, being such a one as they should
 ‘ confide in: That *Portsmouth* should be reduced
 ‘ to the Number of the Garrison, as was at that
 ‘ Time when the Lords and Commons undertook
 ‘ the Custody of it; and that all other Forts,
 ‘ Castles, and Towns, in which Garrisons had
 ‘ been kept, and had been, since the Beginning of
 ‘ these Troubles, taken into their Care and Custody,
 ‘ should be reduced to the same Establishment
 ‘ they had in the Year 1636, and should be so continued;
 ‘ and that all those Towns, Forts, and Castles
 ‘ should be delivered up into the Hands of such
 ‘ Persons of Quality and Trust, to be likewise
 ‘ nominated by his Majesty, as the two Houses
 ‘ should confide in: That the Warden of the Cinque-
 ‘ Ports, and all Governors and Commanders of
 ‘ Towns, Castles, and Forts, should keep the same
 ‘ Towns, Castles, and Forts, respectively, for the
 ‘ Service of his Majesty, and the Safety of the
 ‘ Kingdom; and that they should not admit into
 ‘ them any foreign Forces, or any other Forces
 ‘ raised without his Majesty’s Authority, and Consent
 ‘ of the two Houses of Parliament; and they
 ‘ should use their utmost Endeavour to suppress all
 ‘ Forces whatsoever raised without such Authority
 ‘ and Consent; and they should seize all Arms and
 ‘ Ammunition provided for any such Forces.

‘ They likewise proposed to the King, that he
 ‘ would remove the Garrison out of *Newcastle*,
 ‘ and all other Towns, Castles, and Forts where
 ‘ any Garrisons had been placed by him since these
 ‘ Troubles; and that the Fortifications might be
 ‘ likewise slighted, and the Towns and Forts left
 ‘ in such State as they were in the Year 1636;
 ‘ and that all other Towns and Castles in his
 ‘ Hands, wherein there had been formerly Garrisons,
 ‘ might be committed to such Persons, nominated
 ‘ by him, as the Houses should confide in, and under
 ‘ such Instructions as were formerly mentioned;
 ‘ and that the new Garrisons should

‘ not

not be renewed, or the Fortifications repaired, without the Consent of the King and both Houses of Parliament: That the Ships should be delivered into the Charge of such a Noble Person as the King should nominate to be Lord High-Admiral of *England*, and the two Houses confide in; who should receive that Office by Letters Patent, *quamdiu se bene gesserit*, and should have Power to nominate and appoint all subordinate Commanders and Officers, and have all other Powers appertaining to the Office of High-Admiral; which Ships he should employ for the Defence of the Kingdom, against all foreign Forces whatsoever, and for the Safeguard of Merchants, Securing of Trade, the Guarding of *Ireland*, and the Intercepting of all Supplies to be carried to the Rebels; and should use his utmost Endeavours to suppress all Forces which should be raised by any Person without his Majesty's Authority, and Consent of the Lords and Commons in Parliament; and should seize all Arms and Ammunition provided for Supply of any such Forces.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

To this Answer, by which they required, at least, to go whole Sharers with him in his Sovereignty, the King replied, ' That he knew not what Proportion of his Revenue had been made Use of by his two Houses, but he had Reason to believe, if much of it had not been used, very much remained still in their Hands; his whole Revenue being so stopped and seized on, by the Orders of one or both Houses, even to the taking of his Money out of his Exchequer and Mint, and Bonds forced from his Cofferer's Clerk, for the Provisions of his Household, that very little had come to his Use for his own Support; but he would be well contented to allow whatsoever had been employed in the Maintenance of his Children, and to receive the Arrears due to himself, and to be sure of his own for the future. He was likewise willing to restore all Monies taken for his Use, by any Authority from him, up-

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

on any Bills assigned to other Purposes, being
 ‘assur’d he had received very little, or nothing, that
 ‘Way: And he expected, likewise, that Satisfac-
 ‘tion should be made by them for all those several
 ‘vast Sums received and diverted to other Pur-
 ‘poses, by Orders of one or both Houses, which
 ‘ought to have been paid, by the Act of Pacifi-
 ‘cation, to his Subjects of *Scotland*, or employed
 ‘for the Discharge of the Debts of the Kingdom;
 ‘or, by other Acts of Parliament, for the Relief of
 ‘his poor Protestant Subjects in *Ireland*.

‘For what concerned his Magazines; he was
 ‘content that all the Arms and Ammunition,
 ‘taken out of his Magazines, which did re-
 ‘main in the Hands of both Houses, or of Persons
 ‘employed by them, should be, as soon as the
 ‘Treaty was concluded, delivered into the Tower
 ‘of *London*; and that whatsoever should be want-
 ‘ing of the Proportions taken by them, should be
 ‘supplied by them, with all convenient Speed, in
 ‘Kind; which, he said, should be committed to,
 ‘and continued in, the Custody of the sworn Offi-
 ‘cers, to whose Places the same belong’d: And
 ‘if any of those Officers had already forfeited, or
 ‘hereafter should forfeit, that Trust, by any Mis-
 ‘demeanors, his Majesty would by no Means de-
 ‘fend them from the Justice of the Law: That he
 ‘always intended to restore such Arms and Am-
 ‘munition, which he had been compelled to take
 ‘from any Persons and Places, when his own had
 ‘been taken from him; and would make them
 ‘Recompence as soon as his own Stores were re-
 ‘stored to him.

‘To whatsoever they proposed for the slighting
 ‘all Fortifications, and reducing all Garrisons
 ‘which had been made since the Beginning of
 ‘the Troubles, and leaving them in the State
 ‘they were before, the King fully and absolutely
 ‘consented; and that the old Castles and Garri-
 ‘sons should be reduced to their antient Propor-
 ‘tion and Establishment; but, for the Governors
 ‘and Commanders of them, he said, That the
 ‘Cinque-

'Cinque-Ports were already in the Custody of a Noble Person, against whom he knew no just Exception; and who had such a legal Interest therein, that he could not, with Justice, remove him from it, untill some sufficient Cause were made appear to him; but he was very willing, if he should at any Time be found guilty of any thing that might make him unworthy of that Trust, that he might be proceeded against according to the Rules of Justice: That the Government of the Town of *Portsmouth*, and all other Forts, Castles, and Towns, as were formerly kept by Garrisons, should be put into the Hands of such Persons, against whom no just Exceptions could be made; all of them being, before these Troubles, by Letters Patent, granted to several Persons, against any of whom he knew not any Exceptions, who should be removed, if just Cause should be given for the same. The Warden of the Cinque-Ports, and all other Governors and Commanders of the Towns and Castles, should keep their Charges, as by the Law they ought to do, and for the King's Service, and Safety of the Kingdom; and they should not admit into any of them foreign Forces, or other Forces, raised or brought in to them contrary to Law; but should use their utmost Endeavours to suppress such Forces; and should seize all Arms and Ammunition, which, by the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom, they ought to seize.

An. 19. Car. 1.
 1643.
 April.

'To that Part which concern'd the Ships, the King told them, 'That he expected his own Ships should be delivered to him, as by the Law they ought to be; and that when he should think fit to nominate a Lord High-Admiral of *England*, it should be such a Person against whom no just Exception could be made; and if any should be, he would always leave him to his due Trial and Examination; and he would grant his Office to him by such Letters Patent, as had been used. In the mean Time he would govern the Admiralty

216 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

ralty by Commission, as had been in all Times accustomed; and whatsoever Ships should be set out by him, or his Authority, should be employed for the Defence of the Kingdom against all foreign Forces whatsoever, for the Safeguard of Merchants, Securing of Trade, Guarding of *Ireland*, and the Intercepting of all Supplies to be carried to the Rebels; and they should use their utmost Endeavours to suppress all Forces which should be raised, by any Person whatsoever, against the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom; and to seize all Arms and Ammunition provided for the Supply of any such Forces.

It is evident to all Men where the Difference now lay between them, being Whether the King would reserve the Disposal of those Offices and Places of Trust to himself, (which all Kings had enjoyed, and was indeed a Part of his Regality) or Whether he would be content with such a Nomination, as, being to pass, and depend upon their Approbation, no Man should ever be admitted to them, who was nominated by him. The Committee, upon his Majesty's Answer, desired to know, Whether he did intend that both Houses should express their Confidence of the Persons, to whose Trust those Places were to be committed; for that they were directed by their Instructions, that, if his Majesty was pleased to assent thereunto, and to nominate Persons of Quality to receive the Charge of them, that they should certify it to both Houses of Parliament; that thereupon they might express their Confidence in those Persons, or humbly desire his Majesty to name others, none of which Persons to be removed during three Years next ensuing, without just Cause, to be approved by both Houses; and if any should be so removed, or die within that Space, the Persons to be put in their Places to be such as the two Houses should confide in.

The King answered, That he did not intend that the Houses should express their Confidence

of

‘ of the Persons to whose Trusts those Places should An, 19. Car. I.
 ‘ be committed ; but only that they should have Li- 1643.
 ‘ berty, upon any just Exception, to proceed against
 ‘ any such Persons according to Law ; his Majesty
 ‘ being resolved not to protect them against the Pub-
 ‘ lic Justice. When any of the Places should be
 ‘ void, he well knew the Nomination and free Elec-
 ‘ tion of those who should succeed, to be a Right
 ‘ belonging to, and inherent in, his Majesty ; and
 ‘ having been enjoyed by all his Royal Progenitors,
 ‘ he could not believe his well-affected Subjects de-
 ‘ sired to limit him in that Right ; and desired they
 ‘ would be satisfied with this Answer, or give him
 ‘ any Reasons to alter his Resolution, and he would
 ‘ comply with them.’

April.

They told him, ‘ There could be no good and
 ‘ firm Peace hoped for, if there were not a Cure
 ‘ found out for the Fears and Jealousies ; and they
 ‘ knew none sure, but this which they had propo-
 ‘ sed.’

‘ The King replied, ‘ That he rather expected
 ‘ Reasons grounded upon Law, to have shewed
 ‘ him, by the Law, that he had not that Right he
 ‘ pretended, or that they had a Right superior to
 ‘ his, in what was now in Question ; or that they
 ‘ would have shewed him some legal Reason, why
 ‘ the Persons trusted by him were incapable of such
 ‘ a Trust, than that they would only have insist-
 ‘ ed upon Fears and Jealousies ; of which as he
 ‘ knew no Ground, so he must be ignorant of the
 ‘ Cure. That the Argument they used might ex-
 ‘ tend to the depriving him of, or at least sharing
 ‘ with him in, all his just Regal Power ; since
 ‘ Power, as well as Forces, might be the Object of
 ‘ Fears and Jealousies ; and there would be always
 ‘ a Power left to hurt, whilst there was any left to
 ‘ protect and defend.’ He told them, ‘ If he had
 ‘ as much Inclination, as he had more Right, to
 ‘ Fears and Jealousies, he might, with more Rea-
 ‘ sons, have insisted upon an Addition of Power, as
 ‘ a Security to enable him to keep his Forts when
 ‘ he had them ; since it appeared it was not so great,
 ‘ but

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

‘ but that they had been able to take them from
 ‘ him, than they to make any Difficulty to restore
 ‘ them to him in the same Case they were before.
 ‘ But, he said, as he was himself content with, so,
 ‘ he took God to Witness, his greatest Desire was
 ‘ to observe always, and maintain, the Law of the
 ‘ Land; and expected the same from his Subjects;
 ‘ and believed the mutual Observance of that Rule,
 ‘ and neither of them to fear what the Law feared
 ‘ not, to be, on both Parts, a better Cure for
 ‘ that dangerous Disease of Fears and Jealousies,
 ‘ and a better Means to establish a happy and per-
 ‘ petual Peace, than for him to divest himself of
 ‘ those Trusts, which the Law of the Land had
 ‘ settled in the Crown alone, to preserve the Power
 ‘ and Dignity of the Prince, for the better Protec-
 ‘ tion of the Subject and of the Law, and to avoid
 ‘ those dangerous Distractions, which the Interest
 ‘ of any Sharers with him would have infallibly pro-
 ‘ duced.’

‘ The Committee neither offered to answer his
 Majesty’s Reasons, nor to oppose other Reasons to
 weigh against them; but only said, ‘ That they
 ‘ were commanded, by their Instructions, to insist
 ‘ upon the Desires of both Houses formerly expres-
 ‘ sed.’

To which the King made no other Answer than,
 ‘ That he conceived it all the Justice in the World
 ‘ for him to insist, that what was, by Law, his
 ‘ own, and had been, contrary to Law, taken from
 ‘ him, should be fully restored to him, without
 ‘ conditioning to impose any new Limitations upon
 ‘ him, or his Ministers, which were not formerly
 ‘ required from them by the Law; and he thought
 ‘ it most unreasonable to be pressed to diminish
 ‘ his own just Rights himself, because others had
 ‘ violated and usurped them.’ This was the Sum
 of what passed in the Treaty upon that Propo-
 sition.

‘ To the first Proposition of the two Houses,
*That his Majesty would be pleased to disband his Ar-
 mies, as they likewise would be ready to disband all*
their

their Forces, which they had raised, and that he would be pleased to return to his Parliament : An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

‘ The King answered, ‘ That he was as ready and willing that all Armies should be disbanded, as any Person whatsoever ; and conceived the best Way to it would be a happy and speedy Conclusion of the present Treaty ; which, if both Houses would contribute as much as he would do to it, would be suddenly effected. And as he desired nothing more than to be with his two Houses, so he would repair thither as soon as he could possibly do it with his Honour and Safety.

April.

‘ The Committee asked him, ‘ If, by a happy and speedy Conclusion of the present Treaty, he intended a Conclusion upon the two first Propositions, or a Conclusion of the Treaty in all the Propositions of both Parts ?

‘ The King, who well knew it would be very ungracious to deny the Disbanding of the Armies, till all the Propositions were agreed, some whereof would require much Time, answered, ‘ That he intended such a Conclusion of, or in, the Treaty, as there might be a clear Evidence to himself, and his Subjects, of a future Peace, and no Ground left for the Continuance, or Growth, of those bloody Dissentions ; which, he doubted not, might be obtained, if both Houses would consent that the Treaty should proceed without farther Interruption, or Limitation of Days.’

‘ They asked him, ‘ What he intended should be a clear Evidence to him, and his good Subjects, of a future Peace, and no Ground left for the Continuance, and Growth, of those bloody Dissentions ?

‘ His Majesty told them, ‘ If the Conclusion of the present Treaty upon his first Proposition, and the first Proposition of both Houses, should be so full and perfectly made, that the Law of the Land might have a full, free, and uninterrupted Course, for the Defence and Preservation of the Rights of his Majesty, and of themselves, and the rest of his Subjects, there would be thence a clear Evidence

‘ dence

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

April.

dence to him, and all Men, of a future Peace; and
 ' it would be such a Conclusion as he intended, never
 ' meaning that both Armies should remain undif-
 ' banded untill the Propositions on both Sides were
 ' fully concluded.'

' To the other Clause of their own Proposition, concerning the King's Return to the Parliament, they said, ' They had no Instructions to treat upon it;' which the King much wonder'd at; and finding that they had no other Authority to treat, or debate what was necessary to be done in order to Disbanding, but only to press him to appoint a Day for the actual Disbanding; and that the Forces in the North, where he had a great Army, and they had none, might be first disbanded, he endeavour'd to draw them to some Propositions upon his Return to the Parliament; from whence Expedients would naturally result, if they pursued that heartily, which would conclude a general Peace. And it seem'd very strange, that, after so many Discourses of the King's Absence from the Houses, from whence they had taught the People to believe that most of the present Evils flow'd and proceeded when a Treaty was now enter'd upon, and that was a Part of their own first Proposition, that their Committee should have no Instructions or Authority to treat upon it. After this they received new Instructions, ' To declare to his Majesty the Desire of both Houses, for his coming to his Parliament; which, they said, they had often express'd ' with full Offers of Security to his Royal Person, ' agreeable to their Duty and Allegiance; and they ' knew no Cause why he might not repair thither ' with Honour and Safety.'

' When the King found he could not engage them in that Argument to make any particular Overture or Invitation to him; and that the Committee, who express'd Willingness enough, had not in Truth the least Power to promote, or contribute to an Accommodation, lest they should make the People believe that he had a Desire to continue the War, because he consented not to their

their Proposition of Disbanding the Armies, he sent An. 29. Car. I.
this Message, by an Express of his own, to the two
Houses, after he had first communicated it to their
Committee.

1643.

April.

Oxford, April 12, 1643.

CHARLES R.

TO shew to the whole World, how earnestly his Majesty longs for Peace, and that no Success shall make him desire the Continuance of his Army to any other End, or for any longer Time, than that; and untill Things may be so settled, as that the Law may have a full, free, and uninterrupted Course, for the Defence and Preservation of the Rights of his Majesty, both Houses, and his good Subjects:

1. *As soon as his Majesty is satisfied in his first Proposition, concerning his own Revenue, Magazines, Ships, and Forts, in which he desires nothing, but that the just, known, legal Rights of his Majesty (devolved to him from his Progenitors) and of the Persons trusted by him, which have violently been taken from both, be restored unto him, and unto them; unless any just and legal Exception against any of the Persons trusted by him (which are yet unknown to his Majesty) can be made appear unto him:*

2. *As soon as all the Members of both Houses shall be restored to the same Capacity of sitting and voting in Parliament, as they had upon the first of January, 1641; the same, of Right, belonging unto them by their Birth-rights, and the free Election of those that sent them; and having been voted from them for adhering to his Majesty in these Distractions; his Majesty not intending that this should extend either to the Bishops, whose Votes have been taken away by Bill, or to such, in whose Places, upon new Writs, new Elections have been made:*

3. *As soon as his Majesty, and both Houses, may be secured from such tumultuous Assemblies, as, to the great Breach of the Privileges, and the high Dishonour of Parliaments, have formerly assembled about both Houses, and awed the Members of the same; and*

occa-

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

occasioned two several Complaints from the Lords' House, and two several Desires of that House to the House of Commons, to join in a Declaration against them; the complying with which Desire might have prevented all these miserable Distractions which have ensued; which Security, his Majesty conceives, can be only settled by adjourning the Parliament to some other Place, at the least twenty Miles from London; the Choice of which his Majesty leaves to both Houses:

His Majesty will, most chearfully and readily, consent that both Armies be immediately disbanded, and give a present Meeting to both his Houses of Parliament at the Time and Place, at, and to which, the Parliament shall be agreed to be adjourned: His Majesty being most confident that the Law will then recover due Credit and Estimation; and that upon a free Debate, in a full and peaceable Convention of Parliament, such Provisions will be made against seditious Preaching and Printing against his Majesty, and the established Laws, which have been one of the chief Causes of the present Distractions; and such Care will be taken concerning the legal and known Rights of his Majesty, and the Property and Liberty of his Subjects, that whatsoever hath been published or done, in or by Colour of any illegal Declaration, Ordinance, or Order of one or both Houses, or any Committee of either of them, and particularly the Power to raise Arms without his Majesty's Consent, will be in such Manner recalled, disclaimed, and provided against, that no Seed will remain for the like to spring out of for the future, to disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, and to endanger the very Being of it. And in such a Convention his Majesty is resolved, by his Readiness to consent to whatsoever shall be proposed to him, by Bill, for the real Good of his Subjects (and particularly for the better Discovery, and speedier Conviction of Recusants; for the Education of the Children of Papists by Protestants in the Protestant Religion; for the Prevention of Practices of Papists against the State, and the due Execution of the Laws, and true

levying

levying of the Penalties against them) to make known An. 19. Car. I.
to all the World, how causeless those Fears and Jealousies have been, which have been raised against him; 1643.
and by that so distracted this miserable Kingdom. }
And if this Offer of his Majesty be not consented April.
to, (in which he asks nothing for which there is not
apparent Justice on his Side, and in which he defers
many Things highly concerning both himself and
People, till a full and peaceable Convention of Par-
liament, which in Justice he might now require)
his Majesty is confident that it will then appear, to
all the World, not only who is most desirous of Peace,
and whose Fault it is that both Armies are not now
disbanded; but who have been the true and first Cause
that this Peace was ever interrupted, or those Ar-
mies raised, and the Beginning or Continuance of
the War; and the Destruction and Desolation of
this poor Kingdom (which is too likely to ensue) will
not, by the most interested, passionate, or prejudicate
Person, be imputed to his Majesty.

‘To this Message the two Houses returned no Answer to the King, but required the Committee to return to *Westminster* (having been in *Oxford* with his Majesty just twenty Days) with such positive Circumstances, that the House of Commons enjoined their Members to begin their Journey the same Day, which they obeyed; though it was so late, that they were forced to very inconvenient Accommodations; and, at their Return, some of them were looked upon with great Jealousy, as Persons engaged by the King, and disinclined to the Parliament; and this Jealousy prevailed so far, that Mr. Martin opened a Letter from the Earl of *Northumberland* to his own Lady, presuming he should therein have discovered some Combination; and this Insolence was not disliked.’—Thus far the Noble Historian.

The Proceedings of both Houses, in relation to this Intercepting of the Earl of *Northumberland*’s Letter, will appear more at large, from their *Journals*, in its proper Order of Time.

We

224 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

April.

We now proceed to give Mr. *Whitlocke's* Account of what pass'd, between the King and the above-mentioned Committee of Parliament, at *Oxford*.

And Mr. *Whitlocke's* Account of that Treaty.

THE King used the Commissioners with great Favour and Civility; and his General, *Rutben*, and divers of his Lords and Officers, came frequently to their Table, and they had very friendly Discourses and Treatments together. The King himself did them the Honour sometimes to accept of part of their Wine and Provisions, which the Earl of *Northumberland* sent to him, when they had any Thing extraordinary.

‘ Their Instructions were very strict, and tied them up to treat with none but the King himself, whom they often attended at his Lodgings in *Christ-Church*: They had Access at all Times when they desired it, and were allowed by his Majesty a very free Debate with him.

‘ He had commonly waiting on him, when he treated with them, Prince *Rupert*, the Lord-Keeper *Littleton*, the Earl of *Southampton*, the Lord Chief Justice *Banks*, and several other Lords of his Council, who never debated any Matters with them; but gave their Opinions to the King in those Things which he demanded of them, and sometimes would put the King in Mind of some particular Things; but otherwise they did not speak at all.

‘ In this Treaty the King manifested his great Parts and Abilities, Strength of Reason, and Quickness of Apprehension, with much Patience in hearing what was objected against him; wherein he allowed all Freedom, and would himself sum up the Arguments, and give a most clear Judgment upon them.

‘ His Unhappiness was, that he had a better Opinion of other Judgments than of his own, tho’ they were weaker than his own; and of this the Parliament’s Commissioners had Experience to their great Trouble.

‘ They

‘ They were often waiting on the King, and debating some Points of the Treaty with him untill Midnight, before they could come to a Conclusion. Upon one of the most material Points they pressed his Majesty with their Reasons, and best Arguments they could use, to grant what they desired.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

‘ The King said, ‘ He was fully satisfied, and ‘ promised to give them his Answer in Writing according to their Desire ; but, because it was then ‘ past Midnight, and too late to put it into Writing, ‘ he would have it drawn up the next Morning ‘ (when he commanded them to wait on him again); ‘ and then he would give them his Answer in Writing, as it was now agreed upon.’

‘ They went to their Lodgings full of joyful Hopes to receive this Answer the next Morning ; and which, being given, would have much conduced to a happy Issue and Success of this Treaty ; and they had the King’s Word for it, and they waited on him the next Morning at the Hour appointed.

‘ But, instead of that Answer which they expected, and were promised, the King gave them a Paper quite contrary to what was concluded the Night before, and very much tending to the Breach of the Treaty. They did humbly expostulate this with his Majesty, and pressed him upon his Royal Word, and the ill Consequences which they feared would follow upon this his new Paper.

‘ But the King told them, ‘ He had altered his ‘ Mind ; and that this Paper, which he now gave ‘ them, was his Answer, which he was now resolved to make upon their last Debate :’ And they could obtain no other from him ; which occasioned much Sadness and Trouble to them.

‘ Some of his own Friends, of whom the Commissioners enquired touching this Passage, informed them, That after they were gone from the King, and that his Council were also gone away, some of his Bed-Chamber (and they went higher) hearing from him what Answer he had promised,

226 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

and doubting it would tend to such an Issue of the Treaty as they did not wish, they being rather for the Continuance of the War, never left pressing and persuading of the King, till they prevailed with him to change his former Resolutions, and to give Order for his Answer to be drawn as it was now delivered.

‘ The Treaty, upon the King’s Propositions, as well as upon the Commissioners, going slowly on, and their Instructions being strict, and such as they could not shew to the King when he desired it, he thought fit, *April 12*, to send a Message to the Parliament during the Treaty.

[Here follow the Heads of this Message, which we have already given at Length, p. 221.]

‘ This being intimated to the Commissioners, they dissuaded the sending of it, as that which they feared might break off the Treaty, and the Improbability that the Houses would adjourn, and leave the City of *London*, their best Friends and Strength, and put a Discontent upon them.

‘ Yet the King was prevailed with to send it; and, upon the Receipt of it by the Houses, they presently resolved to call away their Commissioners, and sent their Orders to them to return to the Parliament, which they obeyed; and so this Treaty, having continued from the 4th of *March* to the 15th of *April*, was now dissolved, and all their Labours and Hazards become fruitless and of no Effect; and all good *Englishmen*, Lovers of the Peace of their Country, were troubled and disappointed.

‘ When they were come to the Parliament they gave them a particular Account of all their Negotiation, wherewith they were so well satisfied, that they ordered the Thanks of the House to be given them; and, by Vote, approved of all their Proceedings.’

Thus much for the fruitless Treaty of *Oxford*: We now return to the other Proceedings of both Houses.

The

The Month of *April* begins with an Ordinance An. 19. Car. I. 1643. of Parliament, which, afterwards, proved the most oppressive to the Royal Party in the Kingdom, of any Thing yet done by either House. This was the Ordinance for seizing and sequestering the Real and Personal Estates of Delinquents. The whole is in *Rushworth*, except the Names of the Sequestrators, which, probably, were omitted in those Collections, to prevent giving Offence to particular Persons at that Time: But these we have supplied from the Original Edition of this Ordinance, published by the Authority of both Houses. By this List the Reader will see who were the Persons the Parliament then nominated to be Sequestrators throughout the whole Kingdom; though some of them, there named, had too much Regard for their Character, or their Safety, to put the Office in Execution; and others of them, afterwards, declared in Favour of the King. The List runs thus:

BEDFORDSHIRE.

SIR *Beauchamp St. John* and Sir *John Burgoyne*, Names of the Baronets; Sir *Thomas Alston*, Knt. and Bart. Persons appointed to sequester the Estates of Sir *Roger Burgoyne*, Sir *Oliver Luke*, and Sir *Samuel Luke*, Knights; *Thomas Rolt*, *Thomas Sadler*, *James Beverley*, *Humphry Monoux*, *Edward Osborn*, *Robert Stanton*, and *Samuel Brown*, Esquires. such as adhere to the King.

BEDFORD Town. The Mayor for the Time being.

BERKSHIRE.

Sir *Francis Pile*, Bart. Sir *Francis Knollis*, jun. Knt. *Peregrine Hobby*, *Henry Martin*, *Roger Knight*, *Henry Powle*, *Thomas Fettiplace*, and *Tanfield Vachell*, Esquires.

BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Ingoldsby*, Knt. *Henry Bulstrode*, *Thomas Tyrrel*, and *Richard Grenville*, Esquires; Sir *Peter Temple*, Bart. Sir *Thomas Sanders*, Knt. *Anthony Ratcliffe*, and *Thomas Westall*, Esquires; Sir *William Andrews*, Knt. *Bulstrode Whitlocke*,

228 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. *John Hampden, Arthur Goodwyn, and Richard Win-*
wood, Esquires.

April,

CAMBRIDGESHIRE.

Sir Dudley North, Sir John Cuts, and Sir Thomas Martin, Knights; Capt. Symonds; Dudley Pope, Esq; Sir Miles Sandys, Knt. Francis Russell, Oliver Cromwell, William Fisher, Thomas Thompson, Thomas Becket, Walter Clopton, Robert Castle, Thomas Bendish, John Welbore, Robert Clark, Michael Dalton, jun. Thomas Parker, Thomas Duckett, John Hobart, Thomas Castle, George Clapthorn, John Towers, Edward Leeds, and William Marsh, Esquires.

CAMBRIDGE Town and University. The Mayor for the Time being; Oliver Cromwell, John Lowry, William Welbore, Talbot Pepys Recorder, John Sherwood, Samuel Spaulden, Thomas French, and Robert Robson, Esquires.

CHESHIRE.

Sir George Booth, Knt. and Bart. Sir William Brereton, Bart. Thomas Stanley, Henry Manwaring, Henry Brook, John Bradshaw, Robert Duckensfield, Henry Vernon, John Crewe, and William Marbury, Esquires.

CHESTER City. William Jaunce, Mayor; John Aldersey, Peter Leigh, and William Edwards, Merchants.

CORNWALL.

Sir Richard Carew, Bart. Francis Buller, Alexander Carew, John Trefusis, John St. Aubin, Richard Brissey, John Moyle, Francis Godolphin of Tremonegue, Thomas Gawen, John Carter, and Thomas Arundell, Esquires.

CUMBERLAND.

William Lawson, William Briscoe, Thomas Lamplugh, Richard Barwis, and John Barwis, sen. Esquires.

DEVONSHIRE.

Sir George Chudleigh, Sir John Pool, and Sir John Northcote, Baronets; Sir Edmund Fowell, Sir Samuel Rolle, Sir Shilston Calmady, and Sir Nicholas Martin, Knights; Sir Francis Drake, Bart. Robert

bert Savery, Henry Walrond, Francis Rous, Ed. An. 19. Car. I.
mund Prideaux, Henry Wroth, Hugh Fortescue, Ar-
thur Upton, John Yeo, William Frye, and George
Trobbridge, Esquires; the Mayor of Plymouth for the
Time being.

1643.

April.

EXON City. Christopher Clark, Mayor; Richard
Sanders, Thomas Crossing, Walter White, and John
Hakewill, Aldermen; James Gould, Sheriff.

DERBYSHIRE.

Sir John Curzon, and Sir John Gell, Baronets;
Sir John Coke, Knt. Francis Revitt, Nathaniel Hal-
lowes, and James Abney, Esquires.

DORSETSHIRE.

Denzill Holles, Esq; Sir Thomas Trenchard and
Sir Walter Erle, Knights; John Brown, Thomas
Tregonall; John Bingham, John Hanham, John
Trenchard, Dennis Bond, Richard Broderope, Wil-
liam Savage, Robert Butler, and William Sydenham,
jun. Richard Rose, John Henley, Thomas Ceely, and
Thomas Erle, Esquires.

POOL Town and County. Henry Martin, Mayor;
George Skut, William Skut, Anthony Wait, William
Williams, Aaron Durell, Richard Mayer, and Havi-
land Healy, Aldermen.

DORCHESTER Town. The Mayor for the Time
being; Mr. John Hill and Mr. Richard Bury.

DURHAM.

Henry Warmouth, George Lilbourn, Thomas Mit-
ford, Robert Hutton, Thomas Shadforth, Clement
Falthrop, Richard Lilbourn, Francis Wren, John
Blakiston, Henry Draper, and John Brackenbury,
Esquires.

ESSEX.

Sir Thomas Barrington, Knt. and Bart. Sir Henry
Mildmay of Wanstead; Sir Martin Lumley and Sir
Harbottle Grimston, Knights and Baronets; Sir
Richard Everard and Sir William Hicks, Baronets;
Sir Thomas Cheek, Sir Henry Halcroft, Sir William
Rowe, Sir Thomas Honeywood, Sir William Martin,
and Sir John Barrington, Knights; Sir William Mas-
ham, Bart. William Masham, John Wright, Oli-

230 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
April.

Over Raymond, Harbottle Grimston, John Sayer, John Burket, Anthony Luther, Timothy Middleton, Thomas Coke, Deane Tindal, James Herne, William Goldingham, John Atwood, John Sorrell, Richard Harbackenden, Henry Wiseman, Robert Smith, Robert Browne, William Atwood, Nathaniel Bacon, John Meade, Robert Wiseman of Mayland, Isaac Allen, ——— Hasely, Samuel Friborne, Peter Whitcombe, Robert Young, Jeremy Aylet, William Col-lard, Robert Crane, Robert Calthrop, and Arthur Barnardiston, Esquires.

COLCHESTER Town. The Mayor for the Time being; *Harbottle Grimston and Henry Barrington, Esquires.*

GLOUCESTERSHIRE, with the City of Gloucester and County thereof.

Sir Robert Cooke, Knt. Nathaniel Stephens, John George, Edward Stephens, and John Stephens, Esquires; Thomas Pury, Alderman; Sir John Seymour, Knt. Thomas Hodges and John Coddington, Esquires.

HEREFORDSHIRE.

Sir Robert Harley, Knight of the Bath; Sir Richard Hopton, Knt. Walter Kirle, Edward Broughton, and Henry Vaughan, Esquires.

HEREFORD City. *Sir Robert Harley, Knight of the Bath; Walter Kirle, Richard Hobson, John Flacket, and Henry Vaughan, Esquires.*

HERTFORDSHIRE.

Charles Lord Viscount Cranborne; Robert Cecil, Esq; Sir John Garrat and Sir John Reade, Baronets; Sir Thomas Dacres, Sir William Litton, and Sir John Witterong, Knights; Richard Jennings, Ralph Freeman, William Lemon, William Priestley, John Heydon, Alexander Wild, Richard Porter, and Adam Washington, Esquires.

ST. ALBAN'S. The Mayor for the Time being; *John Robotham, Ralph Pemberton, and Graveley Norton, Esquires.*

HUNTINGDONSHIRE.

Sir Thomas Cotton, Bart. Sir John Hewit, Knt. Onslow Winch, Terril Jocelyne, Thomas Temple, John

Of ENGLAND. 231

*John Castle, Oliver Cromwell, Abraham Burwell, An. 19. Car. I.
Edward Montague, and John Bulkley, Esquires.*

1643.

April.

KENT.

Sir *Thomas Walsingham* and Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Knights; Sir *John Sidley*, Sir *Edward Hales*, Sir *Humphry Tufton*, and Sir *Henry Heyman*, Knights and Baronets; Sir *Michael Livesey*, Bart. Sir *Henry Vane*, jun. Sir *Edward Scot*, Sir *Edward Bois*, Sir *William Brook*, Sir *Peter Wroth*, Sir *George Sandys*, Sir *John Honeywood*, Sir *James Oxenden*, and Sir *Richard Hardresse*, Knights; *Augustine Skinner*, *Richard Lee*, *Thomas Selliard*, *John Bois*, sen. *Thomas Blunt*, and *Samuel Short*, Esquires.

CANTERBURY City. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *William Man*, Knt. Sir *Edward Master*, Knt. *John Nutt* and *Thomas Courthorpe*, Esquires; *Avery Savine*, Alderman.

ROCHESTER City. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Sir *William Brooke*, and Sir *Thomas Walsingham*; *Richard Lee*, Esq; the Mayor of *Tenterden* for the Time being; *William Bois*, *William James*, *Mark Dixwell*, and *Henry Samford*, Esquires.

LANCASHIRE.

Sir *Ralph Ashton* and Sir *Thomas Stanley*, Barons; *Ralph Ashton* of *Downham*, *Ralph Ashton* of *Middleton*, *Richard Shuttleworth*, *Alexander Rigby*, *John Moore*, *Richard Holland*, *Edward Butterworth*, *John Bradshaw*, *William Ashurst*, *Peter Egerton*, *George Dodding*, *Nicholas Cunliff*, *John Starkey*, *Thomas Birch*, and *Thomas Fell*, Esquires; *Robert Cunliff*, *Robert Curwen*, and *John Nowell*, Gentlemen.

LEICESTERSHIRE.

Henry Lord Grey of *Ruthyn*, *Thomas Lord Grey* of *Groby*; Sir *Arthur Haslrigge*, Bart. Sir *Edward Hartop* and Sir *Thomas Hartop*, Knights; *William Hewet*, *John Bembridge*, *Peter Temple*, *George Ashby*, *William Roberts*, *Richard Bent*, *Arthur Stanley*, *William Danvers*, and *John Goodman*, Esquires.

LEI-

232 The Parliamentary History

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

LEICESTER Town. Richard Ludlam, Mayor;
William Stanley, Alderman.

April.

LINCOLNSHIRE.

For the Parts of Lindsey. Sir John Wray, Knt. and Bart. Sir Edward Ascough and Sir Samuel Oldfield, Knights; John Wray, Willoughby Hickman, Edward Whichcot, Edmond Anderson, Edward Rofiter, and John Broxholme, Esquires; Sir William Armyn, Bart. Sir Hamond Whichcot, Knt. Sir John Brownlow and Sir Thomas Trollop, Baronets; Thomas Hatcher; Sir Christopher Wray; Thomas Grantham, Thomas Lister, and John Archer, Esquires; Sir William Brownlow.

For the Parts of Holland. Sir Anthony Irby; William Ellis and John Harrington, Esquires; the Mayor of Boston for the Time being; Thomas Hall, Thomas Welby, and — Willefby, Esquires.

LINCOLN City and the Close. The Mayor for the Time being; Thomas Grantham and John Broxholme, Esquires; Robert Moorecroft, William Watson, and Stephen Dawson, Aldermen.

MIDDLESEX.

Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Bart. Sir Edward Barkham, Knt. and Bart. Sir Richard Sprignal, Bart. Sir John Franklyn, Sir John Hippesley, Sir William Roberts, Sir James Harrington, and Sir Robert Wood, Knights; Lawrence Whitacre, Justinian Paget, William Swallow, John Hucksley, Thomas Wilcox, John Morris, Richard Dutton, and John Smith, Esquires.

LONDON City, and Jurisdiction of the Lord Mayor. The Lord Mayor and the Aldermen, Aldermen's Deputies, and Common Councilmen of the said City.

WESTMINSTER City and Liberties. Sir Robert Pye, Sir William Ashton, and Sir John Corbet, Knights; John Glyn, John Trenchard, and William Wheeler, Esquires; John Brigham, George Beverbasset, Anthony Withers, and William Barns, Gentlemen; Josias Fendall, William Bell, — Tuckey

key, —
Esquires.
NORFOL

Sir T
John Po
Miles H
John Co
Samuel S
the Baili
Percival
my, Rob
Thomas
ton, Esc
liam He
Esquires
Sir Joh
John To

Sir R
John N
Sir Rich
nard, E
ton, an
den, Ba
Yelverts
man, a
NOR
being;
men.

Sir J
Thomas
den, an
NEV
For
Sleigh,
Salkeld

Fra
and S

key, ——— Colchester, and Stephen Higgens, An. 19. Car. I.
Esquires. 1643.

NORFOLK County, and City of Norwich with the
County thereof.

April.

Sir Thomas Woodhouse, Sir John Holland, Sir John Potts, and Sir John Hobart, Baronets; Sir Miles Hobart and Sir Thomas Huggen, Knights; John Cook, John Spelman, Philip Beddingfield, and Samuel Smith, Esquires; the Sheriffs of Norwich; the Bailiffs of Yarmouth; Thomas Toll and John Percival, of Lynn; Thomas Windham, Francis Jeremy, Robert Wood, Gregory Causell, John Haughton, Thomas Weld, Martin Sedley, and Thomas Sotherton, Esquires; Sir Edmond Mountford, Knt. William Heveningham, William Cook, and Robert Rich, Esquires; Sir Richard Berney, Sir Isaac Astley, and Sir John Palgrave, Knights; Brigg Fountayn and John Tooly, Esquires.

NORTHAMPTONSHIRE.

Sir Rowland St. John, Knight of the Bath; Sir John Norwich, Knt. Sir Gilbert Pickering, Bart. Sir Richard Samwel, Knt. John Crew, John Barnard, Edward Harvey, Edward Farmer, John Norton, and John Chappoole, Esquires; Sir John Dryden, Bart. Richard Knightley, Esq; Sir Christopher Yelverton, Knt. and Bart. Zouch Tate, Philip Holman, and Thomas Pentlow, Esquires.

NORTHAMPTON Town. The Mayor for the Time being; Thomas Martin and John Fisher, Aldermen.

NORTHUMBERLAND.

Sir John Fenwick, Bart. Sir Jo. Delaval, Knt. Thomas Middleton, William Shaftoe, Michael Welden, and Henry Ogle, Esquires.

NEWCASTLE Town. John Blakiston, Esq;

For the Town of BERWICK upon TWEED. John Sleigh, Mayor; Sir Robert Jackson, Knt. Ralph Salkeld, Esq;

NOTTINGHAMSHIRE.

Francis Pierpoint, Esq; Sir Francis Thornehaugh and Sir Thomas Hutchinson, Knights; Francis Thorne-

234 The Parliamentary HISTORY

Anr 19. Car. I.
1643.
April.

Thornehaugh, Joseph Widmerpoole, Robert Reynes, Gilbert Millington, and John Hutchinson, Esquires; Sir Francis Molineux, Knt. Charles White and Henry Ireton, Esquires.

NOTTINGHAM Town and County thereof. The Mayor for the Time being; *James Chadwick, Esq; Huntington Plumtre, M. D. John James, Alderman, and John Gregory, Gent.*

OXFORDSHIRE. ^b

RUTLANDSHIRE.

Sir Edward Harrington, Knt. Evers Armyn, Robert Horsman, John Osborne, Christopher Browne, Robert Horsman, jun. and Thomas Wait, Esquires.

SOMERSETSHIRE.

Sir John Horner, Sir Thomas Wroth, and Sir George Farwell, Knights; Clement Walker, Alexander Popham, William Strode, Richard Cole, John Harrington, John Hippesley, William Long, John Preston, Henry Henley, Henry Stamford, John Pymme, James Ash, and John Ash, Esquires; Roger Hill, George Serle, and Jasper Chaplyn, Gentlemen; Richard Capell, William Bull, Robert Harbin, John Hunt, and Robert Blake, Esquires; the Mayor of Bridgewater that now is.

BRISTOL City. *Richard Aldworth, Mayor; Joseph Jackson, Hugh Browne, Sheriffs; Richard Allworthy, Alderman; Luke Hodges, and Henry Gibbs.*

SOUTHAMPTON County, the Town and County thereof, and the Isle of Wight.

Sir Henry Worsley and Sir William Lewis, Baronets; Sir Thomas Fervois, Sir William Lisle, Sir John Leigh, Sir Henry Clerke, Sir John Compton, and Sir Richard Kingsmill, Knights; Robert Dillington, Robert Wallop, Richard Whitehead, Richard Norton, John Doddington, Richard Fervois, John Lisle, John Button, Edward Hooper, John Bulkley, Thomas Clerke, John Kemp, Richard Major, Francis St. Barbe, Nicholas Love, John Fielder,
Wil-

^b There are no Sequestrators nominated for this County: — As the King at this Time kept his Court at Oxford surrounded with his Army, we presume the Parliament thought it to no Purpose to appoint any.

Of
William
John Pit
Gallop an
ton; and
being.

Sir W
thaniel B
Sir Roge
liam Soa
Parker,
Bacon of
William
Brampte
Vaughan
of Bilso
Thomas
Brewster
Ipswich
Puplet,
Bacon o
ST. I
Cole, —
Aldborou
derman

Sir F
Robert
George
thur O
Sir Ant
ley and
Sander
Evelin
Myn,
Howla
Goodw
Esquir
Gentle

Sir
bert M

William Withers, Thomas Chandler, James Tutt, An. 19. Car. 1.
John Pitman, and John Hooke, Esquires; George
Gallop and Edward Exon, Aldermen of Southamp-
ton; and the Mayor of Winchester for the Time
being.

1643.

April.

SUFFOLK.

Sir *William Playters*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Nathaniel Barnardiston*, Knt. Sir *William Spring*, Bart. Sir *Roger North*, Sir *Thomas Barnardiston*, Sir *William Soame*, Sir *John Wentworth*, and Sir *Philip Parker*, Knights; *William Heveningham*, *Nathaniel Bacon of Froston*, *Nicholas Bacon*, *Maurice Barrow*, *William Blois*, *Henry North*, *Robert Brewster*, *Brampton Gourdon*, *Francis Bacon*, *Theophilus Vaughan of Beckles*, *William Cage*, *William Rivet of Bilson*, *Edmund Harvey*, *John Gourdon*, and *Thomas Coale*, Esquires; *John Basse* and *Francis Brewster*, Gentlemen; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Ipswich* that now are; *John Sicklemere*, *Richard Puplet*, and *John Aldus*, Gentlemen; *Nathaniel Bacon of Ipswich*.

ST. EDMUND'S BURY. *Samuel Moody*, *Thomas Cole*, — *Chaplin*; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Aldborough* for the Time being; *Thomas Gibbs*, Alderman, and *Thomas Johnson*.

SURREY.

Sir *Richard Onslow*, Sir *William Elliot*, and Sir *Robert Parkhurst*, Knights; *Nicholas Stoughton*, *George Evelin of Wotton*, *Henry Weston*, and *Arthur Onslow*, Esquires; Sir *Ambrose Browne*, Bart. Sir *Anthony Vincent*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *John Dignley* and Sir *Matthew Brand*, Knights; *Edward Sanders*, *Robert Holman*, *Robert Houghton*, *George Evelin*, *Francis Drake*, *Thomas Sandys*, *George Myn*, and *William Muscamp*, Esquires; Sir *John Howland* and Sir *John Evelin*, Knights; *Robert Goodwin*, *George Fairwell*, and *John Goodwyn*, Esquires; *Richard Wright* and *Cornelius Cooke*, Gentlemen.

SUSSEX.

Sir *Thomas Pelham*, Bart. *Anthony Stapley*, *Herbert Morley*, *Thomas Whitfield*, *John Baker*, and *Her-*

236 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

April.

Herbert Hay, Esquires; *Herbert Springate* of the *Broyle*, *Ralph Cooper*, *Hall Ravenscroft*, *Edward Appley*, *John Downes*, *William Cawley*, *Edward Higgons*, *Thomas Chute*, *George Oglander*, *George Simpson*, *John Busbridge*, *Thomas Middleton*, and *James Temple*, Esquires; Captains *Thomas Collins*, *Carleton*, and *Everton*.

SALOP.

Sir *John Corbet*, Knt. *William Pierpoint*, *Richard Moore*, *Thomas Witton*, *Thomas Nichols*, *Humphry Mackworth*, *Andrew Lloyd of Aston*, *Lancelot Lee*, *Thomas Hunt*, and *John Corbet*, Esquires.

STAFFORDSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Skeffington*, Knt. *Richard Pyott*, *Michael Rydolph*, *Edward Manwaring*, *Matthew Mortan*, *John Birch*, *Ralph Rudyard*, *Michael Lowe*, *Michael Noble*, and *Edward Leigh*, Esquires; Sir *Walter Wrotesley*, Sir *Edward Littleton*, and Sir *Edward Brereton*, Baronets.

LITCHFIELD City. The Bailiffs and the Sheriff of the said City for the Time being; *Michael Noble*, *Richard Draffgate*, *Richard Baxter*, and *Thomas Burnes*, Gentlemen.

WARWICKSHIRE.

The now Mayor of the City of *Coventry*; Sir *Peter Wentworth*, Knight of the Bath; Sir *Edward Peyto*, Knt. *John Hales*, *Godfrey Boswell*, *John Barker*, *William Purefoy*, *Anthony Staughton*, *George Abbot*, *Thomas Boughton*, *William Colemore*, *Thomas Basnet*, *William Jesson*, *Gamaliel Purefoy*, and *Thomas Willoughby*, Esquires.

COVENTRY City and County thereof. *John Barker*, *Isaac Bromich*, and *Robert Philips*, Esquires.

WILTSHIRE.

Denzil Holles, Esq; Sir *Edward Hungerford*, Sir *Edward Baynton*, Sir *Nevil Poole*, and Sir *John Evelyn*, Knights; *Edward Baynton*, *Edward Tucker*, *William Wheeler*, *Edward Goddard*, *Alexander Thistlethwait*, jun. *John White*, *Edward Poole*, *Thomas Moore*, *John Ash*, and *Robert Jennour*, Esquires.

WEST-

WESTMORELAND.

Sir Henry Bellingham, Knt. and Bart. George Gil-
pin, Edward Wilson, Nicholas Fisher, Thomas Sled-
dall, Rowland Dawson, and Allan Bellingham,
Esquires; Roger Bateman, Richard Branthwaite,
Robert Phillipson, and Jervase Benson, Gentlemen.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
April.

WORCESTERSHIRE:

John Wilde and Richard Creswell, Serjeants at
Law; Humphry Saltway, Edward Dignley, Ed-
ward Pit, Thomas Greves, and William Jeffryes,
Esquires.

YORKSHIRE.

East-Riding. Ferdinando Lord Fairfax; Sir John
Hotham, Knt. and Bart. Sir William Strickland,
Bart. Sir Philip Stapylton and Sir Thomas Rymington,
Knights; Richard Rymington, John Hotham, John
Anlaby, Richard Darley, Henry Darley, and John
Allured, Esquires.

North-Riding. Ferdinando Lord Fairfax; Sir
Hugh Cholmley, Sir Henry Foulis, Sir Thomas Nor-
cliffe, and Sir Matthew Boynton, Barts. Sir William
Sheffield, Knt. John Hotham, Bryan Stapylton, Henry
Darley, Henry Anderson, John Wastell, Christopher
Percey, George Trotter, Matthew Smelt, John Le-
gard de Malton, Francis Lascelles, Geoffrey Gate,
John Dent, Thomas Robinson, Francis Boynton, and
Christopher Waters, Esquires.

West-Riding. Ferdinando Lord Fairfax; Sir
Thomas Maleverer, Bart. Sir William Lister, Sir
Edward Rhodes, Sir William Fairfax, Sir John
Savile, and Sir Thomas Fairfax, Knights; John
Hotham, Charles Fairfax, Henry Arthington, John
Farrer, William White, Thomas Maleverer, George
Marwood, John Robinson, Thomas Stockdale, Tho-
mas Westby, John Bright, Thomas Boseville, God-
frey Boseville, and John Ellis, Esquires; and Capt.
Edward Briggs.

YORK City. Sir Thomas Fairfax, and Sir Thomas
Widdrington, Knights; Thomas Hodgson, James
Hutchinson, and John Vaux, Aldermen; Sir William
Allanson, and Thomas Hoyles

Town

238 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
April.

Town of KINGSTON upon HULL and County thereof. Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. *Thomas Raikes*, Mayor; *John Hotham* and *Peregrine Pelham*, Esquires; *Lancelot Roper*, *John Bernard*, *Josbua Hall*, *Nicholas Denman*, and *William Fapple*, Gentlemen.

Sir *Hugh Cholmley* defects the Parliament.

April 3. A Letter to the House of Commons, from Sir *John Hotham*, was read, intimating, That Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, Governor of *Scarborough Castle*, had deserted the Parliament; but that, by his Directions, the Castle was regained by Capt. *Bushe*; on which the House immediately expelled Sir *Hugh*, and disabled him from ever sitting as a Member there; and ordered that he should be impeached of High Treason, for falsely and perfidiously betraying the Trust reposed in him by the Parliament, falsifying his Protestation, and revolting to the Popish Army raised against the Parliament.

The Earl of *Northumberland* having caned Mr. *Martin* for opening a Letter of his,

Nothing else occurring in the *Journals* from this Time worth Notice, except the foregoing, we shall pass on to the 18th of this Month; when the Parliament's Commissioners being all returned, the Earl of *Northumberland* had the public Thanks of the House of Lords given him for his prudent Management in that Business. Lord *Clarendon*, in his Account of the Treaty before given, has hinted, that this Nobleman was one of the Suspected amongst the Commissioners, as too much favouring the Royal Cause; and that Mr. *Martin*, one of the Committee of Safety at *Westminster*, had opened a Letter from the Earl, at *Oxford*, to his Lady. We find, by the *Journals*, that this Affair was highly resented by his Lordship; who, at his Return, meeting Mr. *Martin* at a Conference in the Painted-Chamber, took him aside and questioned him upon it; but Mr. *Martin* justifying what he had done, the Earl caned him in the Presence of several Persons. Mr. *Martin* complained of this to the House of Commons; which produced the follow-

following
Glynne, w
'He w
to tell the
very tend
desirous
between
sident tha
the Privi
they wer
tin, a M
pointed
Conferen
Member
Violence
by a Pe
land; w
lege of
commar
Reparat
The
said, '
ships' J
take his
paratio
House
Martin
Oxford
that H
Comm
fairs o
All
from
send o
took i
tin, i
thorit
land
Perfo
was
treat

following Message to the Lords, brought up by Mr. *An. 19. Car. I.*
Glynne, who said, 1643.

‘He was commanded by the House of Commons to tell their Lordships, that they had always been very tender of their Lordships’ Privileges, and very desirous of the Continuance of a fair Agreement between both Houses; and they were very confident that their Lordships would be as tender of the Privileges of the House of Commons. That they were informed, That, this Day, Mr. *Martin*, a Member of the House of Commons, appointed by them to be one of the Managers at a Conference, as he was returning from it, (as the Members ought to do without any Hindrance or Violence) was assaulted in the Painted-Chamber by a Peer of great Worth, the Earl of *Northumberland*; which they held to be a Breach of the Privilege of Parliament: And for this, he said, he was commanded by the House of Commons to desire Reparation.’

April,

The Earl being then in the House, stood up and said, ‘That he submitted himself to their Lordships’ Judgment in this Business; but desired them to take his Case first into Consideration, and to get Reparation for the great Breach of Privilege done to the House of Lords, and the Injury to himself, by Mr. *Martin*, in opening his Lordship’s Letter sent from *Oxford*, without any Authority; he being a Peer of that House, and then employed by it as one of the Committee to treat with his Majesty about the Affairs of the Kingdom.’

A Conference is thereby occasioned on Breach of Privilege.

All the Answer the Lords gave to this Message from the Commons, at first, was, That they would send one by Messengers of their own. They then took into Consideration the Fact done by Mr. *Martin*, in opening the Earl’s Letter without any Authority: And considering the Earl of *Northumberland* as a Member of the House of Lords, and as a Person of that Capacity he was in when the Fact was committed, being employed by their House to treat with his Majesty about the great Affairs of the King-

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

April.

Kingdom, they conceived the Matter to be a great Breach and Violation of the Privileges of their House; and it was resolved to have a Conference with the Commons, the next Morning, concerning their Privileges, and to give them a Narration of the whole Business; and a Message was sent down accordingly. But though we are told, by the *Lords Journals*, that a Conference was held the next Day, and a Narration of the Fact made by their Lordships; yet it is not entered in either *Journal*, nor is there any more said about this Business. ^c

April 21. Mr. *Martin* had dropp'd some Expressions, at a Conference, the Day before, which the Lords resented: It seems that House was not so forward in passing Ordinances for seizing the Estates of Delinquents, as the other; and, this Day, the Lords making some Objections to an Ordinance of that Sort, they recollected that Mr. *Martin* said,

'I have something to deliver to your Lordships in the Behalf of the House of Commons. It is true, my Lords, there are some Privileges belonging to the House of Peers, and others to the House of Commons; and this of raising Monies you have ever, solely, attributed to them; so as your Lordships have never refused to join with them, when they have brought up any Thing that concerns the raising of Money: And, therefore, they expect you would not now refuse to pass this Ordinance without giving them some very good Reasons for it.

The Lords debated this Matter for some Time, and afterwards appointed a Committee of ten Lords to consider of a fit Way how to vindicate the Privilege of their House, in this Particular: But it is probable this Matter was dropp'd as the former, for we find nothing more of it in the *Journals*.

This

^c It is probable the Affair was privately made up, and that Mr. *Martin* was prevailed upon to give Satisfaction to the Earl, rather than disoblige a Man of such Consequence to the whole Party.

The Civil War now breaking out again, with An. 19. Car. I.
 fresh Fury, in most Parts of the Nation, there
 are few Proceedings in the *Journals* of either House
 worth Notice, in this Month, which are not re-
 lative thereto. We shall not enter into a Descrip-
 tion of the Battles, Sieges, Skirmishes, or other
 Military Transactions of these Times, any further
 than giving the Letters of Intelligence, which both
 Houses received from their Generals in different
 Parts. These being most unquestionably authentic,
 and very few of them ever printed, highly deserve
 the Public Attention; as either confirming, or set-
 ting aside, the Accounts given by later Historians.

1643.

April,

April 25. A Letter from the Earl of *Essex*, who
 then lay before *Reading* with his whole Army, was
 read, in the House of Lords, addressed to their
 Speaker, in these Words:

My Lord,

I Hold it my Duty to acquaint the Parliament with The Earl of *Es-*
 some Passages that happened Yesterday Morning *sex's* Letter from
 and this last Night. In the Morning, about Two of before *Reading*,
 the Clock, Captain *Kerr*, that commands Sir *Wil-*
liam Balfour's Troop, with two Troops more, being
 upon the Guard at *Caversham*, to take Care that no
 Provisions should be put into the Town, the General
Ruthen, with about 1500 Horse and Dragoons,
 namely, seven Regiments of Horse and two or three
 hundred Dragoons, surprized two Centinels; but, ha-
 ving the Alarm, our Troops charged with forty Horse,
 and so retreated to Colonel *Berkeley's Regiment* that
 was drawn over the Bridge. The Enemy charging,
 the Musqueteers gave Fire, and attacked Colonel *Hol-*
born with his Musqueteers so resolutely, that they
 wheeled about and went away, our few Horse follow-
 ing them three Miles. Their Intention was to put
 forty Barrels of Powder into the Town.

That Evening I sent out Colonel *Middleton* and
 Colonel *Meldrum* with their Horse, and Colonel
Milne with four Troops of his Dragoons, to find out the
 Enemy. They fell in with them about Eleven at Night,

VOL. XII.

Q

at

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

April.

at Dorchester, where the Life-Guard of Foot lay, and the King's Standard, which they knew not of till afterwards.

If the Soldiers could have been kept from Plundering, they might have done much more; but there being four Troops of Horse there, besides a Regiment of Foot, and being in Danger of having the Communication with Wallingford cut off between them and us, they only routed most of that Regiment, took the Captain and Lieutenant of the Life-Guard, another Lieutenant, two of the King's Harbingers, one Cornet, which they say was Sir Thomas Aston's, and 40 other Prisoners, with 150 Horse.

The King draws together all his Forces, Prince Maurice being come, and Prince Rupert hourly expected at Brill, and is marching this Way; so that we expect this Night, or Tuesday Night which we rather conjecture, all their Forces to fall upon us: Besides, Proclamations are sent out to raise all the Country from sixteen to sixty; which, if the Parliament had sent out in that Kind, it would well have strengthened their Army.

We doubt not but that God, which hath shewed us so many Blessings hitherto, will protect us out of these Storms that threaten us. We, that serve you, are in a hard Condition, losing all our Fortunes; and those that are violentest against the Parliament, have their Estates protected; if the Army be well paid, it is no Matter; if not, it must break; which I think, for the Number, is the bravest Army in Christendom. I believe that the Time is thought long that Reading holds yet out. I assure you it is a very strong fortified Town, all pallisadoed, and strong in Out-Works.

I am very loth to venture the Soldiers upon such Work, it being probable that many may be lost in storming; and, now especially, it were our great Hazard, the Enemy being so near, and we must be in a Posture to fight. But I doubt not, by God's Blessing, I shall give a good Account of this great Business. Sir William Waller doth not come to me according to my Expectation and Order, though Prince

Prince Maurice be come from him, and turned upon me; so that I have now all the King's Forces to deal with, both without and within the Town, without the Assistance which I had Reason to look for.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
April.

Your Lordship's

From before Reading,
April 24, 1643.

Humble Servant,

E S S E X.

The same Day the Commons, at a Conference, communicated a Letter, which they had drawn up to be sent to the Lord Fairfax, in the North, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence; which was as follows:

My Lord,

YOUR Letter of the 17th of April hath been imparted to both Houses of Parliament, who hath commanded us to let you know, that they do join with you in their Thanks to God, who hath hitherto preserved you and those small Forces from the Power and Violence of such a Multitude of malicious and devouring Enemies; and, by your Means, hath kept some Part of that Country from their Fury and Rapine.

A Letter of Encouragement from both Houses to Lord Fairfax.

They would have you rest assured, that they do very much value your Merit, Industry, and Courage expressed in so many great Services; and that they cannot manifest it in so plentiful Supplies of Money, Men, and Ammunition, as they would, and as the Danger, Necessity, and Importance of those Parts do require; which they desire you to believe not to proceed from any Neglect of that County, which they acknowledge to have contributed as much to the Support of the Common Cause as any County in the Kingdom, and have borne as great Burden of the Public Miseries.

The true Reason is, That, in this general Combustion of the Kingdom, the Contribution of most Counties are consumed in their own Defence; and the City hath been so extremely exhausted, that it can

244 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
April.

hardly support the Lord-General's Army, unto which a great Arrear remains unpaid, both for Pay and Supply of the Magazine: Yet, in this great Difficulty, they have taken Care to assist you both with Men, Money, and Munition; and have especially recommended it to the Committee of Lords and Commons, both to procure such a Proportion of all, as the Affairs and Necessity of the State can afford, and to dispatch them to you with as much Expedition as may be.

Your Lordship is desired to tell Sir Thomas Fairfax, your Son, and the rest of your Commanders, that their Courage and Constancy are very much approved by both Houses; and that they will endeavour to find some Opportunity of a more real and advantageous Expression of the Esteem they have of their Service; and likewise to publish to all the Soldiers, that the Lords and Commons will not forget what they have done and endured for the Public Defence of Religion, and of the Kingdom; or omit any Occasion of giving them all due Encouragement to continue their Faithfulness in this Service for the future, and a just Recompence for that which is past. Other Particulars shall be communicated to you by your Agent, Mr. White.

This is all we have now received in Command; we shall add nothing of our own, but our hearty Prayers for the Continuance of God's Protection and Blessing to you, and the affectionate Respects of

Your Lordship's

Westminster, April 25,
1643.

Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore,

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Commons in Parliament.

The *Palatine* Family has been long laid aside in these Memoirs, the Parliament, during these Troubles,

Troubles, taking very little Notice of them : And An. 19. Car. 1.
the two Princes of that House, *Rupert* and *Mau-* 1643.
rice, acting at this Time as principal Command-
ers in the King's Army, the Commons were much
enraged against them. Some Letters had also been
intercepted by the Parliament from the Queen of
Bohemia to the King her Brother, and to her Sons ;
which that Princess was afraid would have so far
exasperated them against her, as to deprive her of
that small Allowance, for a Crown'd Head, which
the Parliament had made her, and was then almost
her only Support. To take off therefore any evil
Notions they might have inculcated against her
by these Letters, the Queen wrote the following
artful one to the House of Commons ; which, be-
ing a Singularity in its Kind, well deserves our No-
tice. It was directed to the Speaker, and was in
these Words :

S I R,

*H*AVING understood, by imperfect Reports, of the The Queen of
Interception of some Letters, which I wrote *Bohemia's* Letter
occasionally to the King and my Sons, whereat the to the Speaker of
Parliament had taken Offence, I cannot be at Rest the House of
'till I have endeavoured to remove all such Impres- Commons.
sions as might deprive me of their good Opinion,
which I so truly value, and have ever found fa-
vourable in my Behalf. I would therefore intreat
you to acquaint the Honourable House of Commons,
whereof you are Speaker, that albeit I cannot at
present remember what I then particularly wrote, yet
if any Thing did, perchance, slip from my Pen, in
the private Relation between a Mother and a Son,
which might give them the least Distaste, I intreat
them to make no worse Construction of it than was
by me intended ; having never admitted of any Thought
or Resolutions, which hath not been sincere and
constant to the Public Peace and Prosperity of the
Kingdom.

With this Profession I desire the Honourable House
to rest satisfied ; that I may stand as upright in their

246 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

April.

Judgments as I am in my own Affections ; and that thereupon, considering the Distress whereunto I am brought by the Wrongs and Oppression of mine Enemies, they would give them Occasion to rejoice by stopping those necessary Supplies, which, by the Love of the King my Father, and the King my Brother, I have hitherto enjoyed, and without which I have no other Subsistence in this World.

I do therefore intreat the Honourable House to take my pressing Wants into their kind Consideration, and give such speedy Order for my Relief, that I may be kept from Inconvenience in a foreign Country.

Sir, I crave your Favour in representing hereof, and I shall ever remain

Your most assured Friend,

Hague, April 13,
1643.

ELIZABETH.

After this Letter was read, it was ordered to be entered in the *Journals* of the House of Commons, to be considered of on *Thursday* Morning next, this Day being *Tuesday*; and the Speaker directed to put the House in Mind of it. But we find no farther Mention of it, neither on that Day, nor any succeeding.

April 27. The House of Commons finding that their Armies were in great Want of Pay, they had a Conference with the Lords about it; in which they offered the following Propositions :

A Conference on
the Means for
supplying the
Earl of *Essex's*
Army.

First, ' On account of the Lord-General's Letter, they considered that his Estate was all sequestered and seized upon, whereby he was utterly unable to bear the Charge now laid upon him; therefore the Commons desired the Lords to expedite the Order, formerly sent to them, for to put the Lord-General into Possession of the Lord *Capel's* Estate.

' In the same Letter they took Notice, that the Army was in Danger to disband, unless Care be taken to supply it with Money; therefore the Commons desired their Lordships to join with them in sending

sending a select Committee of both Houses to the City of *London*, this Morning, to communicate the Lord-General's Letter to them, except that Part of it concerning Sir *William Waller* and Delinquents' Estates; and to offer to them personal Security, of the Members of both Houses, to raise a considerable Sum of Money for the Relief of the Army: Likewise to return the Common Council Thanks for the procuring of the late Sum of 44,000*l.* Also

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

April.

'To let them know, that the King is now drawing his Forces into the Field, and has made Proclamation for all, from sixteen to sixty, to come in to his Assistance; therefore to desire the City to get their Forces in Readiness to defend it, the adjacent Counties, and the Lord-General, if there be Occasion. And

'To desire the City to collect, speedily, the Money that is behind on the Weekly Assessment; and, since the Burdens of voluntary Contributions are very great, and divers rich Men have done nothing in the Counties, the House of Commons desired their Lordships to pass the Ordinance for seizing the Twentieth Part of the Malignants' Estates in the Country, which would speedily bring in a considerable Sum.'

The Lords agreed to send a Committee of both Houses into the City, upon the Particulars aforementioned; but they objected against enjoining any Lords to give their personal Securities for the procuring of Money, and left every Lord to do therein as he pleased. And as to the Ordinance for sequestering all the Lord *Capel's*, and that for the Twentieth Part of Malignants' Estates, the Lords would take them into their Consideration. The Earls of *Bolingbroke*^a, *Manchester*^b, and *Rutland*^c, were nominated, by the Lords, to visit the City.

April 29. Many Judgments of Sequestration against Clergymen from their Livings, with the Addition

^a *Oliver St. John.* ^b *Edward Montague.* ^c *John Manners.*

248 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

A Thanksgiving
for the taking of
Reading.

Addition of Imprisonment to their Persons, for preaching against the Proceedings of the Parliament, are entered in both *Journals* about this Time. And,

This Day, a Message was brought up from the Commons, importing, That whereas it had pleased God to give the Lord-General good Success in the taking of *Reading* with so little Blood, the Commons had voted to have public Thanks given in all Churches and Chapels in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Suburbs, the next Day, for so great a Mercy which God had vouchsafed them. Agreed to by the Lords.

May 2. We now first meet with the Name of Mr. *Oliver Cromwell*, as an Officer of Rank in the Parliament's Army; a particular Ordinance being made concerning him and some more Officers, as *Charles Fleetwood*, *Edward Whalley*, and *John Desborough*: Names which will occur more frequently in the Sequel. The said Ordinance appoints, 'That whereas Authority was given, by a former, to Col. *Oliver Cromwell*, and others, for the seizing of the Persons, Horses, Arms, Money, and Plate of Malignants and ill-affected Persons in the County of *Cambridge*, the Isle of *Ely*, &c.' It was now further ordained, That the said Col. *Cromwell*, &c. shall have Authority to seize their Corn and Cattle, as well as other Goods, under the Protection of both Houses of Parliament.

The *Dutch* had been, of late, much courted by the *English* Parliament, to prevent any Supplies of Men, Arms, or Money being sent over to the King's Assistance; but their Agent, Mr. *Strickland*, at the *Hague*, could not hinder them from selling Arms, or taking Pawns of the Queen's, or Crown, Jewels, for that Purpose. At this Time the Parliament was alarmed with the Report of a Naval Armament, then getting ready at *Dunkirk*, which was to act against theirs at Sea; to prevent which, the

the following Letter was agreed upon, by both Houses, to be sent to their High Mightinesses with all Speed.

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

May,

High and Mighty Lords,

WE are commanded, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to make known to your Lordships, that several Advertisements have been given to the Committee of the Lords and Commons, appointed by both Houses to take Care of the Safety of the Kingdom on all Occasions that concern the same, both at home and abroad, That the King hath hired divers Ships and Frigates of Dunkirk, to the Number of 24, or thereabouts; and that he intended to employ them against the Fleet appointed by the Parliament for the Defence of this Kingdom. It was further informed, That two of these Ships, or Frigates, were permitted to pass, out of Dunkirk, by the Admiral of your Lordships Fleet, by Warrant or some Command from his Highness the Prince of Orange; which Information that Committee ordered should be communicated to Mr. Strickland, now resident in the Hague by Authority and Instructions from both Houses; which Direction of that Committee of both Houses was likewise seconded by an Order of the Commons' House, and Mr. Strickland commanded to present it to your Lordships as he hath done.

The Parliament's Letter to the United Provinces, desiring a good Correspondence.

We are to intreat your Lordships to believe, that the two Houses have such an Opinion of the Wisdom and Justice of your State, that they cannot easily conceive you would do any Thing so much to the Prejudice of the Interest of yourselves, as well as of the Kingdom; and the high Esteem and Value which they set upon your Friendship and Correspondency is such, that they would not suffer any Report of that Nature to be spread in the World, but speedily present it to your Lordships, as an Information only commonly spoken of, to the great Prejudice and Disreputation of that near Union and Concurrence between this Kingdom and your State, which they most earnestly desire

250 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
May.

desire may ever be continued; and they very much rejoice to hear, that there was no Ground for that Report in any Resolution of your Lordships, nor in any Command or Direction of the Prince of Orange; whose eminent Power and Abilities they shall always hope will be express'd in such Counsels and Actions as may be most agreeable for the Preservation of the Reformed Religion, and the Interest of both States, against the antient known Enemies of both: And the Lords and Commons do assure your Lordships, that you shall never discern any Thing, in their Intentions and Proceedings, but what, in their Judgment, shall be most proper and effectual to that End; and as they rest fully satisfied concerning the Vanity and Falshood of that Report, so they pray your Lordships to rest assured, that this Information was appointed to be presented to you, out of a tender Affection to preserve both the Being and Reputation of an inviolable Conjunction betwixt this Kingdom and your State, without Intention to reflect upon the Honour of his Highness the Prince of Orange; and they desire you so to continue your favourable Audience to Mr. Strickland, and to give Credit to him, as one authorized by both Houses of Parliament to communicate to you the Affairs of this Kingdom, and to cherish the Peace and Amity betwixt the two States, which the two Houses of Parliament are confident he will ever faithfully and effectually perform.

We commend the Prosperity of your State, and of your Lordships, to God's Blessing, and remain

Your Lordships

Westminster, May 2;
1643.

Affectionate Friends

and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers,
pro Tempore.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Commons.

May

May 3. One *De Luke* having broke open the King's Stables, and taken two young Horses belonging to his Majesty, the Lords ordered the Horses to be restored, and *De Luke* to attend them to answer it. This Man produced his Warrant to the Messenger, from Mr. *Martin*; and Mr. *Martin* himself denied to return the Horses, saying, *We have taken the King's Ships and Ports, and may as well take his Horses, lest they might be employed against us; but, however, he added, he would acquaint the House of Commons therewith the next Morning, who would satisfy the Lords at a Conference.* This the Lords took very ill, and, at the Conference, they told the Commons, That they had resolved to write to the Lord-General, to recall Mr. *Martin's* Commission; but, for himself, they had done nothing, in regard he was a Member of their House. Adding, That they did apply themselves unto the Commons in all Respect and Civility, and did look for Reparation in this Business. Instead of which, the Commons, on their Return to the House, voted, That Mr. *Martin* did well in not delivering the two Horses till he had made them acquainted with it: That these two Horses should be kept by Mr. *Martin* till this House gives further Order; and that the Lord-General should be desired not to do any Thing in the Business concerning Mr. *Martin*, till he heard further from that House.—To so low an Ebb was the Authority of the House of Peers already reduced!

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
May.

Dispute between
the Houses about
seizing two of the
King's Horses.

May 5. An Order of Parliament was made, That the Book, enjoining and tolerating of Sports upon the Lord's Day, be forthwith burnt, by the Hands of the common Hangman, in *Cheapside*, and other usual Places. The Sheriffs of *London* and *Middlesex* were to attend, and see this Order duly executed; and all Persons, who had any of the said Books, were ordered to bring them to one of the Sheriffs, for their utter Destruction.

May

252 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

May 8. The Lords were still much occupied in trying and condemning to Sequestration, Imprisonment, &c. many more of the Clergy, whom the Commons had accused of Disaffection to their Cause, and Superstition in Religion, as bowing to the Altar, and the like: To prevent which, the King put out a Proclamation against oppressing the Clergy, and intruding of factious and schismatical Persons into their Cures; and inverting or detaining their Tythes and Possessions, by Order of one or both Houses of Parliament, contrary to all Law and Justice. But this had no Effect, for they still went on to sequester Numbers of the Clergy; though, this Day, they were interrupted by a Message from the King, occasioned by a Bill lately sent down to his Majesty, for his Royal Assent to it. This Message was introduced, as usual, by a Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, from the Lord Falkland, and was as follows:

CHARLES R.

The King's Message concerning the Subscriptions for the Relief of Ireland,

HIS Majesty hath, with great Deliberation, considered and weighed a Bill, lately presented to him by Sir Robert King, Knt. William Jephson and Arthur Hill, Esquires, from both Houses of Parliament, intituled, *An Act for the speedy Payment of Monies subscribed towards the reducing of the Rebels in Ireland, which yet remained unpaid.* And though, in these miserable Times of Distraction, where there are Armies, pretended to be levied by Order of both Houses, almost in every County of the Kingdom, and the good old Laws (the Observation whereof would preserve the Public Peace) violated and suppressed; when the Treaty, hopefully begun towards a happy Peace, is broken, and the Committee recalled by both Houses, as if they intended no farther Overture for laying down Arms, but to decide all Differences by the Sword; the World will easily judge, whether his Majesty might not well

well deny to consent to any new Act of Parliament ; An. 19. Car. 1.
 the much Major Part of both Houses being, by
 Force and Violence, driven and kept from those
 Councils, and his Majesty himself not suffered to
 be present : Yet such is his Compassion of Soul
 towards his poor Protestant Subjects of that his
 Kingdom of *Ireland*, that he would willingly en-
 tertain any Expedient whereby it might be evi-
 dent the Condition of that Kingdom might be
 relieved, and the Distractions of this in no Danger
 of being increased : And therefore his Majesty de-
 sires to be satisfied in these Particulars :

1643.

May.

I. How the great and vast Sums of Money al-
 ready raised by the several Acts of Parliament for
 the Relief of *Ireland*, and which, by those Acts,
 ought not to be employed to any other Purpose
 than reducing the Rebels, untill they shall be de-
 clared to be subdued, have been expended ? His
 Majesty having been informed, that no less than
 100,000 *l.* of that Money was, by one Order of
 one or both Houses, issued for the Maintenance of
 the Army, which hath given him Battle, under
 the Command of the Earl of *Essex*.

II. How his Majesty shall be secured, that the
 Money, which, by his Majesty's Consent, shall
 be raised for the Support of his Army in *Ireland*,
 shall not, for the future, be diverted from that
 Use, and employed against him in this Kingdom.

III. Whether it be just to compel his good Sub-
 jects, who have subscribed, to pay those Subscrip-
 tions, when as, at the Time they did subscribe, they
 conceived themselves absolved from their Under-
 taking, if, at any Time, they were content to
 forfeit the Sum mentioned in that Act : For his
 Majesty doth not conceive, that, by that Act,
 they are liable to pay the whole Subscriptions, but
 to submit to the Penalty enjoined : And then his
 Majesty is not satisfied, that, by a new Law, it
 can be just to compel them to what, at the first,
 they undertook voluntarily ; and, it may be, would
 not have undertaken but upon the Liberty they con-
 ceived to be then left them ?

IV.

254 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

IV. ' Whether the Power given by this new Bill
' to *Warner, Towse, and Andrews* (Persons of whose
' Integrity and Affections to the Public Peace his
' Majesty is in no Degree satisfied) be not too great;
' any Certificate of theirs being Ground enough to
' extend the Estate of any Subject in *England*, whe-
' ther he ever under-writ or not ?

V. ' Whether all Lands, extended by Virtue of
' this Act, being to continue in Extent till all For-
' feitures be satisfied, it may not be very prejudicial
' to Creditors to whom those Lands are liable; and
' and so the Common Justice may be disturbed ?

VI. ' Whether, by this Act, the Extents being
' not to be avoided, or delayed, for Omission of any
' Lands, the same may not be prejudicial to all Pur-
' chasers; and whether it be not against the known
' Course of the Law ?

' His Majesty desires to receive Satisfaction from
' both Houses of Parliament in these Particulars with
' all possible Expedition; and then he shall give all
' the World an Account how sensible he is of the
' Misery of *Ireland*, and how desirous he is to find
' or embrace any Way for their Relief; the best, if
' not the only, Way to which, his Majesty conceives,
' would be by a good and blessed Accommodation of
' the lamentable Distractions of this Kingdom; which,
' if the Matter of his Majesty's last Message were so
' entertained, as his Majesty hoped and expected,
' might, by the Blessing of God, in a short Time
' be effected.'

May 12. On the Petition of a Clergyman to the
Lords, complaining, That the Archbishop of *Can-*
terbury ^d refused to institute and collate him to a Par-
sonage, it was resolved, That an Ordinance of Par-
liament should be passed, by both Houses, for se-
questering all his Jurisdiction and Power of bestow-
ing Livings, and to place them in the Power and
Disposal of Parliament: That the King's Counsel
should draw up an Ordinance to this Purpose, and
when it came to be sent down to the Commons,

to

^d *William Laud,*

to desire that House to think of proceeding against the said Archbishop, upon their Charge of High Treason.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

The same Day the Lord-General, being in the House of Lords, represented the State and Condition of the Army, and the great Want of Money; which was the Reason why they could not march and take the Advantages which occurred to them: He likewise made a short Narrative of the taking of *Reading*. Upon which it was resolved to return Thanks to his Excellency for his good Conduct, and also to have a Conference with the Other House, in order to quicken them to consider of a certain Way of supplying the Army with Money; that it might not be again in the Straits it had been before, and lose the Opportunities that are offered; which might discourage the Lord-General's Forces, and encourage the other Side.

The Lord-General further signified, that he gave Command to the Lord *Grey*, Colonel *Cromwell*, and other Forces in the North, to draw themselves into a Body, which had not been done according to his Directions; by which Neglect Convoys of Waggons and Ammunition were come to the King without any Interruption. On this the Lords thought fit to recommend the Examination of this Affair to the Lord-General, why his Commands were not obeyed, and where he found the Disobedience and Neglect, to recall his Commissions.

The next Day the Effect of this Conference was reported, That the House of Commons agreed with their Lordships in giving public Thanks to the Lord-General, and desired that the Speakers of both Houses might go to his Lordship for that Purpose: Also that they agreed in settling some certain Way of raising Money for the Supply of the Army; and desired that a Committee of both Houses might be sent into the City, to declare to them the Necessity of it. A Committee was sent accordingly.

A Committee ordered to go into the City, to solicit Money for the Army.

It

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

It is necessary to be remembered in this Place, that a Committee of Lords and Commons had, for some Days past, sat constantly at *Haberdashers-Hall*, appointed purely for Advance of Monies; and, to all that would freely lend, the Parliament allowed 8*l.* *per Cent.* But, to those that would neither give nor lend, nor pay the Weekly Assessment, a Power was given to their Collectors to distrain, by Force, and publicly sell the Goods for the speedier Payment of it; for which Service Three-pence in the Pound, and all other incident Charges were allowed them: And this was practised, where they had the Power, all over *England*, as well as at *London*. Twelve-pence in the Pound was also ordered to be paid to any Persons who could inform where such Goods were secreted or hid.

Order of the Commons, for punishing such Commissioners of Sequestration, &c. as refused to act.

We have already taken Notice that several Gentlemen, nominated by the Parliament as Sequestrators of Delinquents Estates, had forborne, for different Reasons, to execute that Office; and there appearing the same Backwardness in executing the Ordinances for raising Money by Assessment, the Commons found it necessary to make an Order, whereby such Commissioners as should refuse to join, or sign any Warrants, or to meet the rest of the Commissioners, not being detained by Sickness, or other inevitable Impediments, should be reputed Persons ill affected to the Parliament; and that their Names should be returned to the House of Commons, in order that their Estates might be seized and sequestred in the same Manner as those of Papists and Delinquents.—But it does not appear that the Consent of the Lords was ever asked, or given, to this Order.

May 15. The Parliament's Declaration concerning the late Treaty was this Day agreed to by both Houses, and ordered to be printed and published. The King's came out some Time before.
Both

Both these, which are too prolix for our Purpose, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. may be found in the Collections of these Times ^a.

The Lord-General delivered to the Lords divers Copies of Examinations, taken at *Bristol*, concerning a late Conspiracy there to give up that City to the King. This Affair is also fully discussed by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, and other Historians.

May,

On the 9th of this Month there had been a Message sent up from the Commons to the Other House, desiring them to nominate and appoint a Committee of Lords, to join with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to be sent into *Scotland*, to intreat the *Scots* to give Aid and Assistance to this Kingdom, according to the Act of Pacification. This Day the said Request was again renewed by the Commons, but not yet agreed to by the Other House.

At the same Time a Letter was brought up, ready drawn, with an Intent to send it into *Scotland*, as a Complaint against some *Scots* Lords for assisting the King against the Parliament; which was agreed to by the Lords. This Letter was directed to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, and to the Commissioners for the Preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and was as follows:

Our very good Lords,

THE Lords and Commons of England, now assembled in Parliament, in Pursuance of that A Letter of Complaint to the Privy Council of Scotland, against the Earl of Roxburgh, &c. Amity and Correspondency which they desire should ever continue between the two Nations, have commanded us to remonstrate unto your Lordships, That divers great Officers and Peers of the Realm of Scotland, namely, the Earl of Roxburgh, Earl of Morton, Earl of Annandale, Earl of Kinnoul, Earl of Carnwath, and Earl of Lanerk, have, during the Time of their Continuance here, made themselves Incendiaries between the King and his People; and have advised Acts of Hostility against the Subjects of this Realm, to their great Harm and Wrong; contrary to the Laws of the Realm,

VOL. XII.

R

and

^a *Husbands*, Fol. Edit. from p. 91 to p. 117.

258 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. 1. *and contrary to the Act of Pacification, as appears by a Letter under their own Hands, a Copy whereof they send here inclosed^b.*
 1643.

May.

They do earnestly, therefore, desire your Lordships, That Order may be taken for speedy Proceedings to be had against them, and against such, within the said Realm of Scotland, that shall assist, receive, and harbour them, or any of them; that so they may receive such Punishment for their said Offence, as by the said Act of Pacification is provided. Herewith we take our Leaves, and rest

Your Lordships

Westminster, May 15,
 1643.

Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
 Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
 Speaker of the House of Commons.

May 16. An Order was made by the Commons, directed to all Justices of Peace, &c. all over England and Wales, to put the Statute, 1^{mo} Jacobi, in Execution, That no strong Beer or Ale should be sold at above one Penny the Quart; and, of all other Beer, two Quarts for the Penny.

An Excise was also laid on, at this Time, as

An Excise laid follows:

on Ale, Cyder, Perry, &c. For each Barrel of strong Beer or Ale, of 8 s. } s. d.
 the Barrel, } I 0

For a Hogshead of Cyder or Perry, } I 0

To be paid by the first Buyer. The same Tax was laid on the House-keeper, for Beer, Ale, Cyder, or Perry, brewed or made for his own Spending.

All Alehouse-keepers, or Inn-holders, that brew and sell strong Beer and Ale of their own, each Barrel, } 2 0

For

^b This Letter was intercepted, in the North, by the Lord Fairfax, and by him sent to the Parliament: But it is not entered in the Journals.

Of ENGLAND. 259

For all Sorts of retailed Wines, over and above the Customs due for the same, to be paid by the first Retailer, a Quart, } s. d. An. 19. Car. I.
0 2 1643.
May.

On all Sorts of Wines bought here, besides Customs, to be paid by the first Buyer, for all he shall use in his own House, for a Quart, } 0 1

The same to be paid by the Merchant for all the Wine he shall use in his own House, besides the due Customs.

For a Barrel of six Shillings Beer sold, to be spent, as well in Private as in Victual-ling Houses, to be paid by the common Brewer, or those that brew or sell the same Beer, } 0 6

On all Tobacco, not of *English* Plantation, the Pound Value, not Weight, } 4 0

For the *English* Plantation Tobacco, the same Value; both over and above all other Customs, } 2 0

The Committee, who brought in these Rates, were ordered to proceed in raising of Money, by laying a Charge on other Commodities ^c.

May 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons communicated the following Letter they had received out of *Buckinghamshire*, containing an Account of divers Murders, Burnings, and Plunderings, committed by the King's Forces in that County. It was directed, *For our much-honoured Friend Colonel Hampden, or, in his Absence, to Colonel Goodwyn, or Bullstrode Whitlocke, Esq;*

S I R, Aylesbury, May 16, 1643.

WE cannot but acquaint you, that you may make it known to the House of Commons, if you please, in *Buckinghamshire*, what miserable Condition this County is at this Time. concerning Plun-
The King hath sent into these Parts about 12 or King's Troops,

R 2

1400

^c This is the first Instance we meet with of an Excise. The Plan, which is printed at large in *Husbands's Collections*, p. 267, &c. was vigorously pursued in the Protectorship of *Cromwell*, and established by Act of Parliament soon after the Restoration. How far it has since been extended every Body knows.

260 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

1400 of his Forces, commanded, as we are informed, by the Earl of Cleveland^a, who is accompanied with the Lord Chandois, Lord Crawford, Sir John Byron, and others of Note; who, contrary to the known Laws of the Land, pillage and plunder all the Towns where they come. They murder our Neighbours that make any Defence to preserve their Goods, one Woman, among the rest, big with Child, who could make no Resistance; they cut in Pieces what Household Goods they cannot carry away; they sweep clean divers of our Pastures, leaving no Cattle behind them; and that no Cruelty might be left unexercised by them, they have, this Day, fired a Country Village, call'd Swanburne, in seven Places of the Town, for no other Reason but because they were not willing to be plundered of all they had; and guarded the Fire so carefully, with all their Forces divided into several Parts, that no Neighbour durst adventure to come to quench it all the while it burned.

Our Forces in this Garrison, consisting only of Foot, saving one Troop of Horse, were not able to encounter with the Enemy, nor relieve our Neighbours thus despoiled; but yet, to interrupt that which to them is a Sport, we drew out some Forces in their Sight, as far as with Safety we could; whereby they have not acted this Day all the Mischief they intended to execute before Night: But what they have left undone To-day, we expect, e'er they leave us, they will make up; for they are now so strong that they quarter at Buckingham, and where they please in these Parts, without Resistance.

We wish the Parliament's Army were so accommodated that this County, which hath hitherto been, and yet is, most ready to serve and obey the Orders of the House, might not be destroyed, and made utterly unable to contribute unto it, before we can be relieved by it; but relying upon God's Providence, and the best Means which may be afforded to preserve it, we rest

Your loving Friends,

JOHN WITTEWRONG.
THOMAS TYRREL.

Upon

^a Thomas Wentworth.

Upon this Letter the House of Commons pass'd An. 19. Car. 1.
some Votes, to which they desired their Lordships
Concurrence, and that the said Letter might be
speedily printed and published.

1643.

May.

1. 'That this House shall invite the several Votes of both
Counties under the Power of the Parliament, at Houses there-
the Moving of my Lord General, to rise and join upon.
with his Excellency, with all their Force and
Strength, in the Maintenance of this Cause of Re-
ligion, for the Preservation of the Protestant Re-
ligion, and to prevent the setting up of Popery in
England and Ireland; and to redeem themselves
from the Rapines, Cruelties, Spoils, and Murders
committed upon them by the King's Forces; and
that Letters be sent from both Houses for this Pur-
pose.'

The Lords agreed to this Vote.

Next it was desired by the House of Commons,
That Mr. *Jephson* might make a Narrative to the
Lords of some Passages that came to his Knowledge
at *Oxford* when he was there, viz.

'That when he was at *Oxford* he did see the
Lord *Dillon* and the Lord *Taaffe* near about his
Majesty, being great Papists, and keeping Corres-
pondency with the Rebels in *Ireland*; and he cal-
ling to Mind what Letters he had seen in *Munster*,
in *Ireland*, written to the Earl of *Muskerry*, a chief
Rebel, under their Hand-writing, which was to
this Effect: 'To exhort him to encourage the Re-
'bels there to go on; and though the King's Af-
'fairs were now such that he could not be seen in
'it, yet, in the End, he would thank them for
'it.' Upon this Mr. *Jephson* said, he went to the
Lord Viscount *Falkland*, to acquaint him therewith,
and told him of this particular Business, and what
dangerous Persons they were to be near the King.
His Lordship said, *He that writ this deserved to*
be hang'd; nevertheless nothing is yet done to
remove them from the King's Council; but the
Lord *Taaffe* is since sent into *Ireland* about the Af-
fairs there.'

262 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

The House of Commons taking these Particulars into Consideration, and seeing the same Spirit here against the Protestant Religion, and the rooting out of Protestants, as is in *Ireland*, have made another Vote, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence, viz.

2. ' That Proceedings shall be had against all Papists *whatsoever*, as Traitors, that have been in Arms or actual War against the Parliament, or have furnished the King with Horse, Arms, Ammunition, or Money, to the Maintenance of this War.'

The Lords agreed with the Commons in this Vote, leaving out the Word *whatsoever*.

May 20. Another Conference was held between the two Houses, the Effect of which was, That the Commons presented to the Lords certain Votes they had lately passed, and left them to their Lordships Consideration.

Resolutions of
the Commons
relating to the
Great Seal.

1. ' That the Great Seal of *England* ought, by the Law of the Land, to attend the Parliament.

2. ' That the Great Seal of *England* doth not attend the Parliament, as, by the Laws of the Land, it ought to do.

3. ' That, by reason of this, the Commonwealth hath suffered many grievous Mischiefs, tending to the Destruction of King, Parliament, and Kingdom.

4. ' That it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to provide a speedy Remedy for these Mischiefs.

5. ' That a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made, to attend the Parliament for the Dispatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom.'

This last Vote occasioned a Division in the House, when the Numbers were 86 for making a new Seal, and 74 against it; in all 160 Members present: The most that have divided on any Question for a long Time.

The Commons also added some Reasons, upon which these Votes were grounded; which are not enter'd

enter'd. The Lords deferred debating on all these Matters till another Day.

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

May.

May 22. A Message from the King was this Day read in the House of Lords. It was directed to their Speaker, and was as follows :

CHARLES R.

' SINCE his Majesty's Message of the 12th of The King re-
' April, in which he conceived he had made quires an Answer
' such an Overture for the immediate disbanding to his Message of
' of all Armies, and Composure of these present the 12th of April.
' miserable Distractions, by a full and free Con-
' vention in Parliament, that a perfect and settled
' Peace would have ensued, he hath, in all this
' Time, (above a full Month) procured no Answer
' from both Houses; his Majesty might well believe
' himself absolved, before God and Man, from the
' least possible Charge of not having used his utmost
' Endeavours for Peace; yet when he considers
' that the Scene of all the Calamity is in the Bowels
' of his own Kingdoms; that all the Blood
' which is spilt is of his own Subjects; and what
' Victory soever it shall please God to give him, it
' must be over those who ought not to have lifted
' up their Hands against him: When he considers
' these desperate civil Dissentions may encourage
' and invite a foreign Enemy to make a Prey of the
' whole Nation; that *Ireland* is in present Dan-
' ger of being totally lost; that the heavy Judg-
' ment of God's Plague, Pestilence, and Famine,
' will be inevitable Attendants of this unnatural
' Contention; and that, in a short Time, there
' will be so general a Habit of Uncharitableness
' and Cruelty contracted throughout the Kingdom,
' that even Peace itself will not restore his People
' to their old Temper and Security: His Majesty
' cannot but again call for an Answer to that his
' Message, which gives so fair a Rise to end these
' unnatural Distractions. And his Majesty doth
' this with the most Earnestness, because he doubts
' not

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

not but the Condition of his Armies in several Parts; his Strength of Horfe, Foot, and Artillery; his Plenty of Ammunition (which some Men lately conceived he might have wanted) is so well known and understood; that it must be confessed, that nothing but the Tenderness and Love to his People, and those Christian Impressions which always have dwelt, and, he hopes, always shall dwell, in his Heart, could move him, once more, to hazard a Refusal: And he requires them, as they will answer to God, to himself, and all the World, that they will no longer suffer their Fellow-Subjects to welter in each other's Blood; that they will remember by whose Authority, and to what End, they met in that Council; and send such an Answer to his Majesty, as may open a Door to let in a firm Peace and Security to the whole Kingdom.

If his Majesty shall again be disappointed of his Intention herein, the Blood, Rapine, and Distractions which must follow in *England* and *Ireland*, will be cast upon the Account of those who are deaf to the Motion of Peace and Accommodation.

Ordered, That this Message should be communicated to the House of Commons; and some Lords being appointed to draw up what was fit to be delivered to them besides, at this Conference, as the Sense of this House about it, they soon after brought in the following:

That the Lords conceive it necessary to send the Reasons to the King, why the two Houses of Parliament could not agree to the Propositions offered in his Majesty's Message of the 12th of *April* last. To express, in that Answer to be made to his Majesty, That their Endeavours had been, and ever shall be, to put an End to these unhappy Differences; so as their Religion, Laws, and Liberties might be secured. To desire the Commons to appoint a Committee to meet one from

from the House of Lords, to consider of this whole Answer 19. Car. I.
Message, and to prepare such an Answer as they
think fit to offer to the two Houses. 1643.

May.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* having now lain a very long Time in the Tower, and no Process, as yet, brought against him by the Commons, his Accusers, tho' often urged to it by the Lords, an humble Petition was, this Day, (*May 23*) presented to that House, from this fallen Prelate, in these Words:

The HUMBLE PETITION of WILLIAM Archbishop
of *Canterbury*,

Shewing,

THAT he hath neither Lands, Lease, nor Money; *Abp. Laud's Petition for Relief.*
that the small Store of Plate he had is long since melted down for his necessary Support and Expences, caused by his present Troubles: That his Rents and Profits are sequestered, and now all his Goods taken from him, and no Maintenance at all allowed him; insomuch that, if some Friends of his had not had Compassion on his Wants, and sent him some little Supply, he had not been able to subsist till this present; and now this Supply is at the last.

He humbly prays that your Lordships would take his sad Condition into your Considerations, that somewhat may be allowed him out of his Estate to supply the Necessities of Life; assuring himself that your Lordships will not, in Honour and Justice, suffer him either to beg or starve.

And your Petitioner, &c.

The Lords seem to have been touched with Compassion on the hearing of this Petition, and immediately resolved to allow the Archbishop some Maintenance, out of Charity, to supply his Necessities; and further ordered, That the Petition should be recommended from that House to the Commons. The Commons returned for Answer, That they would send one by Messengers of their own;

266 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. own; but we hear no more of it from that Quarter.
1643.

May.

A Message being sent up from the Lower House, to desire the Lords to sit a while, for they had a Matter of great Importance to communicate to them: Soon after came up Mr. *Pymme* to acquaint their Lordships, that the Commons had discharged their Consciences by the following Vote which they had passed:

The Commons
accuse the Queen
of High Treason.

'That the Queen had levied War against the Parliament and Kingdom; and, having discharged their Consciences, they think it fit to discharge their Duty too; and said, He was commanded by the House of Commons assembled in Parliament, in the Name of themselves, and of all the Commons of *England*, to accuse and impeach, and he did accordingly now accuse and impeach, *Henrietta Maria*, Queen of *England*, of High Treason. And they desired their Lordships to issue forth Proclamations to summon her to appear before them, and receive a Trial and due Sentence for the same.' It is observable that these Votes were carried in the House of Commons *Nem. Con.* The Queen had just before met the King at *Edge-Hill*, with a Reinforcement of 3000 Foot, 30 Troops of Horse and Dragoons, and six Pieces of Cannon, besides great Store of other Warlike Ammunition, which made the House of Commons so exasperated against her.

All that is entered in the *Lords Journals*, on this extraordinary Impeachment, is, *This to be considered of*; but we hear no more of it for some Time. There is a remarkable Letter of this Queen's, published in Duke *Hamilton's* Memoirs, wherein she mentions this Impeachment in these Words: After giving the Duke an Account of the good State the King's Army was then in, she adds, *You will give a Share of these News to all our Friends, if any dare own themselves such after the House of Commons have declared me Traitor, and carried up their Charge against me to the Lords. This, I assure you, is true;*
but

but I know not yet what the House of Lords have done An. 19. Car. I.
upon it. God forgive them for their Rebellion, as, I 1643.
assure you, I forgive them from my Heart for what
they do against me. May.

May 27. The Committee for the Excise brought into the House of Commons a Charge of one Penny in the Pound on all Manner of Currants imported; upon Raisins of the Sun, one Halfpenny; Malaga Raisins, and all Figs imported, one Farthing; to be paid by the first Buyer, over and above all other Duties and Customs. Next an Excise was laid on all the different Sorts of Sugars, imported and refined here; likewise so much a Yard on all imported Silks, Sattins, &c. &c. by Name, a long List of which is entered in the Commons Journals; by which may be seen that they did not even then want a Taste for foreign Fines.

An Excise laid upon Currants, Raisins, Sugars, Silks, &c.

This Day the Lords entered into a long Debate, concerning the Votes lately brought up from the House of Commons, about making a new Great Seal: And, the first Vote being debated, these Questions were put, Whether the use of the Great Seal of England ought to be applied to the Commands of the Parliament, by the Laws of the Land? It passed in the Affirmative. The next, Whether the Great Seal ought to attend the Commands of the Parliament, according to Law? Resolved Negatively.

The Lords agree only to some of the Commons' Votes relating to the Great Seal.

The second Vote, 'That the Great Seal doth not attend the Parliament, as, by the Laws of the Land, it ought to do,' being read, the Lords resolved to have a Conference, to be informed by the Commons wherein the Great Seal hath not been applied to the Commands of the Parliament. They likewise resolved to defer giving any Resolution as to the third Vote till the second was cleared.

The House then proceeded to the fourth Vote, 'That it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to

268 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
May.

to provide a speedy Remedy for these Mischiefs; and, after Debate hereof, the Lords came to this Resolution, somewhat different from the other, That it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to use their best Endeavours to provide a fitting and speedy Remedy.

The fifth Vote, 'That a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament, for Dispatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom,' was put to the Question, and passed in the Negative.

To palliate these Resolutions to the Commons, the Lords appointed a considerable Committee to consider what was fit to be delivered to them, on this Subject, at the ensuing Conference.

The same Day another Conference was held between the two Houses; in which the Commons communicated to the Lords some Letters which they had received from their General in the North, the Lord *Fairfax*, and other Officers, concerning the taking of *Wakefield*, &c. and that they had voted a public Thanksgiving for the same; which the Lords agreed to. These Letters, which were addressed to the Speaker of the House of Commons, were ordered to be printed and published *.

Lord FAIRFAX'S LETTER.

S I R,

A Letter from the Lord *Fairfax* to the Speaker, about his taking of *Wakefield*.
UPON the 6th of this Month I writ to you by a special Messenger, which I hope is come to your Hand: Presently after the Dispatch of that Letter the News was brought me, that the Earl of Newcastle

* From the original Edition, published by *Edward Husband*, May 27, 1643. In the Title Page it is call'd *A miraculous Victory obtained by the Right Honourable Ferdinando Lord Fairfax, against the Army under the Command of the Earl of Newcastle, at Wakefield*; and has the following remarkable Introduction:

'Whereas it has too often been seen, that, in a great Appearance of outward Means, we are over confident; and that, in the Smallness or Diminution of the same, we are too low and distrustful; so walking by Sight, and not by Faith: The Divine Goodness and Wisdom, to wean us from this Corruption, and to teach

castle had possessed himself both of Rotherham and Sheffield: The Forces in Rotherham held out two Days Siege, and yielded up the Town upon Treaty; wherein it was agreed, that the Town should not be plundered, and that all the Gentlemen, Commanders, and Soldiers, (six only excepted, that were specially named) leaving their Arms, should have free Liberty to go whither they pleased: But, when the Enemy entered, they not only, contrary to their Articles, plundered the Town, but have also made all the Commanders and Soldiers Prisoners, and do endeavour to constrain them to take up Arms on their Party.

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

April.

The

teach us the contrary Lesson, to walk by Faith and not by Sight, hath often wrought and given great Victories, by little Means, and unexpected Ways.

A notable Pattern and Proof whereof is now seen in the Victory given at Wakefield; wherein God gave a happy Success upon great Disadvantage and Inequality, a far lesser Number, even less by half, overcoming a greater in a fortified Town, and the Persons taken far exceeding in Number those that took them; and all this not with the Loss of ten Persons. As this calls for the Eye of Faith, spiritually to discern the great Power and Goodness of God, which gives the Advantage of Victory on the Side of the Disadvantage in outward Force; so it calls upon us to maintain and continue a Course of Faith for the Time to come; and, by continually looking up to God, and Dependence on him, to expect from his Goodness and Bounty the like Blessing in other Times of Inequality and Disadvantage. And as this ought to confirm our Expectations for the future, so, both now and hereafter, when God's Strength doth so visibly appear in our Weakness, we ought to give the whole Glory and Praise to his Strength, and none to our own Weakness.

Thankfulness for Blessings past being an Invitation of Blessings to come; and God not failing to supply that, which he knows will certainly turn to his own Glory. Neither ought our Thank-giving only to bound itself in Words, or in short Thoughts and Intentions; but it should especially be expressed in a hearty and real Conversion and Conformity of Soul and Life to him, whose Will ought to be the Rule of our Life, and whose Service is the End of our Being.

Let it also be further observed, That both this and other Victories have been given on that Day, which hath been so much opposed by dissolute and Popish Persons, even to a Confutation of it by set Discourses and practical Profanations.

And having given all the Glory to God, it is next just and commendable to take Notice of those whom God hath vouchsafed to use in his Service, as to encourage them in God's Work, and that Cause which God doth maintain by his own mighty and outstretched Arm, thus made good in this extraordinary both Deliverance and Victory.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

The Commanders at Sheffield hearing of the Loss of Rotherham, and seeing some of the Enemy's Forces advanced in View of the Town, they all presently deserted the Place, as not tenable with so few against so potent an Army; and fled away with their Arms, some to Chesterfield, and some to Manchester.

The Loss of these two Places hath much elated the Enemy, and cast down the Spirits of the People in these Parts, who daily see the Enemy increase in Power, and to gain Ground; and no Succours come to them from any Part: The Earl of Newcastle's Army do now range over all the South-West Part of this County, ^f [pillaging and cruelly using the well-affected Party] and the last Week there was a Garrison of Horse and Foot laid at Knaresbrough, where they begin to fortify the Town, [and pillage and utterly ruin all the religious People in those Parts, and round about them.]

On Friday Se'nnight last three Troops and some other Forces, of which many were French, came from that Garrison and pillaged Otley, [and there barbarously used some honest Women of that Town] and, in their Retreat to Knaresbrough, upon the Forest they took a Man and a Woman; the Man they wounded and beat cruelly, and before his Face ravished the Woman.

These Particulars I repeat, that you may the more clearly discern the Miseries which this Country groans under; and here, about Leeds, Bradford, and Halifax, being a mountainous barren Country, the People now begin to be sensible of Want; their last Year's Provisions being spent, and the Enemy's Garrisons stopping all Provisions both of Corn and Flesh, and other Necessaries that were wont to come from the more fruitful Countries to them; their Trade utterly taken away, their Poor grow innumerable, and great Scarcity of Means to relieve them. And this Army, which now lies amongst them to defend them from

^f This and the following Letter are printed in *Rusworth*; but the Introduction before given, and the Passages between Crochets are omitted; as is likewise the Postscript in Mr. Stockdell's Letter, relating to the King's Commission for plundering.

from the Enemy, cannot defend them from Want, which causeth much Murmur and Lamentation amongst the People. And for the Army itself, it is so far in Arrear, and no Way appearing how they shall either be supplied with Money or Succours, as they grow very mutinous.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

Yet, upon Saturday last, in the Night, I caused to be drawn out of the Garrisons in Leeds, Bradford, Halifax, and Howley, some Horse, Foot, and Dragoons, in all about 1500 Men, and sent them against Wakefield, commanded by my Son, and assisted by Major-General Gifford, Sir Henry Fowlis, and Sir William Fairfax, with divers other Commanders: They appeared before Wakefield about Four o'Clock on Sunday in the Morning, where they found the Enemy, who had Intelligence of their Design, ready to receive them; there was in the Town General Goring, Serjeant-Major-General Mackworth, the Lord Goring, with many other principal Commanders and eminent Persons, about seven Troops of Horse, and six Regiments containing 3000 Foot; the Town well fortified with Works, and four Pieces of Ordnance; yet our Men, both Commanders and common Soldiers, went on with undaunted Courage; and, notwithstanding the thick Volleys of small and great Shot from the Enemies, charged up to their Works, which they entered, seized upon their Ordnance, and turned them upon themselves; and pursued the Enemy so close as they beat quite out of the Town the most Part of the Horse, and a great Number of the Foot, and made all the rest Prisoners; with them they took four Pieces of Ordnance, and all the Ammunition then in the Town, and a great Number of Arms; and, amongst the Prisoners, General Goring himself, with divers other Commanders and other common Soldiers, in all about 1500 Men, 27 Colours of Foot, and three Cornets of Horse; of which I send a more particular Account inclosed. The more exact and particular Relation of this Service, as it is testified to me under the Hands of the principal Commanders employed

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

May.

ployed in that Design, I send you inclosed for your better Information; and truly, for my Part, I do rather account it a Miracle than a Victory; and the Glory and Praise be ascribed to God that wrought it; in which, I hope, I derogate nothing from the Merits of the Commanders and Soldiers, who every Man, in his Place and Duty, shewed as much Courage and Resolution as could be expected from Men. When the Town was thus taken, they found their Number and Strength too weak to keep it and their Prisoners, so left the Place and marched away with their Booty.

In taking the Town we lost no Man of Note, and only seven Men in all; of which one was the Clerk of the Stores, an Ensign of Foot, and one Quarter-master of Horse, the rest common Soldiers; but many of our Men were shot and wounded. This Overthrow hath much enraged the Enemy, who threaten a present Revenge, and are drawing all their Forces this Way to effect it.

I perceive there are Succours sent to Lincolnshire and other adjacent Counties, which, if they were here, might be employed to as much Advantage for the Public Safety, as in any Place. I desire our Condition may be seriously thought on by the House, and the Aids, often promised, may presently march away to us; and that Col. Cromwell, with his Horse and Foot, may also be ordered to march to me; that, being joined together, I may be able to draw this Army into the Field, and gain fresh Quarters for the Soldiers, and furnish ourselves with Powder, Arms, and Ammunition; which is now grown very scarce, and cannot be supplied untill the Passage to Hull be forced open, which now is possessed by the Enemy. If such Succours come not timely to us, we cannot long subsist, but must be forced to accept of dishonourable Conditions; which, besides the Loss and Ruin of this Country, will be a great Disadvantage to the general Safety; and, withall, some Course must be thought on to furnish some large Proportion of Money to defray the Soldiers Arrears, which I
be-

beseech you to endeavour for them and me, who An. 19. Car. I.
am 1643.

Your most affectionate

May.

Leeds, May 23,
1643.

Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. *I send you a Letter inclosed from the Lord Goring to his Son, General Goring, found in his Chamber at Wakefield, which will let the House see the Enemies great Desire to have this Army ruined, that they might, with their whole Force, march Southwards.*

Lord GORING's LETTER to his SON.

George,

I Saw what you wrote to *H. Jermin*, and find that the Business will be put on that Way: But I am of Opinion that your General will never consent to it, the latter Way of dividing his Force, unless it be in the Country where he will abide himself; this will be tried To-morrow, at his Return hither, where the Queen expects him. In the Interim, if it were possible to give the Enemy any such Knock, or considerable Disturbance to the Country round about them, which hath not yet felt the Misery of their Neighbours, I would not doubt the Treaty might be resumed again; by which Means, and by no other, your Army may be set at Liberty to change your Stations, and do something that may be of Consequence indeed. I pray you think seriously hereof, and once in your Life follow the Advice of

Your best Friend,

April 17, 1643.

and dearly loving Father,

GORING.

After I had sealed my Letter I was advised to advertise you, that the Lord *Fairfax* never believed

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

May.

lieved you would look into the Parts where now
 you are, but intended to draw back to the Place
 from whence you came, which made him so lofty
 in his Conditions; wherefore, if you can (as my
 Authors propose) get between *Bradford* and *Leeds*,
 you will so annoy, divert, and separate them in
 all their Designs, as you may be sure to carry
Halifax and *Bradford* on that Hand, or *Leeds* on
 the other. Take this to Heart, and let General
King, with my humble Service, know thus much,
 not as new to him and the rest of you, but as that
 which all the wisest and most knowing Men in
 the Country advise and hope; this will so hure
 them, and satisfy this Country, and will give such
 other Advantages as will render you happy and
 glorious too; whereas, on the contrary, all will
 fall flat, both in Power and Reputation, past Ex-
 pression; her Majesty will be either unprovided of
 such a Convoy from thence as is fit for her and
 the King's present Occasions, or else leave this
 Country naked to the Tyranny of the merciless
 Enemy, contrary to Contract and all due Justice.
 This is the Opinion of others far better able to ad-
 vise than he that so heartily prays for you, and is

Next, April 17,

1643.

Yours,

G. ORING.

P. S. Cudgel them to a Treaty, and then let
 us alone for the rest.

A LETTER from Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX and other
 Officers:

ON Saturday Night, the 20th of May, the Lord-
 General gave Order for a Party of 1000 Foot,
 three Companies of Dragoons, and eight Troops of
 Horse, to march from the Garrisons of *Leeds*, *Brad-*
ford, *Halifax*, and *Howley*. Sir Thomas Fairfax
 commanded in Chief; the Foot were commanded by
 Serjeant-Major-General Gifford and Sir William
 Fairfax; the Horse were divided into two Bodies,
 four Troops commanded by Sir Thomas Fairfax, and
 the

the other four Troops by Sir Henry Foulis. Howley An. 19. Car. I.
 was the Rendezvous, where they all met on Saturday 1643.
 last, about Twelve o'Clock at Night; about Two next May.
 Morning they marched away, and coming to Stanley,
 where two of the Enemy's Troops lay with some Dra-
 gooners, that Quarter was beaten up, and about
 twenty-one Prisoners taken. About Four o'Clock in
 the Morning we came before Wakefield; where,
 after some of their Horse were beaten into the Town,
 the Foot, with unspeakable Courage, beat the Enemies
 from the Hedges, which they had lined with Musque-
 teers, into the Town, and assaulted it in two Places,
 Wrengate and Northgate. After an Hour and a
 Half's Fight we recovered one of their Pieces, and
 turned it upon them, and entered the Town at both
 Places, at one and the same Time: When the Barri-
 cadoes were opened, Sir Thomas Fairfax, with the
 Horse, fell into the Town, and cleared the Street;
 where Col. Goring was taken by Lieutenant Alured,
 Brother to Capt. Alured, a Member of the House;
 yet in the Market-Place there stood three Troops of
 Horse, and Col. Lambton's Regiment, to whom Ma-
 jor-General Gifford sent a Trumpet with Offer of
 Quarter, if they would lay down their Arms; they
 answered, They scorned the Motion; then he fired
 a Piece of their own Ordnance upon them, and the
 Horse fell in upon them, beat them out of the Town,
 and took all these Officers hereafter-mentioned, also
 twenty-seven Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horse,
 and about 1500 common Soldiers. The Enemy had in
 Wakefield 3000 Foot, and seven Troops of Horse,
 besides Col. Lambton's Regiment, which came into the
 Town after we had entered it. The Enemy left be-
 hind them four Pieces of Ordnance, with Ammuni-
 tion, which we brought away; and made the follow-
 ing Commanders Prisoners, viz. General Goring;
 Sir Thomas Bland, Lieutenant-Colonel to Sir George
 Wentworth; Lieutenant-Colonels Saint George and
 Macmoyler; Serjeant-Major Carr; Captains, Carr,
 Knight, Wildbore, Rudston, Pemberton, Croft,
 Legard, Lashley, Kayley, and Nuttall; Captain-
 Lieutenant Benson; Serjeant-Major Carnabie, and
 S 2 Capt.

276 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. *Capt. Nuttall left wounded in Wakefield, upon their Engagements to be true Prisoners; Lieutenants, Monckton, Thomas, Wheatley, Kent, and Nicholson; Ensigns, Squire, Vavasor, Maskew, Lambton, Duckett, Stockeld, Baldwinson, Davis, Carr, Gibson, Smathweight, Ballinson, Watson, Smelt, and Haliburton; Cornet Wyvill.*

1643.
June.

THOMAS FAIRFAX, JOHN HOLMAN,
HENRY FOULIS, ROBERT FOWLIS,
JOHN GIFFORD, TITUS LEIGHTON,
WILLIAM FAIRFAX, FRANCIS TALBOT.

Annexed to the foregoing Letter we find Part of a Postscript wrote by another Hand.

I had forgotten, in the Letter to the Speaker, to mention the new Commissions granted by the King; wherein his Majesty, according to the known Laws of the Land (as all Things are said to be done) gives Liberty to the Parties to whom the Commissions are directed, to plunder and take Men's Estates, so as they account for the Moiety of the Profit to his Majesty: This is confessed by the Captains now Prisoners here.

Your Servant,

From Leeds, May 23,
1643.

THOMAS STOCKDELL.

It is now about three Weeks since we had any Letter from you, or any Advertisement from the South.

An Order relating to the Regalia in Westminster Abbey. *June 2. On a Motion in the House of Commons, That the Dean, Sub-Dean, and Prebendaries of Westminster Abbey, should be required to deliver up the Keys of the Treasury there, where the Regalia were kept, that the Place might be searched, and a Report of it made to the House, the Question was put, Whether, upon Refusal of the Keys, the Door of that Place should be broke open? It passed in the Negative, 58 against*

against 37 : But, the next Day, the same Question An. 19. Car. I.
being again put, with the Addition of an Inventory 1643.
of the Things there to be taken, new Locks put
on the Doors, and nothing removed till upon fur-
ther Order of the House, it was carried by so small
a Majority as 42 against 41, for breaking open
the Doors. June.

The important Town of *Newcastle* upon *Tyne* Another for re-
had been, for some Time past, in the Hands of ducing of *New-*
the King's Forces ; by which the City of *London* castle.
was much straitened for Coals, the Works and
Mines for digging this useful Commodity being all
engrossed by the Royalists, as well as the several
Ports from which it was shipped off and conveyed
to *London*. To remedy this great Inconvenience
to the City, after many Consultations and Confe-
rences, a Scheme was published, put on the Foot-
ing of the Adventurers for *Ireland* ; by which
Means those Northern Parts of *England* were to be
as much a conquered Country as the other ; and
the Lands and Estates of many great Families shared
out amongst those who would venture to advance
Money for this Expedition. An Ordinance to that
Purpose was passed by both Houses, about this
Time, and ordered to be printed and published.

June 5. A Petition from the Univerfity of *Cam-*
bridge was presented to the Lords : That of *Oxford*
was, at this Time, protected from the Parliament's
Resentment, by the King's Residence there with
his Army ; but what her Sister suffered is best ex-
pressed in her own Words :

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COM-
MONS now assembled in the High Court of Par-
liament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Univerfity of
Cambridge

*H*Umblly presenteth to your Honourable Considera-
tion the sad dejected State of the Univerfity ;
how our Schools daily grow desolate, mourning the
Petition from the Univerfity of
Cambridge.

278 The Parliamentary HISTORY

AN. 19. CAR. I.
1643.

June.

Absence of their Professors; and their wonted Auditories; how, in our Colleges, our Numbers grow thin and our Revenues short; and what Subsistence we have abroad is, for the most Part, involved in the common Miseries; how, frightened by the neighbouring Noise of War, our Students either quit their Gowns or abandon their Studies; how our Degrees lie disesteemed, and all Hopes of our public Commencements are blasted in the Bud; besides sundry other Inconveniences which we forbear to mention.

We cannot but conceive your Honourable Piety (out of a noble Zeal for Learning) will duly pity our sad Condition; and, as the present general Calamities give Way, afford us some Succour and Encouragement.

Your Wisdoms best know what Privileges and Immunities have been, in all good Times, afforded to the Seats of Learning and Professors of it; and, even in the Fury and Heat of War, Places of Religion and Devotion have usually not only, on both Sides, been spared from Ruin, but supported and esteemed as Sanctuaries. Hence it is that the Members of our University (by Charter confirmed by Act of Parliament) are expressly freed from all Preparations and Contributions to any War; hence it is that, in neighbouring Territories, where the Excise is most in Use, the University, with all their Students, are exempt.

May it therefore not be displeasing to your pious Wisdoms, if, in all Humility, we crave at your Hands a tender Consideration of our Case; that you will be pleased to exempt our poor Estates from all such Rates and Impositions; to vouchsafe such Freedom to our Persons, not giving just Offence, as may enable us the better to keep together, and daily to offer up our joint Prayers to God for a blessed Union betwixt our gracious Sovereign and you, and the Blessing of Peace upon the Land.

After this Petition the Ordinance of the Lords and Commons, formerly made, was read, for the calling an Assembly of learned and godly Divines,

to be consulted with by Parliament, for the settling the Government and Liturgy of the Church of *England*; and vindicating and clearing the Doctrine of the said Church from false Aspersions and Interpretations. This Ordinance was referred to the Consideration of thirteen Lords, appointed as a Committee, to report the same to the House. This Assembly of Divines soon after met, to the Number of sixty-nine, in *Henry VIIIth's Chapel*, in the Abbey of *Westminster*, where a Sermon was preached, before them and the two Houses of Parliament, by *Dr. Twiss*, their Prolocutor; and, a Day or two after, a public Fast was kept by them*. What they did, when met together, will appear in the Sequel.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
June.

Meeting of the
Assembly of Di-
vines at *Westmin-
ster*.

June 8. The House of Commons had been very busy, some Days, in tracing out a Plot against the Parliament, and securing the Authors and Contrivers of it. The Names of these Conspirators were, *Mr. Waller*, a Member of the House of Commons, and one of their late Commissioners at *Oxford*, *Mr. Tomkins*, *Mr. Chaloner*, and others, whose Design, being amply related by *Lord Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, and other Historians, we shall confine our Account of it to what the Journals and the Pamphlets of these Times afford us. It appears from the former that

A Plot against
the Parliament;

This Day, at a Conference, the House of Commons produced the Examinations they had taken concerning this Plot, to prove the Particulars of it, and also made some Observations thereupon. They then presented to the Lords the Form of an Oath, or Covenant, which the Members of their House, for the most Part, had already taken, except a few, who desired some Days to consider of it; and they requested the House of Lords to take also. They further brought up an Oath, or Covenant, to be taken by the whole Kingdom, for Discovery of such Designs as these, and to express a Detestation of

Which gives Rise
to a new Oath,
or Covenant.

* The Ordinance for calling this Assembly is at Length in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 337, and in *Husbands's Collections*, p. 208, whereby it appears that a vast Number more were named than met at this Time.

An. 19. Car.

1643.

Junc.

1. of all of the like Nature. Lastly, they said it was to distinguish the good and the well-affected Party from the bad, and unite the former faster together amongst themselves.

This Affair, *Whitlocke* tells us, was long debated in the House of Commons; but was, at last, carried, and those Members looked upon as disaffected who were any way backward in taking of it. And, after another long Debate, it was ordered to be taken by all Persons, in City and Country; and those who refused it had the Mark of Malignancy fixed upon them.

Next the Commons offered some Votes, which had passed their House to the Lords, for their Concurrence; as,

1. 'That a particular short Day may be appointed, wherein both Lords and Commons, with the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, &c. may meet and give public Thanks to God for this Discovery and great Deliverance.' Agreed; and the 13th Instant appointed for the Parliament and City, and that Day Month for the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That a free Pardon shall be granted for all such Persons that have been in this Plot, and are not yet taken, nor have fled, as shall come in voluntarily before the 15th of this Month, and discover their whole Knowledge of this Design, and shall heartily join with the Parliament in Defence of the Kingdom.

3. 'That it be recommended to the City to have a stricter Guard kept till this Business be settled; and that some better Course may be taken for securing the Prisoners, and keeping them in close Custody.

4. 'That Letters be sent to the Earl of *Warwick*, to inform him of this Plot; and that the said Oath may be taken by all the Officers and Mariners through the whole Fleet.

The Lords agreed to every one of these Votes, without any Alteration.

The

The Commons also thought fit to send a Deputa-
tion of their House into the City, as this Day, to
make the same Narrative to them as was made to
the Lords. Mr. *Pymme*, being chosen Orator for
this Purpose, delivered himself, at a Common-Hall,
in these Words ^b:

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
June.

*My Lord Mayor, and you worthy Citizens of this
famous and magnificent City,*

‘**W**E are sent hither to you from the House
of Commons, to make known to you
the Discovery of a great and mischievous Design,
tending not only to the Ruin and Destruction of
the City and of the Kingdom; but, in those Ruins,
likewise to have buried Religion and Liberty. I
might call it a strange Design (though, in these late
Times, Designs of this Kind have been very fre-
quent) because it exceeds others in divers con-
siderable Circumstances of it; in the Malice of the
Intention, Subtilty of Contrivance, Extent of Mis-
chief, and Nearness of Execution; all which arose
from the Wickedness of the Authors. Two others
may be added; that is, the Clearness of the Dis-
covery and Proof, and the Greatness of the De-
liverance, proceeding from the great Mercies of
God.

Mr. *Pymme*'s
Narrative of the
Plot, as delivered
at the Guildhall.

‘I shall, in the opening this Design, take this
Course for my own Memory and yours; and
observe,

‘*First*, What was in their Aims.

‘*Secondly*, The Variety of Preparations.

‘*Thirdly*, The Degrees of Proceedings. And,

‘*Fourthly*, The Maturity and Readiness for Ex-
ecution.

‘The Parliament, the City, and the Army, seem
to be the three vital Parts of this Kingdom; wherein
not only the Well-being, but the very Life and Be-
ing of it doth consist; this Mischief would have
seized upon all these at once.

‘The

^b From the Original Edition, printed for *Peter Cole*, in *Cornhill*,
near the *Royal Exchange*; and said, in the Title-Page, to be corrected
by Mr. *Pymme*'s own Hand for the Press,

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

‘ The City should have been put into such a Combustion, as to have your Swords imbrued in one another’s Blood : The Parliament should have been corrupted, and betrayed by their own Members : The Army destroyed, if not by Force, yet for Want of Supply and Maintenance, that so they might have had an open and clearer Way to the rest which they had in Proposition ; especially to that main and supreme End, The Extirpation of Religion.

‘ I shall tell you, first, out of what Principles this did rise ; it was from the Ashes of another Design that failed ; that mutinous Petition which was contrived in this City ; the Actors of that Petition being therein disappointed, they fell presently into Consultation how they might compass their former End in another Way ; that is, under Pretence of securing themselves by Force against the Ordinances of Parliament, and, under Pretence of procuring Peace, they would have made themselves Masters of the City, yea of the whole Kingdom ; and they would have ruined and destroyed all those that should have interrupted them in their mischievous Intentions.

‘ The first Step in their Preparation was, To appoint a Committee that might often meet together, and consult how they might compass this wicked End.

‘ Their next was, That they might enable that Committee with Intelligence from both Armies, as well those on the King’s Side, (as they call themselves, though we be of the King’s Side indeed) as those that are raised by the Parliament ; especially they were careful to understand the Proceedings of Parliament, that so, by the Advantage of this Intelligence, they might the better effect that which they had in Project, and find the readiest and the nearest Ways to it.

‘ After they had thus provided for Intelligence, then how to procure Power and Countenance to this Action, by some appearing Authority from his
Ma-

Majesty: For which Purpose they projected to get a Commission from the King, whereby many of themselves, and of those that were of their own Consort, should be established a Council of War in *London* and Parts adjacent, with Power to raise Forces, make Provisions of Ammunition, and of other Kind of Arms, and to give Authority to the leading and conducting of those Forces, and to raise Money for the Maintenance of them; and, as it is expressed in the Commission, for the Destruction of the Army under the Command of *Robert Earl of Essex*, raised by Authority from the two Houses of Parliament.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
June.

‘ Having laid these Grounds, I shall, in the next Place, discover to you those that should have been Actors and Agents in this Business, their several Qualifications and Relations.

‘ The first Sort was some Members of the City, whereof there were divers, you shall hear the Names out of the Proofs; the next was (in their Pretence, as they gave out) Members of the two Houses of Parliament; the third Sort was, two Gentlemen, *Mr. Waller* and a Brother-in-Law of his, *Mr. Tomkins*, that were to be Agents betwixt the Parliament and the City, as they pretended; a fourth Sort was, those that were to be Messengers to convey Intelligence from this Place to the Court at *Oxford*, and to other Places where there should be Occasion; and the fifth and last consisted but in one Man, that we yet discover, and that was the Lord of *Falkland*, that kept Correspondency with them from the Court: These were to be the Actors in this mischievous Design.

‘ They began then to think upon some other Courses of very great Advantage to themselves.

‘ The first was of Combination; how they might be more closely conjoined one to another, and how they might be more secure from all others that were not of the same Party; and, for this Purpose, there was devised a Protestation of Secrecy, whereby, as they were Christians, they did bind them-

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

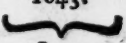
June.

themselves to keep one another's Counsel, not to reveal that which they had Knowledge of, which they were trusted with: And the second was, a Wariness in discovering the Business to any of those who were to be brought into the Plot; for though they came in amongst them to be of them, they would not trust all of their own Body: But they took this wary and subtle Course, that no one Man should acquaint above two in this Business, that so, if it came to Examination, it should never go farther than three, by the same Party that discovered it; and then those two had the like Power, that any one of them might discover it to two others, that so still it might be confined within the Number of three: Then there was a special Obligation, as was pretended by Mr. *Waller*, which he had made to those that he said were Members of both Houses of Parliament, and consenting to this Plot; but that is yet but a Pretence, no Names or Parties are known.

‘ After they had provided thus for their Combination, and for their Security, then, in the next Place, they thought of some Means of Augmentation, how they might increase their Numbers, and draw in others to come to be of their Party; and for this they did resolve to use all their Art and Subtily to irritate Men's Minds against the Parliament; they found out those that thought themselves most heavily burdened with these Taxes; they did cherish all that had any Discontents about the Assessment, advising them to repair to the Committee for Ease, which they knew would be difficult to obtain; and that they, being disappointed, would be more enraged, and the apter to join with them in this Plot.

‘ From this Care of Augmentation, they went, in the next Place, to find out some Means of Discovery; that they might know how far their Party did extend, who were of their Side, and who were against them; and, for this Purpose, they did devise that there should be a Survey of all the Wards,

nay

way of all the Parishes, within the City of *Lon-An.* 19. Car. 1.
don, the Suburbs and Places adjoining in every Pa- 1643.
 rish, to observe those that were for them, whom 
 they called Right Men; and others that were June.
 against them, whom they called Averse Men; and
 then a third Sort, whom they called Neutrals and
 Indifferent Men; and they appointed several Per-
 sons, that were trusted with this Survey and In-
 quiry, to find out these several Degrees and Sorts in
 every Parish.

‘ Thus far this Design seems to be but a Work
 of the Brain, to consist only in Invention and Sub-
 tilty of Design; but the other Steps and Degrees,
 which I shall now observe to you, will make it to be
 a Work of the Hand, to bring it somewhat nearer
 to Execution.

‘ The first Step that came into Action and Exe-
 cution was, That they procured this Commission,
 which they had before designed and endeavoured to
 obtain: Now they had obtained a Commission, as
 I told you before, to establish certain Men, seven-
 teen in Number; their Names are there expressed;
 you shall hear them read to you; they were to
 be a Council of War here within the City; these
 seventeen Men had Power to name others to them-
 selves, to the Number of Twenty-one; and they
 should be enabled both to appoint not only Colo-
 nels and Captains, and other inferior Officers of an
 Army, but to appoint and nominate a General;
 they had Power to raise Men, to raise Arms and
 Ammunition, and to do all those other Things
 that I told you before; and to lay Taxes and Im-
 positions, to raise Money, and to execute Martial
 Law.

‘ When they had gone thus far, in the next Place
 they did obtain a Warrant from the King; and this
 was to Mr. *Chaloner*, that he might receive Money
 and Plate of all those, that, either by voluntary Con-
 tribution or Loan, would furnish the King, in this
 Necessity of his, as they call’d it; and thereby the
 King was obliged to the Repayment of it: This was
 obtained.

‘ By

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

June.

By this cometh in the List; and what was before Part of the Design, cometh now into Act; the Citizens that were trusted with framing of this List brought it in, except in some few Parishes, under those Heads of Discovery that I formerly told you of; that is, in every Parish who were Right, who were Indifferent and Neutral, and who were Averse; and those were brought to Mr. *Waller's* House. After they had delivered that List, the Citizens then declared themselves that now they had done their Part; as they had discovered to them a Foundation of Strength, they did expect from them again a Foundation of Countenance and Authority, that was from both Houses of Parliament; and they did declare that they would proceed no farther till they knew the Names of those Members of both Houses that should join with them, and should undertake to countenance this Business. Mr. *Waller* made this Answer, That he did assure them that they should have Members of both Houses, both Lords and Commons, to join with them; that he himself was but their Mouth; that he spoke not his own Words, but their Words; that he was but their Agent, and did their Work; that they should have of the ablest, of the best, and of the greatest Lords, and the greatest Number; nay, that they should pick and chuse; that they could not wish for a Lord, whom he doubted not but to procure them: This was the Vanity of his Boasting to them to draw them on, and to encourage them in this Plot. This being now done, and propounded by the Citizens on their Part, Mr. *Waller* propounded from the Lords divers Quæries and Questions which had been framed, as he said, by the Lords and Commons; and, in their Name, he did present them that were for the Removal of Difficulties, of some Obstructions, that might hinder this Work: Those Quæries were delivered upon *Friday* was Se'nnight to some of the Citizens, and, upon the *Saturday* Morning, (that was *Saturday* was Se'nnight) they were returned back again with Answers.

'I shall now relate to you both the Quæries and the Answers that were returned by those of the City.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
June.

'The first Quære was, What Number of Men there were armed?

'The Answer to this was, That there was a third Part well armed, a third Part with Halberts, and another third Part with what they could get; with what came to Hand.

'The second Quære was, In what Places the Magazines were laid?

'The Answer to that was, At Alderman *Fowk's* House, at *Leadenhall*, and at *Guildhall*.

'The third Quære was, Where the Rendezvous should be?

'The Answer was, At all the Gates, the Places of the Magazines, in *Cheapside*, in the *Exchange*, and at what other Places the Lords should think fit.

'The fourth Quære was, Where was the Place of Retreat, if there should be Occasion?

'The Answer was, That they had *Banstead Downs*, they had *Blackbeath*, in Proposition; but they did refer the Conclusion of the Place to the Lords.

'The fifth was, What Colours there should be?

'To this it was answered, That at every Rendezvous there should be Colours.

'A sixth Consideration was, By what Marks and Tokens they should be distinguished from others, and know their Friends from their Enemies?

'To this it was answered, That they should have white Ribbons or white Tape.

'Then, in the seventh Place, it was asked, What Strength there was within the Walls, and what Strength without the Walls?

'To this it was answered, That, within the Walls, there was for one with them, three against them; but, without the Walls, for one against them, there were five for them.

'The eighth was, What was to be done with the Tower?

'The

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

June.

‘ The Answer was, That they could conclude nothing in that Point.

‘ The ninth was, Where the Chief Commanders dwelt ?

‘ To that they made this Answer, That every Parish could tell what new Commanders and Captains they had, and who of the Militia dwelt in it.

‘ The tenth and the last was, What Time this should be put in Execution ?

‘ To that the Answer was, That the Time was wholly left to the Lords.

‘ After all these Quæries, thus propounded and answered, Mr. *Waller* told them, That he would acquaint the Lords with those Answers that he had received from them to their Quæries ; and wished them not to be troubled, tho’ the Lords did not yet declare themselves, for they could do them as good Service in the House.

‘ Being proceeded thus far, they came then to some Propositions which should be put in Execution, and they were these :

‘ *First*, That they would take into their Custody the King’s Children that were here.

‘ The *second* was, That they would lay hold of all those Persons that they thought should be able to stand in their Way, or to give them any Impediment, or at least of some considerable Number of them ; it is unlike that all were named, but some were named ; of the Lords’ House there were named my Lord *Say* and my Lord *Wharton* ; and besides my Lord Mayor, whom they took into their Consideration as the Head of the City, there were named of the House of Commons, Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Mr. *Hampden*, Mr. *Strode* ; and they did me the Honour and Favour to name me too.

‘ When they had taken into Consideration the Surprizal of these Members of both Houses, they did take into their further Resolution, that, with my Lord Mayor, should have been seized all your Committee of Militia ; they would not spare one of them.

‘ They

‘ They intended further, that they would release all Prisoners that had been committed by the Parliament; that they would seize upon the Magazines; that they would make a Declaration to satisfy the People.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

‘ There are no Designs, be they never so ill, but they do put on a Mask of some Good, for betwixt that that is absolutely and apparently ill, there is no Congruity with the Will of Man; and therefore the worst of Evils are undertaken under a Shadow and a Shew of Goodness: A Declaration must be set out, to make the People believe that they stood up for the Preservation of Religion, for the Preservation of the King’s Prerogative, of the Liberties of the Subject, of the Privileges of Parliament; and of these 1000 Copies were to be printed; they were to be set upon Posts and Gates in the most considerable and open Places; and they were to be dispersed, as much as they could, through the City against the Time it should be put in Execution: This was done upon *Saturday* last was *Se’n* night, in the Morning.

‘ Then, in the next Place, they thought fit to give Intelligence to the Court of what Proceedings they had made here; and thereupon *Mr. Hazel* was sent to *Oxford*, that very *Saturday* in the Afternoon, from *Mr. Waller’s* House. There were two Messages sent by him, for this main Design they would not trust in Writing: The first Message was from *Mr. Waller*, That he should tell my Lord of *Falkland*, that he would give him a more full Notice of the great Business very speedily: The other Message was from *Mr. Tomkins*, and that was, That the Design was now come to good Maturity; that they had so strong a Party in the City, that tho’ it was discovered, yet they would be able to put it in Execution: They promised to give Notice to the King of the very Day, and, if it were possible, of the very Hour, wherein this should be put in Execution; and then they did desire, when they had seized upon the Outworks, that there might some Party of the King’s Army come up

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

within fifteen Miles of the City, who, upon Knowledge of their Proceedings, must be admitted into the City. These were the four Points upon which the Message did consist, which was sent from Mr. Tomkins to my Lord of Falkland, by Mr. Hazel. To both these Messages my Lord of Falkland returned an Answer by Word of Mouth; (they kept themselves so closely that they durst not venture to write) and he bid the Messenger tell Mr. Waller, Mr. Tomkins, and Mr. Hampden, (a Gentleman that was sent up with a Message from the King, and remained here in Town to agitate this Business, and made that Use of his being here in Town) That he could not well write, and did excuse himself; but prayed them that they would use all possible Haste in the main Business.

Mr. Waller having plotted it, and brought it on thus far, now he began to think of pushing it further; and, the Tuesday following this Saturday, which was Tuesday was Se'nnight in the Evening, after he came home to his Lodging, Mr. Tomkins and he being together, he told him, That the very next Morning, that was Wednesday, the Fast-Day, he should go to my Lord of Holland, and acquaint him with this Plot, and discover so much to him as he thought fit; that he himself would go to some other Lords, and do the like. This was the Tuesday Night, in which Conference they put on that Confidence in Expectation of Success in this Plot, that Mr. Waller broke out with a great Oath to affirm, That if they did carry this through-out, then they would have any Thing. This he spoke to Mr. Tomkins with a very great deal of Earnestness and Assurance. So far they went on in Hope and Expectation; but here they were cut short: That very Night there were Warrants issued, upon some Discoveries that were made of this Plot, to the Lord Mayor, and to the Sheriffs here; which they did execute with so much Diligence and Care of the Good of the City, that the next Morning, when Mr. Tomkins and Mr. Waller should have gone about their Business, they were apprehended, and

and the rest of the Citizens, divers of them, but An. 19. Car. I. 1643. some escaped.

‘ Thus far I have discovered to you the Materials and the Lineaments of this mischievous Design; you shall now be pleased to hear the Proofs and the Confessions out of which this Narration doth arise, and that will make all this good to you that I have said. And, after those are read, I shall then tell you what hath been done since in the House of Commons, somewhat in the House of Lords, and what else is in Proposition to be offered to you from the House of Commons; but I shall desire you first, that you may be fully convinced of the great Goodness of God in Discovery of this Plot, and the Truth of these Things that I have spoken to you, that you will hear the Evidence of the Proofs; and then we shall go on to those other Things which we have in Charge.

June.

The Proofs being read, Mr. *Pymme* proceeded thus:

‘ Gentlemen, we have held you long, you are now almost come to the End of your Trouble; I am to deliver to you some short Observations upon the whole Matter, and then to acquaint you with the Resolutions thereupon taken in the House of Commons; and to conclude with a few Desires from them to you.

‘ The Observations are these:

First, ‘ I am to observe to you the Contrariety betwixt the Pretences, with which this Design hath been masked, and the Truth: One of the Pretences was Peace; the Truth was Blood and Violence: Another of the Pretences was, the preserving of Property; the Truth was, the introducing of Tyranny and Slavery, which leaves no Man Master of any Thing he hath.

‘ A *second* Observation is this: The unnatural Way by which they meant to compass this wicked Design, that was, To destroy the Parliament by the Members of Parliament; and then, by the Carcass and Shadow of a Parliament, to destroy the Kingdom: What is a Parliament but a Carcass when

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

the Freedom of it is suppressed? When those shall be taken away by Violence, that can, or will, oppose and stand in the Way of their Intentions? The High Court of Parliament is the most certain and constant Guardian of Liberty; but if it be deprived of its own Liberty, it is left without Life or Power to keep the Liberty of others. If they should bring a Parliament to be subject to the King's Pleasure, to be correspondent, as they call it, to his Will, in the Midst of such evil Councils which now are predominant, there would little or no Cure be left; but then all Things that are most mischievous would seem to be done by Law and Authority.

The *third* Observation is this: With what an evil Conscience these Men undertook this Work: They that pretended to take Arms to defend their own Property, obtained a Commission to violate the Property of others: They would take the Assertion of the Laws of the Land; but assumed to themselves such a Power as was most contrary to that Law; to seize upon their Persons without due Process; to impose upon their Estates without Consent; to take away some Lives by the Law Martial; and, besides all this, without any Commission, they intended to alter the Government of the City, which is now governed by your own Council, by a Magistrate chosen by yourselves, then to be governed by Violence.

The *fourth* Observation is this: That the mischievous Effect of this Design would not have ceased in the first Night's Work; all the godly Part in the Kingdom, all faithful Ministers especially, would have been left not only to the Scorn and Reproach, but to the Hatred, Malice, and Cruelty, of the Papists and Malignants.

The *fifth* and last Observation I shall make to you is this: That this Matter was prosecuted in Part, and agitated and promoted by those that were sent from the King, and seemed to be Messengers of Peace; and while we should be amused with the Pretences of gracious Messages to propose Peace, this villainous Project, which should have set you all

all in Blood, was promoted by those Messengers, An. 19. Car. I.
and should have been put in Execution very shortly
after. This is all I shall trouble you with by way
of Observation. 1643.
June.

‘ The Matters resolved on in the House of Commons are these Things :

‘ *First*, That there may be public Thanksgiving to God, both in the City and throughout the Kingdom, for this great Deliverance; that a near Day be appointed for the City, the Parliament, and the Parts adjacent, and a convenient Day for other Parts of the Kingdom.

‘ The *next* Thing resolved on was, That the House of Peers should be made acquainted with these Proofs, and with all this Discovery; which hath been done accordingly.

‘ It was likewise resolved, That there should be a Covenant made, whereby we should both testify our Detestation of this mischievous Plot, and join ourselves more closely in the Maintenance of the common Interest of the Church and Commonwealth, in Religion and Liberty, which are still in great Danger, and would have been utterly subverted, if this Project had taken Effect.

‘ It was resolved in the *fourth* Place, which is now partly executed, That this should be communicated to you of the City; that so, as you have a great Part in the Blessing, you may do your Part in the Duty of Thankfulness, together with us.

‘ It is further resolved, That it shall be communicated to the Army, that they likewise take Notice of this great Mercy of God, and join with us, both in the Thanksgiving and in the Protestation and Covenant, as we shall likewise desire you of the City to do.

‘ Then we are commanded to give Thanks to my Lord Mayor, to the Sheriffs, and to the rest of the Officers of the City; for their great Care in the apprehending of these Persons, in guarding the Peace and Quiet of the City.

‘ We are likewise to give Thanks to those Gentlemen that have had the Custody of these Prisoners.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

We know it cannot but be a Trouble to them; but there was no Means to keep them safe from Mes-
sages one to another, and from Speeches, but by
such a Way of putting them in honest Men's Hands;
therefore the House of Commons have commanded
us to give them special Thanks for their undertaking
this Care, and to assure them that they will see them
fully recompensed for all the Trouble and Charge
they shall undergo by it.

And we are to give you Thanks, which are the
Citizens of this City, for your good Affections to the
Public Cause, and for your continual Bounty for the
Support of it.

Thus far we are enjoined by the Resolution of
the House: Now we are further to intreat you to
hear both the Covenants; you shall thereby know
to what we have bound ourselves, and to what we
desire you should be bound. There are two Cove-
nants; that is, one proper for the Houses of Parlia-
ment, which hath been taken in the House of Com-
mons by all the Members, even by those Gentlemen
that are named in the Examinations to have been
privy to this Plot, which they all have disavowed;
and the other Covenant is to be taken by all the
other Part of the Kingdom; by the Citizens, by
the Army, and the rest of the People generally in
all Places.

The Draught of these two Covenants we shall
communicate to you; the House of Lords they have
had them already, and have taken them into Consi-
deration; and we hear they do resolve, That what
is appointed for them shall be taken by the Members
of that House.

We are further to desire you, That you would
co-operate with the Divine Providence, in God's
great Mercy to this City and the whole Kingdom:
God doth not only do Good, but thereby gives As-
surance that he will do Good; his Mercies they are
Comforts for the present, they are Pledges for the
future; but yet our Care must not cease.

We are to desire that you would keep your
Guards, and look well to your City; and that you
would

would find out these evil Members that are among you, as near as may be; that so, for the Time to come, this Plot may be prevented, as hitherto it hath been stopped; for out of Doubt all the Malignity is not drawn out of them, though the Opportunity is hindered for the present putting it in Execution

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

‘I am to tell you further, That, in Desire to win those that shall be taken with Remorse for this wicked Design and Conspiracy, it is resolved, That if any Man shall come in before the 15th Day of this present *June*, and freely confess his Fault, and what he knows of this Conspiracy, that he shall have a full, free, and plenary Pardon for the Time to come, except those that are already taken or fled; I say, those that come in voluntarily shall be pardoned.

‘Your Care, and our Care, they will be all little enough; we hope God’s Blessing will be so upon them both, that you shall be restored to a full Peace; and that, in the mean Time, you shall enjoy such a Degree of Safety and Prosperity as may make Way to it.’

To return to the Proceedings at *Westminster*:—

June 9. The Lords having considered of the Vow and Covenant, brought up by the Commons, judged it a voluntary Oath, and proper to be given to every Member of their House in a solemn and serious Manner. Accordingly every Lord, beginning at the youngest Baron, and going upwards according to their Degrees, held the Paper in their Hands, and read it distinctly as follows:

‘**W**Hereas there hath been, and now is, in this Kingdom, a Popish and Traiterous Plot, for the Subversion of the true Protestant Reformed Religion, and the Liberty of the Subject: And, in pursuance thereof, a Popish Army hath been raised, and is now on Foot in divers Parts of this Kingdom: And whereas there hath been a treacherous and horrid Design lately discovered

The Covenant,
taken by the
Lords on that
Occasion.

296 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

June.

vered by the great Blessing and special Providence of God, of divers Persons, to join themselves with the Armies raised by the King, and to destroy the Forces raised by the Lords and Commons in Parliament; to surprize the Cities of London and Westminster, with the Suburbs, and, by Arms, to force the Parliament; and finding, by constant Experience, that many Ways of Force and Treachery are continually attempted to bring to utter Ruin and Destruction the Parliament and Kingdom, and, that which is dearest, the true Protestant Religion; and that, for the preventing and withstanding the same, it is fit that all, who are true-hearted and Lovers of their Country, should bind themselves each to other in a sacred Vow and Covenant:

IA B, in Humility and Reverence of the Divine Majesty, declare my hearty Sorrow for my own Sins, and the Sins of this Nation, which have deserved the Calamities and Judgments that now lie upon it: And my true Intention is, by God's Grace, to endeavour the Amendment of my own Ways. And I do further, in the Presence of Almighty God, declare, vow, and covenant, That, in order to the Security and Preservation of the true Reformed Protestant Religion, and Liberty of the Subject, I will not consent to the laying down of Arms, so long as the Papists, now in open War against the Parliament, shall, by Force of Arms, be protected from the Justice thereof: And that I do abhor and detest the said wicked and treacherous Design lately discovered; and that I never gave, nor will give, my Assent to the Execution thereof; but will, according to my Power and Vocation, oppose and resist the same, and all others of the like Nature: And in Case any other like Design shall hereafter come to my Knowledge, I will make such timely Discovery as I shall conceive may best conduce to the preventing thereof. And whereas I do in my Conscience believe, That the Forces raised by the two Houses of Parliament, are raised and continued for their just Defence, and for the Defence of the true Pro-

Protestant Religion, and Liberty of the Subject, An. 19. Car. I.
 against the Forces raised by the King, that I will, 1643.
 according to my Power and Vocation, assist the Forces
 raised and continued by both Houses of Parliament,
 against the Forces raised by the King, without their
 Consent: And will likewise assist all other Persons
 that shall take this Oath, in what they shall do in
 pursuance thereof; and will not, directly or indirectly,
 adhere unto, nor willingly assist, the Forces raised by
 the King, without the Consent of both Houses of Par-
 liament. And this Vow and Covenant I make in the
 Presence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts,
 with a true Intention to perform the same, as I shall
 answer at the Great Day, when the Secrets of all
 Hearts shall be disclosed.

At the same Time, however, it was moved and
 agreed to by the Lords, That a short Declaration
 might be drawn up, and taken by them, the House
 of Commons, and the whole Kingdom, declaring
 their Loyalty to the King's Person, his Crown and
 Dignity; and a Committee of eleven Lords were
 ordered to draw it up and report it to the House.

June 11. The Earl of Portland^a and the Lord
 Viscount Conway being accused, by the House of
 Commons, of being concerned in Mr. Waller's Plot,
 they were sequestered from the Lords' House and
 committed; the one to the Custody of the Lord
 Mayor of London, and the other to one of the Sher-
 riffs; but their Lands and Goods not to be seized
 on, till, upon Trial, it appeared they were guilty of
 the Charge against them.

The Liberty of the Press having, of late, been
 very grievous to the Parliament, they passed an Or-
 dinance to restrain it, and to strengthen some for-
 mer Orders made for that Purpose. This extraor-
 dinary Stretch into *English* Liberty, by those who
 pretended to be the Preservers of it, deserves our
 Notice.

The

^a Jerome Weston.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

June.

An Ordinance
for restraining
the Liberty of
the Press.

The Preamble to this Ordinance sets forth,

‘ **T**HAT whereas divers good Orders have been
‘ lately made, by both Houses of Parliament,
‘ for suppressing the great Abuses and frequent Dis-
‘ orders in printing many false, forged, scandalous,
‘ seditious, libellous, and unlicensed Papers, Pam-
‘ phlets, and Books, to the great Defamation of
‘ Religion and Government; which have taken
‘ little or no Effect, by reason the Bill in Prepa-
‘ ration, for Redress of the said Disorders, hath
‘ hitherto been retarded: And that, through the
‘ present Distractions, very many Persons, as well
‘ Stationers and Printers, as others of sundry other
‘ Professions, have taken upon them to set up pri-
‘ vate Printing Presses in Corners, and to print,
‘ vend, publish, and disperse Books, Pamphlets, and
‘ Papers in such Multitudes, that no Industry could
‘ be sufficient to discover or bring to Punishment
‘ all the several abounding Delinquents: There-
‘ fore, &c.

The most material Clauses are these;

‘ That no Order or Declaration of either House
‘ of Parliament shall be printed without Order of
‘ one or both the said Houses; nor any other Book,
‘ Pamphlet, Paper, nor Part of any such Book,
‘ Pamphlet, or Paper, shall, from henceforth, be
‘ printed, bound, stich’d, or put out to Sale, by any
‘ Person or Persons whatsoever, unless the same be
‘ first approved and licensed under the Hands of
‘ such Persons as both or either of the said Houses
‘ shall appoint for licensing of the same; and be
‘ entered in the Register-Book of the Company of
‘ Stationers, according to antient Custom, and the
‘ Printer thereof to put his Name thereto.

‘ The Master and Wardens of the said Company,
‘ the Gentleman-Usher of the House of Peers, the
‘ Serjeant of the Commons’ House, and their Depu-
‘ ties, together with the Persons formerly appointed
‘ by the Committee of the House of Commons
‘ for Examinations, are authorized and required
‘ to

to make diligent Search in all Places, where they shall think meet, for all unlicensed Printing Presses, and all Presses any way employed in the Printing of scandalous or unlicensed Papers, Pamphlets, or Books; and to seize and carry away such Printing Presses, Letters, and other Materials, of every such irregular Printer, which they find so misemployed, unto the Common-Hall of the said Company, there to be defaced and made unserviceable, according to antient Custom; and likewise to make diligent Search in all suspected Printing-Houses, Ware-Houses, Shops, and other Places, for such scandalous and unlicensed Books, Papers, Pamphlets, and all other Books, not entered, nor signed with the Printer's Name as aforesaid, being printed contrary to this Order; and the same to seize and carry away to the said Common-Hall, there to remain till both or either House of Parliament shall dispose thereof; and likewise to apprehend all Authors, Printers, and other Persons whatsoever employed in compiling, printing, stitching, binding, publishing, and dispersing of the said scandalous, unlicensed, and unwarrantable Papers, Books, and Pamphlets as aforesaid; and all those who shall resist the said Parties in searching after them, and bringing them before either of the Houses or the Committee of Examinations, that so they may receive such further Punishments as their Offences shall demerit; and not to be released untill they have given Satisfaction to the Parties employed in their Apprehension for their Pains and Charges, and sufficient Caution not to offend in like Sort for the future.

All Justices of the Peace, Captains, Constables, and other Officers, are ordered and required to be aiding and assisting to the aforesaid Persons in the due Execution of all and singular the Premises, and in the Apprehension of all Offenders against the same; and, in case of Opposition, to break open Doors and Locks, &c.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643

June.

June

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

June 14. The Affair of the Great Seal came on again in the House of Lords, when the Earl of *Holland*, from the Committee appointed to prepare Heads for a Conference on this Affair, reported, That the Sense of the Committee was, That the Votes of this House should be first read, and then to add, That the Parliament having, in all their Actions and Resolutions, gone upon the Power of their Ordinances, the Lords conceive it will be proper to continue upon that Ground. That the making of a new Great Seal will not hinder the Use and Power of the King's Great Seal; but if they found the Sealing of Original Writs of Error be denied, they would join with the Commons in their Care to do what will be necessary and advantageous to the Parliament, the free Course of Justice, and the Laws of the Kingdom.

June 16. The Earl of *Northumberland* reported from the Committee a Draught of what they thought proper to be taken, to declare the Loyalty of the Lords to the King's Person, his Crown and Dignity; which was read:

A Declaration
made by the
Lords, of their
Loyalty to the
King's Person,

We the Lords and Commons do further declare, That our Intentions have been, and still are, to our Power, to maintain, preserve, and defend his Majesty's Person and just Rights of the Crown; together with the Persons of his Royal Issue; and that we shall use our utmost Endeavours in pursuance of the same.

Ordered, To communicate this to the House of Commons the next Morning, at a Conference: And, at the same Time, to offer somewhat to them for composing the present Distractions and settling Peace between the King and Parliament.

June 17. A Committee of Lords were appointed to consider of this last Article; and, after some Time, the Lord *Say* and *Sels* brought in a Draught of

of what they had to offer for that Purpose; which was as follows : An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

June.

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, having a deep Sense of the present Miseries of this your Kingdom, and of the Christian Blood, the Blood of your Subjects, that hath been spilt in this unnatural War: To prevent the Desolation and Ruin of this Kingdom, the Destruction of your People, and the Danger of your own Royal Person and Children, do again, in all Humility, petition your Majesty, that you will be pleased, before the Armies be engaged in Battle, they being now drawn near together, to accept of our humble Answer to your Majesty's first Proposition, and agree unto the first Proposition presented unto you by the Hands of our Commissioners, for the Disbanding of all Armies; whereby your Kingdom will be restored to the former happy Condition of Peace, and the sad Accidents and Consequences of a Civil War be prevented; and that, as the most likely Means to compose and settle these unhappy Differences between you and your People, you will please to return to your Parliament, your great and most faithful Council, whose Advice your Majesty will find more conducing to your Greatness, Honour, and Safety, than the Council of some few about you; whose Counsels if they may prevail, we find all our Petitions and Endeavours for the Peace of this Kingdom to be fruitless.

And a Draught of a Petition to the King for Peace.

If God shall make us so happy as to incline your Majesty's Heart to this our humble Petition, which your Parliament and Kingdom may expect from your Justice and Goodness, our Endeavours and Counsels shall all be directed to settle the true Protestant Religion, your Majesty's just Rights, the Preservation and Safety of your Royal Person and Children, and the Laws of

An. 19. Car. 1. 'of the Kingdom, the Liberties of the Subject, and
1643. 'the Privileges of Parliament.'

June.

Ordered, That this Petition be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference ; and to be delivered to the King in the same Manner as one was at *Shrewsbury*.

June 21. Nothing else, memorable, intervening, the Committee for managing this Conference reported what they thought fit to be offered at it, to the Commons, along with the Petition ; which was as follows :

The Reasons offered to the Commons for their Concurrence therein,

'The Lords looking, with much Compassion, upon the divided and distracted Condition of this Kingdom, and that, in all Probability, the Continuance of the War in Christendom will only remain amongst ourselves, in these our sad and civil Divisions, they have been moved, from the Tenderneſs they owe to the Preservation of this Kingdom, to make a further Trial of his Majesty's Inclinations to the Peace of it, and consequently to the Peace of his other Kingdoms ; which, in all human Reason, doth depend upon the Peace and Safety of this ; and likewise to shew to his Majesty, and all the World, that we are still, upon our first Grounds and Principles, to petition him for Peace ; thereby to make it visible to his Majesty, and the whole Kingdom, that we still pursue the Ways of Peace ; which will either procure us that Happiness, or make the Miseries that we and the Kingdom must expect, by a Battle between these near-approached Armies, the more supportable by the Unavoidableness of it ; and this we desire may no way weaken, or contradict, the Covenant and Vow we have united ourselves in, but rather pursue the same ; in that we do desire the Force, whereby Papists are protected against the Justice of Parliament, may be laid down before we lay down our Arms ; neither is it intended to draw on any Treaty, but alone to receive the King's present and positive Answer.'

June

June 22. The Lords sent down to acquaint the An. 19. Car. 1.
other House, That they had added two more of 1643.
their Body to the Committee of Sequestration, and
had given them Power to compound and regulate
that Ordinance, by making some Allowance to Wi-
dows and Children for their Maintenance; desiring
the Commons to add a proportionable Number of
their House, and also to give the like Power to
them. But this merciful Disposition of the Lords
was not complied with, at this Time, by the Lower
House.

A Committee of Commons had been busy some
Time, in framing Articles of Impeachment against
the Queen, in order to support the Charge they had
exhibited to the Lords. And, this Day, they had
proceeded so far as to appoint Mr. *Stroud* to go up,
and desire a Conference with them concerning these
Articles. Whether this Message was sent or not,
we cannot learn, for there is no Entry, in the *Lords*
Journals, relating to it.

June 24. The Assembly of Divines being now
ready to sit to do Business, the Lords thought pro-
per to order, That all Ministers employed in the
next public Monthly Fast, should, in their Prayers,
particularly and earnestly desire the Assistance and
Blessing of Almighty God upon that Assembly, for
carrying on the great Work: And that the said
Assembly should meet in *Henry* the Seventh's Cha-
pel, on the 30th Instant, at Nine in the Morning.
Agreed to by the Commons.

June 26. This Day the Lord *Say* and *Sele* ac-
quainted the Lords, That he had received a Letter
from the King, in which was inclosed a Proclama-
tion from his Majesty, which was read:

‘ **W** Hereas we have been long since driven by The King's Pro-
‘ Force and Violence from our Palace at clamation, for-
‘ *Westminster*, (the Place of Sitting for us and our bidding Obedi-
‘ two Houses of this Parliament) so that we could ence to the Par-
‘ not, with Safety of our Life, be present with our liament, and for
‘ Great *Oxford*. calling the Mem-
‘ bers to him at

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643

June,

Great Council; and much the greater Part of the Members of both Houses of Parliament have been likewise driven, by Tumults and Force, for their Safety, from their Attendance upon that Council, the said Members having been threatened and assaulted for delivering their Opinions freely in the Houses; or have, out of Conscience and Duty, withdrawn themselves from being present at the Debates and Resolutions, which they have well known to be so contrary to their Duty and Allegiance; or, for so withdrawing, or for freely speaking in the Houses, have been expelled or suspended from being Members of that Council, contrary to the antient Practice and just Privileges of Parliament. Since which Time, and by which Means, a great and rebellious Army hath been raised against us, under the Command of *Robert* Earl of *Essex*; which Army hath not only endeavoured to take away our Life from us in a set Battle, but the same, and other Forces raised by the like Means, have committed all the Acts of Outrage, Robbery, and Murder, upon our good Subjects throughout the Kingdom, and still continue to do the same.

And though, in Truth, a very small Part of that Great Council remain there together; yet, under Pretence of having the Countenance of our two Houses of Parliament, some seditious Persons assume to themselves (with the Assistance of those rebellious Armies, and of divers mutinous and desperate Brownists, Anabaptists, and other ill-affected Persons in our City of *London*, by whose Means they awe such Members of both Houses who yet continue amongst them) a Power to do Things absolutely contrary to the Laws of the Land, and destructive to our Rights, and to the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and to alter the whole Frame and Government of this Kingdom; disposing of the Lives and Fortunes of us and our good Subjects, according to their Discretion; subjecting both to their own unlimited Arbitrary Power and Government.

We

‘ We have only accused some particular Persons, An. 19. Car. I.
 ‘ whom we well know to be the Authors and Con- 1643.
 ‘ trivers of these desperate Counsels and Actions ;
 ‘ and have forborne to censure, or charge, the whole
 ‘ Number of the Members remaining, by whose
 ‘ Orders and Authority the Evils have been pretend-
 ‘ ed to be done ; hoping that the Sense of the misfe-
 ‘ rable Distractions of the Kingdom would, at length,
 ‘ have brought them to discern where they had
 ‘ erred ; and our often Messages and Complaints of
 ‘ the Violence offered to us, and to the Members of
 ‘ both Houses, would have procured Justice and
 ‘ Redress : And that the Power and Reputation of
 ‘ such amongst them, who wished well to the Peace
 ‘ of the Kingdom, and Honour and Dignity of Par-
 ‘ liaments, would have at last so far prevailed, that a
 ‘ right Understanding might have been begotten be-
 ‘ twixt us and our People ; and all Shew of Force
 ‘ and Violence so taken away and suppressed, that
 ‘ we might, in a full and peaceable Convention of
 ‘ Parliament, with the Advice of that our Great
 ‘ Council, have so settled the present Distempers,
 ‘ that there might be no Fear left of the like for the
 ‘ future.

‘ But finding, to our great Grief, that the Power
 ‘ of those seditious Persons, who first contrived
 ‘ these desperate and bloody Distractions, continues
 ‘ so great ; that as they have driven, and now keep
 ‘ us, and the much greater Part of both Houses,
 ‘ from being present at that Council ; so they
 ‘ so far awe those who remain there, that they
 ‘ cannot, with Freedom, give their Votes and
 ‘ Resolutions according to their Consciences, and
 ‘ the Laws and Constitutions of the Kingdom :
 ‘ That the Members of both Houses have been
 ‘ compelled to make Protections to live and die
 ‘ with the Earl of *Essex*, the General of the re-
 ‘ bellious Army, and other unlawful and treason-
 ‘ able Protections ; and that such who have re-
 ‘ fused to take the said Protections, have been
 ‘ expelled and imprisoned for such their Refusal :
 ‘ That the great Affairs of the Kingdom are
 Vol. XII. U mana-

1 An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

Junc.

managed and concluded by a private Committee, without being ever reported to the Houses, contrary to the Laws and Rules of Parliament: That the Common Council of *London*, most of them being Persons factiously chosen out of Brownists, Anabaptists, and such who oppose the regular wholesome Government of that City, and have promised themselves the Destruction of the Church, are grown the Superintendents over both Houses, and obtrude upon them what Conclusions and Resolutions they please: That they take upon them to justify this Rebellion against us, and have presumed, under Pretence of the Order of both Houses, to invite foreign Forces to invade this Kingdom: To send Agents to foreign Princes, to negotiate and treat with them in their own Names: To imprison our good Subjects contrary to Law, prohibiting our Judges to grant *Habeas Corpus* according to Law: To introduce a new Clergy throughout the Kingdom, by displacing godly learned Divines, without the least Colour of Law or judicial Proceedings, and putting ignorant and seditious Preachers in their Places, to poison the Hearts of the People: To countenance the Vilifying of the Book of the Common-Prayer, established by the Law of the Land: To seize, levy, and take away what they please of the Estates and Fortunes of our Subjects, by disposing of the twentieth Part of their Estates, by exhausting them with unsupportable Weekly Taxes for the Maintenance of their rebellious Army, and by endeavouring to lay odious Excises upon Victuals, Goods, and Merchandize of our People for the same Purpose; while they suffer our poor Protestant Subjects of our Kingdom of *Ireland*, whose Defence was undertaken by our two Houses, and that Army raised for the suppressing of that horrid Rebellion to be starved and in Danger of disbanding, or necessitated to desert that Kingdom for Want of Money, Victuals, and such other Necessaries as were to be provided for them by Act of Parliament,

ment, out of those Monies which they have spent An. 19. Car. 1.
 to destroy us and this Kingdom: By exacting 1643.
 from Merchants Tonnage and Poundage, and
 other Impositions upon Merchandizes, as well
 Native as Foreign, contrary to an Act made this
 present Parliament, with a Penalty of *Premunire*
 on those who shall pay or receive it: And, last-
 ly, that they have (after the breaking off the late
 Treaty, by a peremptory recalling their Com-
 mittee, who, in Truth, during their Abode with
 us, had no Power to treat by reason of their strict
 Limitation) so far rejected all possible Means and
 Overtures of Treaty and Accommodation, that,
 instead of answering our gracious Messages, the
 House of Commons hath imprisoned our Mes-
 senger sent by us to them, to invite both Houses
 to an Accommodation; and especially to move
 them to take such a Course for the Freedom of
 Parliament, that we might safely advise with
 that our Great Council for the settling those mi-
 serable Distractions and Distempers: And hath
 maliciously, and in Contempt of us, after an
 Attempt to murder our Royal Consort, in *Brid-*
lington Road, (the Place of her Landing) im-
 peached her of High Treason, for assisting us
 with Arms and Ammunition to defend us from
 this Rebellion: 'Tis Time now to let our good
 Subjects know, that they may no longer look
 upon the Votes and Actions of the Persons now
 remaining, as upon our two Houses of Parlia-
 ment; Freedom and Liberty to be present, and
 of Opinion and Debate there, being essential to
 a Parliament; which Freedom and Liberty all
 Men must confess to be taken away from this
 Assembly, when they remember the great Tu-
 mults brought down to awe and terrify both
 Houses; and that they were then brought down
 when any great Debate was in either House, and
 not like to be so carried as some seditious Persons,
 who governed those Tumults, did desire; that,
 in the greatest Heat and Fury of those Tumults,

June

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

June.

the principal Governors amongst them directed the unruly People to go to *Whitehall*, where our own Person then was; and designed, by Force, to have surprized the Person of our Son the Prince; that, when it was desired that a Declaration might be made against such Tumults, instead of consenting thereunto, the Tumults themselves were justified; and when a legal Course was prescribed by the Lords, and taken by the proper Ministers of Justice, to suppress and prevent such Tumults and Riots, that legal Course was superseded by those who were then present of the House of Commons, and the Ministers of Justice punished and imprisoned for executing the Law. When they remember that several Members of either House have been threatened and assaulted in those Tumults, and their own Names proscribed as Persons disaffected, because they freely used to speak their Consciences in both Houses: That the House of Peers have been so far threatened and menaced, that the Names of those have been, with Threats, demanded by the House of Commons at the Bar of the Lords' House, who refused to consent to this or that Proposition which had been in Debate before them; and tumultuous Petitions countenanced, which have been presented to that same Purpose: That the Members of both Houses have been imprisoned, and forbid to be present at those Councils, for no Reasons but because their Opinion hath not been liked: That our negative Voice (our greatest and most sovereign Privilege) is boldly denied: That a presumptuous Attempt hath been made, by the major Part of the remaining Part of the House of Commons, to make our Great Seal of *England*; the making of which, by the express Letter of the Law, is High Treason, and would subvert the antient and fundamental Administration of Justice: That, at this Time, we and the major Part of both Houses are kept, by a strong and rebellious Army, from being present

at

‘at that Council; and that those who are present
 ‘are, by the same Army, awed and forced to take
 ‘unlawful and treasonable Protestations to engage
 ‘their Votes: And that such Resolutions and Di-
 ‘rections, which concern the Property and Liberty
 ‘of the Subjects, are transacted and concluded
 ‘by a few Persons, (under the Name of a Close
 ‘Committee, consisting of the Earl of *Manche-*
 ‘*ster*, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pymme*, Mr. *Hampden*,
 ‘Mr. *Stroud*, Mr. *Martin*, and others, the whole
 ‘Number not exceeding the Number of seventeen
 ‘Persons) without reporting the same to the Houses,
 ‘or having the same confirmed by the Houses,
 ‘contrary to the expresse Law and Customs of Par-
 ‘liament.

An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 June.

‘All these, for the Matter of Fact, we are ready
 ‘to make Proof of, and desire nothing but to bring
 ‘the Contrivers of all the aforesaid Mischiefs to
 ‘their Trial by Law; and, till that be submitted
 ‘to, we must pursue them by Arms or any other
 ‘Way, in which our good Subjects ought to give
 ‘us Assistance to that Purpose: The imagining
 ‘the Death of us, our Royal Consort, or our
 ‘eldest Son; the levying War against us in our
 ‘Realm; giving to them Aid or Comfort; the
 ‘Counterfeiting our Great Seal or Money, be-
 ‘ing, by the expresse Words of the Statute of the
 ‘twenty-fifth Year of *Edward III. Cap. 2.* High
 ‘Treason: And how applicable this is to those
 ‘who have borne Arms against us, and to those
 ‘who have consented that such Arms be borne;
 ‘to those who have promised to live and die with
 ‘the Earl of *Essex*, and to those who every Day
 ‘consent to some Act for the Support and In-
 ‘crease of that Army, we shall leave to all the
 ‘World to judge; and hope that this gracious
 ‘Warning and Information, now given by us,
 ‘will make that Impression in the Hearts of our
 ‘People, that they will no longer suffer them-
 ‘selves to be misled from their Duty and Allegi-
 ‘ance upon any Pretences whatsoever; and we

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

June.

do declare, That we shall proceed with all Severity against all Persons whatsoever, who shall henceforward assist, vote, or concur in any Kind toward the Maintenance and Countenancing such Actions and Resolutions, which, by the known and express Laws of the Land, are High Treason; and against all those who shall adhere to them, who are in Rebellion against us, as against Rebels and Traitors, in such Manner as by the Laws and Statutes of the Realm is directed and appointed.

And since, by the Power of seditious Persons, we and both Houses are kept from being secur'd against tumultuous Assemblies, and both Houses from Adjournment to some Place of Safety; which, being done, might quickly make an End of these miserable Distractions, whereby we are debarred from the Benefit and Advice, we expected from that our Great Council, the Members thereof being scatter'd into several Places: Therefore, that the whole Kingdom may see that we are willing to receive Advice from those who are trusted by them, tho' we cannot receive the same in the Place to which they were called, for the Reasons aforesaid, nor intend to receive Advice from them elsewhere in the Capacity of Houses of Parliament: We do hereby declare, That such of the Members of both Houses, as well those who have been, by the Faction of the Malignant Party, expelled for performing their Duties to us, and into whose Rooms no Persons have been since chosen by their Countries, as the rest who shall desire our Protection, shall be welcome to us at our City of *Oxford*; untill, by the Adjournment of the Houses to some fit and free Place, or otherwise, due Course be taken for the full and free Convention in Parliament of us and all the Members of both Houses: And for their better Encouragement to resort to us, we hereby will and command all the Officers and Soldiers of our Army to suffer all such Persons who are Members of either House, with their Attend-

ants

'ants and Servants, to come to us to this our City An. 19. Car. 1.
'of Oxford. 1643.

June.

' And that none of our good Subjects may believe
' that, by this our necessary Declaration against the
' Freedom and Liberty of that present Assembly,
' we may have the least Intention to violate or to
' avoid any Act or Acts passed by us for the Good
' and Benefit of our People this Parliament, we
' do hereby declare to all the World, That we shall,
' as we have often promised, as inviolably observe
' all those Acts, as if no such unhappy Interruption
' had happened in the Freedom and Liberty of that
' Council: And desire nothing more than to have
' such a free Convention in Parliament, that we may
' add such further Acts of Grace as shall be thought
' necessary for the Advancement of the true Prote-
' stant Religion, for the Maintenance of the Liberty
' and Property of the Subjects, and the Preservation
' of the Liberty, Freedom, and Privileges of Parlia-
' ment.

' And that all the World may see how willing
' and desirous we are to forget all the Injuries and
' Indignities offered to us by such who have been
' misled through Weakness or Fear, or who have
' not been the principal Contrivers of the present
' Miseries, we do offer a free and general Par-
' don to all the Members of either House (except
' Robert Earl of *Essex*, Robert Earl of *Warwick*,
' Edward Earl of *Manchester*, Henry Earl of *Stam-*
' *ford*, William Viscount *Say and Sele*, Sir John Ho-
' *tham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir Arthur *Hastilrigge*, Bart.
' Sir Henry *Ludlow*, Sir Edward *Hungerford*, and
' Sir Francis *Popham*, Knights; Nathaniel *Fiennes*,
' John *Hampden*, John *Pymme*, William *Stroud*,
' Henry *Martyn*, and Alexander *Popham*, Esquires;
' Isaac *Pennington*, Alderman of *London*, and Capt.
' *Ven*; who, being the principal Authors of these
' present Calamities, have sacrificed the Peace and
' Prosperity of their Country to their own Pride, Ma-
' lice, and Ambition; and against whom we shall
' proceed, as against Persons guilty of High Treason,
' by

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

by the known Laws of the Land; and shall, in the Proceeding, be most careful to preserve to them all Privileges in the fullest Manner that, by the Law or the Usage of former Times, is due to them) if they shall, within ten Days after the publishing of this our Proclamation, return to their Duty and Allegiance to us.

And, lastly, we further command and enjoin all our Subjects, upon their Allegiance to us, as they will answer the contrary to Almighty God, and as they desire that they and their Posterity should be freed from the foul Taint of High Treason, and as they tender the Peace of this Kingdom, That they presume not to give any Assistance to the before-mentioned rebellious Armies, in their Persons or Estates in any Sort whatsoever; but join with us, according to their Duty and the Laws of the Land, to suppress this horrid Rebellion.

And our Pleasure and Command is, That this our Proclamation be read in all Churches and Chapels within this our Kingdom.

Given at our Court at Oxford the 20th Day of June, in the nineteenth Year of our Reign.

Resolutions of
the Lords on the
foregoing Procla-
mation.

After reading this Proclamation the Lords agreed, That it declared this Parliament to be no true Parliament; and that the King would not receive whatsoever came to him from them; thereupon they resolved to communicate this to the Commons, at a Conference, and appointed a Committee of four Lords to consider of the Sense of this House, to be delivered on this Occasion; as also to draw up a proper Answer to the Proclamation. Soon after the Lord Say and Sele, from this Committee, brought in the following:

The Lords do apprehend that the foregoing Proclamation, whereby this Parliament is declared to be no free Parliament, and the People are required not to look upon the Votes or Actions of the

the Persons now remaining as upon the two Houses An. 19. Car. I.
of Parliament, is destructive as to the present Par- 1643.
liament and all Acts therein, so also to the esta- June.
blished Government of this Kingdom; which De-
claration being maintained and pursued by Force,
the Lords do conceive themselves bound to defend
this present Parliament, and to maintain the Free-
dom thereof, with their Lives and Fortunes, and
are resolved so to do. They think it fit also, that
a Declaration be made to that Purpose to all the
Kingdom, and to invite therein all *Englishmen*,
both of the Nobility, Gentry, and Commons, to
join with them, assuring such as shall do so, that
they shall be embraced and received into the Pro-
tection of the Parliament, and acknowledged as
those who have done a good Service to the State;
except it be such Persons who shall appear to be
the Contrivers of these destructive Counsels, those
to be named and excepted in the Declaration; and
to this End to desire, that a Committee of both
Houses may be named to meet to draw up the De-
claration, their Lordships being resolved to name
four Lords for that Purpose.

The Parliament had dispatched a Messenger into
Scotland, some Time since, to bring over the *Scots*
to their Interest; and, this Day, (*June 27*) they
thought proper to send another on the same Busi-
ness, who was to acquaint them with their present
State and Condition; and that, after being long en-
tertained with Treaties and Propositions for Peace,
they were frustrated by the prevailing Party of Pa-
pists and other ill-affected Persons about the King:
That they commended this great Cause to the
Christian Wisdom and brotherly Affection of the
Scots Nation and State, to consider how, by their
concurrent Advice and Assistance, the Faction of
Papists, Bishops, and other Malignants of this King-
dom, might be suppress'd; the Ruin of Religion
and Liberty here prevented, and thereby their own
better preserved and established. With these, and
many

An. 19. Car. I. many more Instructions, Mr. Corbet set out, on
 1643. this second Embassy into Scotland; the Consequence
 of which will soon appear.

June.

This Day also the Effect of a Conference, on the King's last Proclamation, was reported to the Lords by their Speaker, which was,

Proposals from
 the Commons at
 a Conference
 thereupon.

' That the House of Commons had considered their Lordships Sense, delivered at the late Conference, touching the King's Proclamation, wherein they agree with their Lordships in every Particular; and as they apprehend their Lordships Intentions to be real in what they have resolved, so the House of Commons desire that their Lordships would make good their real Intentions, by real Demonstrations, that it may appear so to the Kingdom.

' And, to the End that their Lordships may better carry on their Resolutions, and have the fitter Means of Support for the same, the House of Commons have thought proper to offer some Particulars to their Lordships Consideration :

1. ' That their Lordships would please to join with the House of Commons in the Propositions for the making a new Great Seal, to prevent the Abuses of it; such as was the sealing the Commission for the horrid Design against the Parliament and the City of London; and also because, by the making a new Great Seal, Justice shall be the better administred to the Kingdom, and the People will be the more dependent upon the Parliament: Whereas now they are forced to go to Oxford for the Dispatch of their Affairs, which otherwise they would not; and also their Lordships will be the more enabled to do that for the Maintenance of the Parliament, and the Freedom and Liberty thereof, which otherwise they cannot.

2. ' The House of Commons desire their Lordships to give Order, that Proclamation may issue out to summon the Queen to answer the Impeachment, according to the Articles; and the House of Commons make this Observation, That though
 the

the King's Councils have flown very high in the Contempt of this Parliament, yet they never presumed to declare it to be None, till the Queen was impeached; therefore the House of Commons think it fit to proceed against her, to shew their Love to Justice, and to let them see that the Parliament shrinks not from their Duty, notwithstanding this Proclamation; and also because the World may see what Reason they have to charge the Queen; and those that have Dependence upon the Queen's Ways, Designs, and Counsels, may be weaken'd and deterred from their Dependence on her, and acting her Commands.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

3. 'To take off the Impression that this Proclamation may make in foreign Parts, the House of Commons desire their Lordships to send the Commissioners into *Scotland* speedily, and to resolve to send Agents abroad to other States, whereby the Imputations will be taken away which are laid upon the Parliament by the King's Ministers; also that the Aid expected by the King from foreign Parts may be prevented, and Trade secured, which they have endeavoured to molest.

4. 'To desire their Lordships will take into Consideration the two Ordinances sent up to them by the House of Commons.

'The first, concerning Intelligence held with *Oxford* and the King's Army; the other, concerning the listing of Horses.

1. 'That the Freedom of Intercourse hath been a Means to supply the King both with Money and Arms.

2. 'That it gives Opportunity to make great Factions in the City, to corrupt the Well-affected to the Parliament, and to effect many dangerous Practices and Conspiracies, to the Hazard of the whole Kingdom.

3. 'It acquaints the Enemy with all our Designs, Preparations, and Convoys.

4. 'It is contrary to all Rules and Grounds of War,

'Con-

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

June.

‘ Concerning lifting of Horses; it will be a Means to furnish the Parliament with a Body of Horse upon all Occasions, to preserve the City and reinforce the Army.

5. ‘ The House of Commons conceive that the King, by his Proclamation, as far as in him lies, hath disabled the Parliament to offer any Petition, and present any humble Advice to him, in Quality of both Houses of Parliament, and that he will not receive any such in that Capacity; which Consideration the House of Commons presents to their Lordships, as an Answer for not joining with their Lordships in that Petition, which their Lordships proposed to them to be delivered to the King for Peace, which yet depends unpas’d.

6. ‘ The House of Commons desire their Lordships to join with them in an Oath to be drawn, to be taken by all Commanders and Officers in the Army and Fleet, and by Keepers of Forts and Castles, and by other public Officers in the Army; whereby they shall be bound to maintain and defend the two Houses of Lords and Commons, in this present Parliament, and faithfully to discharge the Trust committed to them by both Houses of Parliament, against all Authority whatsoever.’

The Lords taking the Report of this Conference into Consideration, ordered, That a Committee of their House should meet with the Committee of the House of Commons on *Thursday* next in the Afternoon, in the Prince’s Lodgings, to draw up a Declaration upon the King’s Proclamation.— Touching the lifting of Horses; the Lords thought fit that the Thing should be done, but not in the Way as the Ordinance was then drawn; therefore appointed another Committee to meet this Afternoon, to consider of the drawing up another Ordinance for that Purpose.— And touching the Ordinance to prevent Intelligence, and sending of Letters to the King’s Army, the Lords resolved to abide by their former Resolution of rejecting it; and

and appointed a Committee to draw up some Reasons to be offered to the House of Commons for the same. An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
June.

June 29. A Petition from the Earl of Portland to the Lords was read, shewing,

THAT he was committed Prisoner in the City, A Petition from the Earl of Portland, imprisoned on Account of the late Plot.
the Beginning of August last, at the Desire of the House of Commons, upon some Suspitions and Jealousies they had of him; where he continued six Months, almost to the Ruin of his whole Estate.

That he is now made a Prisoner upon the same Grounds, and at the same Request; but, as he conceives, without any Charge brought up against him: Whereby, and by what Mr. Waller hath threatened him with since he was imprisoned, he doth apprehend a very sad, long, and ruinous Restraint, all his Goods being already taken out of his Power, which were the only Means he had for the present Subsistence of his Family.

He therefore humbly prays the Lords, That he may not find the Effects of Mr. Waller's Threats, by a long and close Imprisonment; but that he may be speedily brought to a legal Trial before them; and then he is confident the Vanity and Falshood of these Informations, which have been given to the House of Commons against the Petitioner, will appear both to their Lordships and to them; and he shall have the Testimony of having ever borne a very faithful Heart to his Country.

And for this he shall ever pray, &c.

PORTLAND.

The Lords taking Notice of the Expressions in the Petition, about Mr. Waller's Threats to the Earl, ordered, That they should be both examined, Face to Face, the next Day; to which the Commons also agreed.

The

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

The Commons
desire the Earl of
Northumberland
may be examined
touching that
Affair,

The Earl of *Northumberland* was another Person the Commons accused as having some Knowledge of the late Plot; and this Day the Commons sent up to the Lords to have him examined forthwith. The Earl being in the House desired the same Thing, that so, as he said, his Innocency might sooner appear, and he not lie longer under a Jealousy; which was done accordingly.

July 1. The Earl of *Manchester*, from the Committee appointed to take Examinations in the above Affair, reported what Discourse the Earl of *Portland* had lately with Mr. *Waller*.

Mr. *Thinn*, the Usher of the House of Lords, deposed, 'That on the 21st ult. whilst he staid to see whether Mr. Alderman *Atkins* would receive the Lord *Portland*, Mr. *Waller* came to speak to his Lordship, as he conceived. The Alderman carried them into an upper Room, and, when they came down again, Lord *Portland* came into the Parlour, and said these, or the like Words, *Pray do me the Favour to tell my Lord Northumberland, that Mr. Waller has extremely pressed me to save my own Life and his, by casting the Guilt or Blame upon the Lord Conway and the Earl of Northumberland.*'

The Lord *Lovelace* also testified, but not upon Oath, 'That he went to the Earl of *Portland* on Monday last; and, after he had been there a while, the Earl shewed Alderman *Atkins's* Wife a Petition; and, when she had read it, the Earl shewed it to him; and he remembers that, in the same Petition, there was this Clause, *That Mr. Waller desired him to save himself and him, by laying the Blame on the two other Lords as before.*'

These Testimonies, with the Earl of *Portland's* own Examination, which is not entered in the Journals, were ordered to be written out and delivered to Mr. *Pymme*, or any of the Committee of the House of Commons, by Direction of the Lords.

The

The same Day the Speaker acquainted the Lords, An. 19. Car. 1.
that he had received a Letter from the Lord-General; which was read as follows: 1643.

July.

My Lord,

SINCE the Coming of the Army to this Place, the A Letter from
Unseasonableness of the Weather, and some other the Earl of Essex,
Accidents, hath prevented many Things which I pur- desiring the Ad-
posed to have attempted, had God seen it fit; and vice of Parlia-
therefore I much desire that some of the Lords of your ment.
House might be sent down, together with some of the
Commons, that we may debate Things of great Necessity
to be considered of; which I must desire may be done
with all possible Speed; that, upon a Result of what
may be offered, you may receive full Satisfaction of
our Condition; which I leave to the Wisdom of the
House, resting

Your Lordship's

me, June 30,
1643.

Faithful Servant,

ESSEX.

A Conference being desired, and held, between
the two Houses, on the Subject of this Letter, the
Result of it was, That the Lords named the Earl
of Holland and the Lord Grey of Werk to go, with
a proportionable Number of the Commons, to the
General: But the next Day of Meeting, July 3,
the said Lords being returned, reported to the
House, That they set out on their Journey, and
got as far as Aylesbury, where they met with an-
other Letter from the Lord-General, informing
them that the King's Forces were abroad that
Way; and therefore advising them not to proceed
any further.

July 4. In the House of Commons, this Day,
Mr. Waller was brought to the Bar, in order to
answer to his Charge for being concerned in the
late Plot; when his Examinations and Confessions
were

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

were shewn unto him, who acknowledged them all to be true. Then being told by the Speaker, if he had any Thing more to say, either as to the Plot, or for himself, he had Leave to do so, he made the following Speech to the House ^a.

Mr. Speaker,

*Mr. Waller's
Speech in his
own Defence,
concerning the
late Plot,*

I Acknowledge it a great Mercy of God, and a great Favour from you, that I am, once more, suffered to behold this Honourable Assembly,

‘ I mean not to make use of it to say any Thing in my own Defence, by Justification or Denial of what I have done. I have already confessed enough to make me appear worthy, not only to be put out of this House, but out of the World too. All my humble Request to you is, that, if I seem to you as unworthy to live as I do to myself, I may have the Honour to receive my Death from your own Hands, and not to be exposed to a Trial by the Council of War: Whatever you shall think me worthy to suffer in a Parliamentary Way, is not like to find Stop any where else.

‘ This, Sir, I hope you will be pleased, for your own Sakes, to grant me; who am already so miserable, that nothing can be added to my Calamity—but to be made the Occasion of creating a Precedent to your own Disadvantage: Besides the Right I may have to this, consider, I beseech you, that the Eyes of the World are upon you. You govern in Chief, and if you should expose your own Members to the Punishment of others, it will be thought that you either want Power, or Leisure, to chastise them yourselves; nor let any Man despise the ill Consequence of such a Precedent, as this would be, because he seeth not presently the Inconveniences which may ensue: You have many Armies on Foot, and it is uncertain how long you may

^a From the Original Edition printed by G. Dexter, and licensed by John White.

Lord Clarendon, after giving a very long and particular Narrative of this Affair, remarks, ‘ That Mr. Waller did as much owe the keeping his Head to this Oration, as Cataline did the Loss of his to those of Jully.

may have Occasion to use them. Soldiers and Commanders (though I know well they of the Parliament's Army excell no less in Modesty than they do in Courage) are generally of a Nature ready to pretend to the utmost Power of this Kind, which they conceive to be due to them; and may be too apt, upon any Occasion of Discontent, to make use of such a Precedent as this. In this very Parliament you have not been without some Taste of the Experience hereof; it is now somewhat more than two Years since you had an Army in the North, paid and directed by yourselves; and yet you may be pleased to remember there was a considerable Number of Officers in that Army, which joined in a Petition, or Remonstrance, to this House, taking Notice of what some of the Members had said here, as they supposed, to their Disadvantage, and did little less than require them of you. 'Tis true, there had been some Tampering with them; but what has happened at one Time, may wisely be thought possible to fall out again at another.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
July.

'Sir, I presume but to point you out the Danger: If it be not just, I know you will not do me the Wrong to expose me to this Trial; if it be just, your Army may another Time require the same Justice of you in their own Behalf, against some other Member, whom, perhaps, you would be less willing to part with. Necessity has, of late, forced you into untrodden Paths; and, in such a Case as this, where you have no Precedent of your own, you may not do amiss to look abroad upon other States and Senates, which exercise the Supreme Power, as you now do here.

'I dare confidently say you shall find none, either antient or modern, which ever exposed any of their own Order to be tried for his Life, by the Officers of their Armies abroad, for what he did while he resided among them in the Senate.

'Among the *Romans* the Practice was so contrary, that some inferior Officers in their Army, far from the City, having been sentenced by their

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

General or Commander in Chief, as deserving Death by their Discipline of War, have nevertheless (because they were Senators) appealed thither, and the Cause has received a new Hearing in the Senate.

‘Not to use more Words to persuade you to take heed that you wound not yourselves, through my Sides, in violating the Privileges belonging to your own Persons, I shall humbly desire you to consider likewise the Nature of my Offence; (not but that I should be much ashamed to say any Thing in Diminution thereof: God knows ’tis horrid enough for the Evil it might have occasioned) but if you look near it, it may, perhaps, appear to be rather a Civil than a Martial Crime, and so to have Title to a Trial at the Common Law of the Land: There may, justly, be some Difference put between me and others in this Business.

‘I have had nothing to do with the other Army, or any Intention to begin the Offer of Violence to any Body; it was only a civil Pretence to that which I then, foolishly, conceived to be the Right of the Subject. I humbly refer it to your Considerations, and to your Consciences. I know you will take Care not to shed that Blood by the Law of War, which hath a Right to be tried by the Law of Peace.

‘For so much as concerns myself and my Part in this Business, (if I were worthy to have any Thing spoken, or patiently heard, in my Behalf) this might truly be said, That I made not this Business, but found it; it was in other Men’s Hands long before it was brought to me; and when it came, I extended it not, but restrained it. For the Propositions of letting in Part of the King’s Army, or offering Violence to the Members of this House, I ever disallowed, and utterly rejected them.

‘What it was that moved me to entertain Discourse of this Business, so far as I did, I will tell you ingenuously; and that rather as a Warning for

for others, than it makes any Thing for myself; it was only an Impatience of the Inconveniences of the present War, looking on Things with a carnal Eye, and not minding that which chiefly, if not only, ought to have been considered, the inestimable Value of the Cause you have in Hand, the Cause of God and of Religion; and the Necessities you are forced upon for the Maintenance of the same. As a just Punishment for this Neglect, it pleased God to desert me and suffer me, with a fatal Blindness, to be led on and engaged in such Counsels as were wholly disproportioned to the rest of my Life. This, Sir, my own Conscience tells me, was the Cause of my Falling, and not Malice, or any ill Habit of Mind or Disposition towards the Commonwealth, or to the Parliament: For from whence should I have it? If you look on my Birth you will not find it in my Blood: I am of a Stock which hath borne you better Fruit. If you look on my Education, it hath been almost from my Childhood in this House, and amongst the best Sort of Men; and for the whole Practice of my Life, till this Time, if another were to speak for me, he might reasonably say, That neither my Actions out of Parliament, nor my Expressions in it, have favoured of Dissaffection or Malice to the Liberties of the People or Privileges of Parliament.

Thus, Sir, I have set before your Eyes both my Person and my Case; wherein I shall make no such Defence by denying or extenuating any Thing I have done, as ordinary Delinquents do. My Address to you, and all my Plea, shall only be such as Children use to their Parents, I have offended, I confess it. I never did any Thing like it before. It is a Passage unsuitable to the whole Course of my Life beside; and for the Time to come, as God, that can bring Light out of Darkness, hath made this Business in the Event useful to you, so also hath he to me: You have by it made an happy Discovery of your Enemies, and I of myself and the evil Principles I walked by; so

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

324 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

July.

that if you look either on what I have been heretofore, or what I now am, and by God's Grace assisting me, I shall always continue to be, you may perhaps think me fit to be an Example of your Compassion and Clemency.

'Sir, I shall no sooner leave you, but my Life will depend on your Breath; and not that alone, but the Subsistence of some that are more innocent. I might therefore shew you my Children, whom the Rigour of your Justice would make compleat Orphans, being already motherless. I might shew you a Family, wherein there are some unworthy to have their Share in that Mark of Infamy which now threatens me: But something there is, which if I could shew you, would move you more than all this; it is my Heart, which abhors what I have done more, and is more severe to itself, than the severest Judge can be. A Heart, Mr. Speaker, so awakened by this Affliction, and so intirely devoted to the Cause you maintain, that I earnestly desire of God to incline you so to dispose of me, whether for Life or Death, as may most conduce to the Advancement thereof:

'Sir, not to trouble you any longer, if I die I shall die praying for you; if I live I shall live serving you; and render you back the Use and Employment of all those Days you shall add to my Life.'

The Commons
expel him, and
he is condemned
by the Council
of War.

After this Speech, Mr. *Waller* having withdrawn, he was called in again; and, being by the Speaker required thereto, gave the House an exact Account how he came first to the Knowledge of this Business; as also what Lords were acquainted therewith, or had engaged themselves therein. Notwithstanding which he was expelled the House and so being left to the Council of War, as all the rest of the Conspirators had been, he was condemned to die. But Mr. *Whitlocke* tells us, 'That the Lord-General granted him a Reprieve; and after a Year's Imprisonment, and paying a Fine of 10,000*l.* he was discharged, and travelled into France

France.' Mr. Tomkins and Mr. Chaloner were An. 19. Car. I.
hanged. 1643.

July.

The House of Commons had received Information of some Design of betraying *Hull* to the King, in which the famous Sir *John Hotham* and his Son were concerned: And, this Day, they sent Sir *William Strickland* up to the Lords with a Message and several intercepted Letters from the aforesaid Sir *John* and his Son; in Consideration of which, he said, the Commons had come to some Resolutions for the better securing and preserving that Fortres; which were these:

'That Sir *William Strickland* and Mr. *Hatcher*, Members of their House, with the Mayor of the Town of *Hull* and Sir *Matthew Boynton*, should be appointed a Committee for the Government of *Hull*; and that the former two should go down forthwith to take it upon them: That Sir *Matthew Boynton* should be appointed Colonel of the Garrison in that Town, and recommended to the General for a Commission for that Purpose. Sir *Henry Vane*, jun. and *Peregrine Pelham*, Esq; Members for *Hull*, with Sir *William Allanson*, were also added; to all which the Lords agreed, with the Addition of Sir *Philip Stapylton* and Sir *William Constable* to this Commission.

In this Message also the Commons again pressed the Lords to consent to the making of a new Great Seal, because, they said, the Kingdom was not able to subsist without it; but the Lords let them know, That they adhered, in this, to their former Resolution; which, when the Commons understood, they resolved to give Orders for making a new Great Seal themselves, and appointed a Committee to see it done with all Speed: But they made no Use of it till the Lords gave their Consent the 12th of *October* following. The Form of it was, a Representation of the House of Commons, the Members sitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland* on the other.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

Lord *Fairfax*
routed by the
Earl of *New-*
castle;

Whereupon the
Lords agree to
invite the *Scots*.

July 5. The Commons having had Information of the ill Success of the Lord *Fairfax* in the North, and that the Earl of *Newcastle* had entirely routed his Forces at *Atherton-Moor*, near *Bradford*, were in great Consternation: And, this Day, at a Conference, the Commons communicated this bad News to the Lords; earnestly pressing them to nominate a Committee of their House, to go forth- with into *Scotland*, and to desire the *Scots* Nation to send Aid and Assistance into *England* against the Papists and others, now in Arms to destroy the Protestant Religion and the Liberty of this Kingdom. The Lords agreed to this, and ordered the Lord *Grey of Werk* to attend the House the next Morn- ing for that Purpose.

Little else, of Moment, occurs in the *Journals*, till this Day, July 10, when we meet with an Ordinance of Indemnity for those Gentlemen that secured Sir *John Hotham*, his Son, &c. which was read, and agreed to, in these Words:

An Indemnifica-
tion of the Per-
sons concerned
in securing Sir
John Hotham
and his Son,

W Hereas *Thomas Raikes*, Mayor of *Hull*, Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Knight and Ba- ronet, Sir *William St. Quintin*, Bart. Sir *Richard Darley*, Sir *John Bouchier*, and Sir *William Al- lan*, Knights, *Lancelot Roper*, *Nicholas Den- man*, *John Barnard*, and *William Popple*, Al- dermen, *John Penrose*, Gent. and *Robert John- son*, Clerk, did receive Information that there was a Design for the betraying the Town of *Hull*; which, in their Opinion, could not be prevented but by a speedy seizing of the Block- Houses, and other Places of Strength in the Town, and also of the Persons of Sir *John Hotham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, and Capt. *Hotham*: And where- as accordingly they, with others, seized on the said Places of Strength, for the Preservation of the said Town, and also the Persons of the said Sir *John Hotham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, and Capt. *Hotham*, and the Treasury, Plate, Trunks, Writings, and

‘and other Things of the said Sir *John Hotham* and
‘Capt. *Hotham*, to be in safe Custody till farther
‘Directions from the Parliament :

An. 19. Car. I.

1643

July.

‘And whereas the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir
‘*Matthew Boynton*, and the rest of the Persons
‘first above-named, did issue out their Warrants
‘and Directions, commanding Captain *Scarth* to
‘march from *Scarborough* with his Soldiers, Arms,
‘and Ammunition he had there, to *Beverley*, for
‘the Defence of that Place, and of the Goods
‘there of Consequence, to be preserved in *Beverley*
‘till further Directions from the Parliament :

‘And whereas they did issue out their Warrants
‘and Directions to divers other Captains for to
‘march with their Soldiers from *Hull* to *Beverley*,
‘for the Defence of that Place :

‘The Lords and Commons do declare, that it
‘was an acceptable Service to the Kingdom and
‘Parliament, in the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir *Mat-*
‘*thew Boynton*, and the rest of the Gentlemen
‘above-named, and all that others have done here-
‘in ; and that the Lords and Commons will keep
‘them, and all others that have assisted them there-
‘in, indemnified and saved harmless.’

July 11. A Letter to the Speaker, from the
Lord-General, was read to the House of Lords,
desiring to have 500 Horse sent him, presently, to
recruit his Army, and 200 Horse a Month provided
for the same Purpose ; as likewise a Magazine of
Saddles and Horse-Arms. Another Letter of a
later Date, from the General, was also read ; which
is inserted, at Length, in the *Journals*, and is as
follows :

My Lord,

I Would now have given you the true Relation of The Earl of *Es-*
the Skirmish on Sunday last, between some of our sex's Letter, set-
Horse and the Enemy's, near Buckingham ; but Sir ting forth the
Philip Stapylton and Col. Goodwin being then upon distressed Condi-
the Place, I refer the Relation thereof unto them. tion of his Army.

Since

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

Since when, being informed that the King had sent more Forces to Buckingham, to maintain that Place, bring those Parts into Contribution, and give us Battle there: Hereupon I advanced with the Army towards that Town; where the Enemy staid till the Army came within two Miles of them, and then made Haste away towards Banbury; notwithstanding they had persuaded the People, that they would not quit the Place till they had beat me out of the Country. I then, understanding that they were fled, held it not fit to go to the Town with my Army, but sent Col. Middleton with some Horse to clear the Town and Coast, which he did; and then advised where to quarter with most Conveniency to our Army, and most ready for the Enemy, the Queen's Forces being like to join with them very suddenly.

That our Army might the better secure the Parliament and the City of London, and the Counties adjacent, and be more safely supplied with Money from London, and lie most conveniently to join with the Forces with the Lord Grey, in Northamptonshire, I did march to Great Brickhill, as the most fit Place for all Purposes.

The Enemy's chief Strength being in Horse, and this Army neither recruited with Horses, nor Arms, nor Saddles, it is impossible to keep the Country from being plundered; nor to fight with them, but when and where they list; we being forced, when we move, to march with the whole Army, which can be but by slow Marches; so that the Country suffers much Wrong, and the Cries of the poor People are infinite.

If it were thought fit to send to his Majesty to have Peace, with the settling of Religion, the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, and bringing to just Trial those chief Delinquents that have brought all these Mischiefs to both Kingdoms; and as my Lord of Bristol^a spake in Parliament, how we may be secured to have these Things performed hereafter; or else, if his Majesty shall please to absent himself,
there

^a The Earl of Bristol's Speech for an Accommodation, here referred to, is at large in our Eleventh Volume, p. 52.

there may be a Day set to give a Period to all these unhappy Distractions by a Battle, (which, when and where, they shall chuse who may be thought any way indifferent) I shall be ready to perform that Duty I owe to you; and the Propositions to be agreed upon, between his Majesty and the Parliament, may be sent to such an indifferent Place, that both Armies may be drawn near the one to the other; so that, if Peace be not concluded, it might be ended with the Sword. No Officer of the Army to be of such Committee, nor no Intercourse to be between them.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
July.

My Lord, I am

Brickhill Magna,
July 9, 1643.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Both the Houses agreed to supply the Lord-General, as he desired; all the Troops then raised in the City of London, except those for the immediate Defence of it, were ordered to march forthwith; and that there should be a Course to supply him with Horse, Arms, and Saddles. There was Necessity sufficient for a general Reinforcement at this Time, the King's Troops being every where victorious; for, besides the great Victory in the North, already mentioned, Sir William Waller was defeated in the West of England, by the Lord Wilmot, Sir Ralph Hopton, &c. and his Army totally ruined. Prince Rupert had also taken Bristol; so that the King's Affairs were now in the most flourishing Condition that they ever had been throughout the whole War. This some Lords were so sensible of, that a Motion was made for petitioning the King, before he had recalled his Proclamation, wherein he expressed this Parliament to be no free Parliament; and the Question being put thereupon, it passed in the Affirmative. This Disposition of the Lords towards an Accommodation was, probably, much forwarded by the King's publishing the following Declaration, addressed to all his loving Subjects,

The great Successes of the King's Army.

The Lords resolve to petition for Peace.

An. 19. Car. 1. Subjects^a, the Day after he received Advice of the taking of *Bristol*.

July.

The King's Declaration, after his Victory in the North and West, and the taking of *Bristol*.

AS the Grievances and Losses of no particular Persons, since these miserable bloody Distempers have disquieted this poor Kingdom, can be compared to the Loss and Damage we ourself have sustained, there having been no Victory obtained but in the Blood of our own Subjects, nor no Rapine or Violence committed, but to the Impoverishment and Ruin of our own People; so a blessed and happy Peace cannot be so acceptable and welcome to any Man as to us. Almighty God, to whom all the Secrets of our Heart are open, who hath so often and so miraculously preserved us, and to whose Power alone we must attribute the Goodness of our present Condition, how unhappy soever it is with reference to the Public Calamities, knows with what Unwillingness, with what Anguish of Soul, we submitted ourself to the Necessity of taking up defensive Arms. And the World knows with what Justice and Bounty we have repaired our Subjects, for all the Pressures and Inconveniences they had borne, by such excellent Laws as would for ever have prevented the like; and with what Earnestness and Importunity we desired to add any Thing for the Establishment of the Religion, Laws, and Liberty of the Kingdom. How all these have been disturbed, invaded, and almost destroyed, by Faction, Sedition, and Treason, by those who have neither Reverence to God nor Affection to Men, but have sacrificed both to their own Ends and Ambition, is now so evident, that we hope, as God hath wonderfully manifested his Care of us, and his Defence of his and our most just Cause, so he hath so far touched the Hearts of
our

^a Lord *Clarendon* informs us, ' That the Reason of the King's addressing this Declaration to the whole Kingdom, and not to the Parliament, was, lest he might seem to retract the foregoing Proclamation, wherein he had declared the Proceedings of one or both Houses to be void, by reason of the Members not enjoying their just Freedom and Liberty,

our People, that their Eyes are at last opened to see how miserably they have been seduced, and to abhor those Persons whose Malice and Subtilty had seduced them to dishonour him, to rebel against us, and to bring much Misery and Calamity upon their native Country.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643

July.

We well remember the Protestation voluntarily made by us, in the Head of that small Army we were Master of in *September* last, to defend and maintain the true Reformed Protestant Religion: And if it should please God, by his Blessing upon that Army, to preserve us from this Rebellion, that we would maintain the just Privileges and Freedom of Parliament, and govern by the known Laws of the Land; for whose Defence, in Truth, that Army was only raised, and hath since been kept up. And there cannot be a more seasonable Time to renew that Protestation than now, when God hath vouchsafed us so many Victories and Successes, and hath rendered the Power of those, who seek to destroy us, less formidable than it hath been, (so that we shall probably not fall under the scandalous Imputation, which hath usually attended our Messages of Peace, that they proceed from the Weakness of our Power, not Love of our People) and when there is more Freedom in many Counties, for our good Subjects to receive true Information of their own and our Condition; the Knowledge whereof hath been, with equal Industry and Injustice, kept from them, as other Acts of Cruelty have been imposed upon them.

We do therefore declare to all the World, in the Presence of Almighty God, to whom we must give a strict Account of all our Professions and Protestations, That we are so far from intending any Alteration of the Religion established, (as hath been often falsely, scandalously, and against the Conscience of the Contrivers themselves of that Rumour, suggested to our People) or from the least Thought of invading the Liberty and Property of the Subject, or violating the just Privileges

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

July.

'vileges of Parliament, that we call that God
 'to witness, who hath covered our Head in the
 'Day of Battle, that we desire from our Soul,
 'and shall always use our utmost Endeavour,
 'to preserve and advance the true Reformed Pro-
 'testant Religion, established in the Church of
 'England, in which we were born, have faithfully
 'lived, and, by the Grace of God, shall resolutely
 'die: That the Preservation of the Liberty and
 'Property of the Subject, in the due Observation
 'of the known Laws of the Land, shall be equally
 'our Care, as the Maintenance of our own Rights;
 'we desiring to govern only by those good Laws,
 'which, till they were oppressed by this odious
 'Rebellion, preserved this Nation happy. And
 'we do acknowledge the just Privileges of Par-
 'liament to be an essential Part of those Laws,
 'and shall, therefore, most solemnly defend and
 'observe them; so that, in Truth, if either Reli-
 'gion, Law, or Liberty, be precious to our People,
 'they will, by their Submission to us, join with
 'us in the Defence of them, and thereby establish
 'that Peace, by which only they can flourish and
 'be enjoyed.

'Whether these Men that be professed Enemies
 'to the established Ecclesiastical Government; who
 'reproach and persecute the learned Orthodox Mi-
 'nisters of the Church, and into their Places put
 'ignorant, seditious, and schismatical Preachers;
 'who vilify the Book of Common Prayer, and im-
 'piously profane God's Worship with their scurrilous
 'and seditious Demeanor, are like to advance that
 'Religion: Whether those Men, who boldly, and
 'without the least Shadow or Colour of Law, im-
 'pose insupportable Taxes and odious Excises upon
 'their Fellow-Subjects, imprison, torment, and
 'murder them, are like to preserve the Liberty and
 'Property of the Subject; and whether those Men,
 'who seize and possess themselves of our own un-
 'questionable Revenue, and our just Rights; have
 'denied us our Negative Voice; have, by Force
 'and Violence, awed and terrified the Members of
 'both

both Houses ; and, lastly, have, as far as in them
lies, dissolved the present Parliament, by driving
away and imprisoning the Members, and resolving
the whole Power thereof, and more, into a Com-
mittee of a few Men, contrary to all Law, Cu-
stom, or Precedent, are like to vindicate and up-
hold the Privileges of Parliament, all the World
may judge.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
July.

We do therefore, once more, conjure our good
Subjects, by their Memory of that excellent Peace
and firm Happiness with which it pleased God to
reward their Duty and Loyalty in Time past ; by
their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, which
no Vow or Covenant, contrived and administered
to and by themselves, can cancel or evade ; by
whatsoever is dear and precious to them in this
Life, or hoped or prayed for in the Life to come,
that they will remember their Duty and consider
their Interest ; and no longer suffer themselves to
be misled, their Prince dishonoured, and their
Country wasted and undone, by the Malice and
Cunning of those State Impostors ; who, under
Pretence of Reformation, would introduce what-
soever is monstrous and unnatural both to Religion
and Policy : But that they rather chuse quietly to
enjoy their Religion, Property, and Liberty, found-
ed and provided for by the Wisdom and Industry of
former Times ; and secured and enlarged by the
Blessings upon the present Age, than to spend their
Lives and Fortunes to purchase Confusion, and to
make themselves liable to the most intolerable
Kind of Slavery, that is, to be Slaves to their
Fellow-Subjects ; who, by their prodigious un-
heard-of Acts of Oppression and Tyranny, have
given them sufficient Evidence what they are to
expect at their Hands.

And let not our good People, who have been
misled, or, through Want of Understanding or
Want of Courage, submitted themselves to un-
warrantable and disloyal Actions, be taught, by
these Seducers, that their Safety now consists in
Despair ; and that they can only secure them-
selves

334 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

‘ selves, for the Ills they have done, by a resolute
 ‘ and peremptory Disobedience. Revenge and
 ‘ Bloodthirstiness have never been imputed to us,
 ‘ even by those who have not left either our Go-
 ‘ vernment or Nature unexamined with the greatest
 ‘ Boldness and Malice. And all those who, since
 ‘ these Bloody Distractions, out of Conscience have
 ‘ returned from their evil Ways to us, have found
 ‘ that it was not so easy for them to repent as for
 ‘ us to forgive. And whosoever have been misled
 ‘ by those whose Hearts, from the Beginning, have
 ‘ designed all this Mischief, and shall redeem their
 ‘ past Crimes by their present Service and Loyalty,
 ‘ in the apprehending or opposing such who shall
 ‘ continue to bear Arms against us, and shall use
 ‘ their utmost Endeavours to reduce those Men to
 ‘ their due Obedience, and to restore this King-
 ‘ dom to its wonted Peace, shall have Cause to
 ‘ magnify our Mercy, and to repent the Tref-
 ‘ passes committed against so just and so gracious a
 ‘ Sovereign.

‘ Lastly, we desire all our good Subjects who
 ‘ have really assisted, or really wished us well, now
 ‘ God hath done such wonderful Things for us,
 ‘ vigorously to endeavour to put an End to all
 ‘ these Miseries, by bringing in Men, Money,
 ‘ Plate, Horses, or Arms, to our Aid; that so we,
 ‘ being not wanting to ourselves, may, with Confi-
 ‘ dence, expect the Continuance of God’s Favour
 ‘ to restore us all to that blessed Harmony of Af-
 ‘ fections, which may establish a firm Peace; with-
 ‘ out the speedy obtaining of which, this poor King-
 ‘ dom will be utterly undone, though not absolutely
 ‘ lost.’

Lord Fairfax
 appointed Go-
 vernor of Hull,

July 12. At the Desire of the House of Com-
 mons, the Lord *Fairfax* was made Governor of *Hull*,
 instead of the Commissioners before named. ^a

Sir

^a The Preamble to this Ordinance runs thus: ‘ The Lords and
 ‘ Commons assembled in Parliament, upon the assured Confidence and
 ‘ Trust which they have and do repose in the Wisdom, Valour, and
 ‘ Fidelity of the Right Hon. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*, do ordain,
 ‘ declare, and appoint, &c.

Sir *John Hotham* and his Son, with other Prison-
 ers concerned in the Design upon that Town, were
 now brought up to *London*; and, this Day, a Com-
 mittee extraordinary was appointed by the Com-
 mons, to take their Examinations, and to do all
 other Acts that might tend to the Discovery of the
 whole Business, and all the Circumstances of it.
 Ordered, also, That no Member of that House,
 or any other Person, should visit Sir *John* or his Son,
 nor send any Messages to them, without Leave of
 the House.

An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 July.

The Lord *Grey* of *Werk* having a Post in the
 Parliament's Army, as Lieutenant-General under
 the Earl of *Essex*, his Lordship shewed very great
 Reluctancy to go into *Scotland*, notwithstanding the
 Lords had joined the Earl of *Rutland* in the Com-
 mission with him. He made many Excuses to
 avoid this Embassy, as leaving his Charge, which,
 at this Time, the Armies being so near one ano-
 ther, would reflect upon his Honour: He desired
 also that he might be excused, on account of an
 ill Disposition of Body, which would not endure a
 Sea Voyage, the only Way the Parliament had now
 to send to the *Scots* with any Safety. But, prob-
 ably, it might proceed from his Dislike to go on
 such an Errand as inviting a foreign Army to come
 and invade this Kingdom; which, should the King
 prevail, might put him past Hopes of Pardon.
 Whatever it was, his Lordship, this Day, (*July 17*)
 making the same Excuses to the Lords, he was
 ordered to withdraw; when that House, taking
 into Consideration the whole Progress of this Bu-
 siness, and that, upon his Submission to their
 Pleasure, they had appointed a peremptory Day
 for his going, and had also acquainted the House of
 Commons therewith, the Lords therefore insisted on
 their Order, that he should go; and the Earls of
Pembroke, *Denbigh*, and *Bolingbroke*, were sent out
 to acquaint him with it.

Soon after the said Earls returned with this An-
 swer, That the Lord *Grey* submitted to go, if the
 House

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

July.

House did command him ; but desired them to present to their Lordships two Petitions :

1. That he might enjoy his Place of Command in the Army.

2. That when he had been in *Scotland* a-while, and settled Affairs in some Forwardness, if he found his Health so ill that he could not stay there without Prejudice to himself and the Service, that, upon his humble Suit and Information thereof to the House, he might be permitted to return home.

Lord Grey of
Werk committed
to the Tower,
&c. for refusing
to go to invite
the Scots Army.

But the Lords not thinking it fit to have any Conditions put upon them, ordered the Lord Grey to be called in again, and the Speaker to demand his positive Answer : He then said, He was not able to go on account of his Health. Hereupon, that House taking this for an absolute Denial of their Commands, and considering his former Answer, in order to vindicate the Honour of their House by some exemplary Punishment, resolved, That the Lord Grey, for his Disobedience, should forthwith be sent Prisoner to the Tower. And, the next Day, his Commission in the Army was also taken from him ; tho', very soon after, he was released from his Imprisonment, without any Petition, but not restored to his Command in the Army.

July 19. The following Petition was presented to the Lords, from the Assembly of Divines sitting at *Westminster* :

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS
assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers MINISTERS of
CHRIST, in the Name of themselves and of sundry
others,

Humbly sheweth,

Petition from the
Assembly of Di-
vines,

THAT your Petitioners, upon serious Consideration, and deep Sense of God's heavy Wrath lying on us, and hanging over our Heads and the whole Nation, and manifested particularly by the two late sad and unexpected Defeats of our Forces in the North and

in the West, do apprehend it to be our Duty, as An. 19. Car. I.
 Watchmen for the Good of the Church and Kingdom, to
 present to your religious and prudent Consideration
 these ensuing Requests, in the Name of Jesus Christ,
 your Lord and ours :

1643.

July.

First, That you would be pleased to command a
 public and extraordinary Day of Humiliation, this
 Week, throughout the Cities of London, Westmin-
 ster, the Suburbs of both, and Places adjacent with-
 in the weekly Bills of Mortality, that every one may
 bitterly bewail his own Sins, and cry mightily unto
 God, for Christ's Sake, to remove his Wrath, and
 to heal the Land; with professed and renewed Reso-
 lutions of more full Performance of the late Covenant,
 for the Amendment of our Ways.

Secondly, That you would vouchsafe instantly to
 take it into your most serious Consideration, how you
 may most speedily set up Christ more gloriously in all
 his Ordinances within this Kingdom, and reform all
 Things amiss throughout the Land, wherein God is
 more specially and more immediately dishonoured:
 Among which we humbly lay before you these Par-
 ticulars;

1. That the brutish Ignorance and palpable Darknes
 possessing the greatest Part of the People in all Places
 of the Kingdom, whereby they are utterly unfit to
 wait upon God in any holy Duty, (to the great Dis-
 honour of the Gospel, and the everlasting Endangering
 of their poor Souls) may be remedied by a speedy and
 strict Charge to all Ministers, constantly to catechize
 all the Youth and ignorant People, they being com-
 manded to be subject to it, and all Sorts to be present
 at it; and Information to be given of all Persons who
 shall withstand or neglect it.

2. That the grievous and heinous Pollution of the
 Lord's Supper, by those that are grossly ignorant and
 notoriously profane, may be henceforth, with all Chri-
 stian Care and due Circumspection, prevented.

3. That the bold venting of corrupt Doctrines, di-
 rectly contrary to the sacred Law of God, and reli-
 gious Humiliation for Sin, which open a wide Door
 to all Libertinism and Disobedience to God and Man,

338 The Parliamentary History

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

July.

1. *may be speedily suppressed every where, and that in such Manner as may give Hope that the Church may be no more infected with them.*

4. *That the Profanation of any Part of the Lord's Day, and the Days of solemn Fasting, by buying, selling, working, sporting, travelling, or neglecting of God's Ordinances, may be remedied, by appointing special Officers in every Place, for the due Execution of all good Laws and Ordinances against the same.*

5. *That there may be a thorough and speedy Proceeding against blind Guides and scandalous Ministers, by whose Wickedness People either lack or loath the Ordinances of the Lord, and Thousands of Souls perish; and the Removal of the Ark from among us is, to the trembling of our Hearts, evidently threatened: And that your Wisdoms would find out some Way to admit into the Ministry such godly and hopeful Men as have prepared themselves and are willing thereunto; without which there will suddenly be such a Scarcity of able and faithful Ministers, that it will be to little Purpose to cast out such as are unable, idle, or scandalous.*

6. *That the Laws may be quickened against Swearing and Drunkenness, with which the Land is filled and defiled, and under which it mourneth.*

7. *That some severe Course may be taken against Fornication, Adultery, and Incest, which do greatly abound, especially of late, by reason of Impunity.*

8. *That all Monuments of Idolatry and Superstition, but more especially the whole Body and Practice of Popery, may be totally abolished.*

9. *That Justice may be executed on all Delinquents, according to your solemn and religious Vow and Protestation to that Purpose.*

10. *That all possible Means may be used for the speedy Relief and Release of our miserable and extremely distressed Brethren, who are Prisoners in Oxford, York, and elsewhere, whose heavy Sufferings cry loud in the Ears of our God; and it would lie very heavy upon the Kingdom, should they miscarry, suffering as they do for the Cause of God.*

That

That so God, who is now, by the Sword, avenging An. 19. Car. 1.
the Quarrel of his Covenant, beholding your Integrity 1643.
and Zeal, may turn from the Fierceness of his Wrath, July.
hear our Prayers, go forth with our Armies, perfect
the Work of Reformation, forgive our Sins, and settle
Truth and Peace throughout the Kingdom.

And the Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

This Petition was signed by forty-seven of the
Assembly; and, in Answer to it, the Lords ap-
pointed the next *Friday* for a solemn Day of Humi-
liation; and for the rest they would take the same
into Consideration. The Order for the Fast was
in these Words:

‘THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, out A Fast ordered on
of the deep Sense of God’s heavy Wrath account of the
now upon the Kingdom, and more particularly Defeat of the
manifested by the late Discomfiture of the Forces Parliament’s Ar4
both in the North and in the West, have, for my in the North
themselves, resolved to set apart and keep, and do and West,
ordain and command, That *Friday* the 21st of this
present *July*, 1643, be set apart and kept as a Day
of public and extraordinary Humiliation, by Prayer
and Fasting, throughout the Cities of *London* and
Westminster, and Suburbs, &c. that every Soul
may bitterly bewail his own Sins, and the Sins of
the whole Nation; and cry mightily to God, for
Christ’s Sake, That he would be pleased to turn
from us the Fierceness of his Wrath, and heal the
Land.’

This Order was sent to the Lord Mayor, &c.
with a strict Command to see the due Execution
of it.

The same Day a Message from the Lords was
sent down to the Commons, importing, That since,
by the Earl of *Rutland*’s Indisposition of Health, he
cannot go as their Commissioner into *Scotland* so
speedily as the Business requires, and that the Lord
Grey is imprisoned for Contempt, they would think
Y 2 of

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

July.

Commissioners
appointed to go
into *Scotland*.

of another Lord to be sent in his Stead: But, lest the Affair should suffer by further Delay, the Lords desired that the Commons would send their Commissioners away presently; and the other should follow with all convenient Speed.

About the same Time the Commons sent up Copies of credential Letters for their Commissioners, directed to the Lord-Chancellor of *Scotland* and the Council of State there, and another to the Earl of *Leven*, inviting him to take the Command of the Army which the *Scots* should send into *England*, as having been the *Scots* General against the Rebels in *Ireland*: Assuring him, That it would lay upon this State and them such an Obligation, as they should study to answer in a Manner proportionable, &c. Along with the former was sent, by the Commissioners, a Declaration of the Lords and Commons in *England* to the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, recommending their Commissioners to them; as also Mr. *Stephen Marshall* and Mr. *Philip Nye*, both Ministers of God's Word, and Men of approved Faithfulness and Abilities in their Functions. Also a Declaration of the Lords and Commons in *England* to the Kingdom and States of *Scotland*: Both which last, being printed at Length in *Rusworth*, are unnecessary here. We shall only subjoin the Parliament's particular Instructions to their Commissioners, as they stand in the *Lords' Journals*; these not being printed in the Collections.

INSTRUCTIONS, agreed upon by the LORDS and COMMONS in PARLIAMENT, for John Earl of Rutland, Sir William Armyn, Bart. Sir Henry Vane, jun. Knight, Thomas Hatcher and Henry Darley, Esquires, appointed Commissioners to the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

The Parlia-
ment's Instruc-
tions to them.

I. ' YOU shall forthwith repair to the King-
' dom of *Scotland*, either to *Edinburgh* or
' other Parts, as you see Cause; and you shall make
' your

your Addressee to the Parliament, or any deputed by them; to the Assembly of the States, or any Commissioners appointed by them; the General Assembly of the Church, or the Commissioners of the General Assembly; the Lords of the Secret Council, Commissioners for Conservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, the Commissioners of Common Burdens, and such others as shall have Power and Authority to treat with you, upon such Matters as you have received or shall receive in Charge, and to negotiate in that Kingdom as Commissioners of and from the Parliament of *England*.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
July.

II. You shall take all fit Ways and Opportunities to make known to the State and Nation of *Scotland* the great Miseries, Calamities, and Dangers, brought upon this Church and Kingdom by the Faction of Papists and Prelates, and their Adherents; whereby we are disabled, for the present, to make Payment of those great Debts which are owing to them for the Remainder of the Brotherly-Assistance Money, and the Arrear of their Army in *Ireland*.

III. You shall take Care of stating and settling all Accounts, Debts, and Demands, betwixt the two Nations of *England* and *Scotland*; and, the same being reduced to a Certainty, you shall treat and compound for the Time and Manner of Satisfaction for the said Debts, in such Maner as shall stand with Justice and the Conveniency of both Kingdoms.

IV. As touching the Remainder of the Brotherly-Assistance Money; it is conceived most just and reasonable (because the War upon the Subjects and People of *Scotland*, begun and prosecuted in the Years 1640 and 1641, was procured by the Faction of Papists, Prelates, and their Adherents, which was the Cause of the coming of the *Scots* into this Kingdom, and of the Engagement thereupon made for their Satisfaction) that sufficient Lands of Papists, Prelates, and other Malignants as have adhered to them, shall, by the Direction

342 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

July.

and Appointment of both Houses of Parliament, be set forth, out of which Recompence shall be made for the Forbearance of that Money, untill such Time as Satisfaction shall be given for the Discharge of all the said Debts, with the Interest and Consideration for the Forbearance thereof.

V. As for the Arrears due to the Scots Army in *Ireland*; it being impossible for this State, by reason of the manifold Troubles and Burdens which lie upon it, to make present Payment, it is desired, That our Brethren of *Scotland* think upon some other Way how we may give Satisfaction, either in the confiscated Lands in *Ireland* by Way of Adventure, according to the Rates and Proportions at which they are to be delivered to the *English* Adventurers; or else by Instalment, at four equal Payments, within two Years after the Peace of this Kingdom shall be settled; or else in Provision in Victuals and Apparel, to be delivered at reasonable Rates in *Scotland*, or any other Place; or any other Way within the Power of the two Houses: It being our earnest Desire to give our Brethren full Contentment herein, so far as God shall enable us thereunto.

VI. You shall, according to the precedent Articles, treat and conclude for the Discharge of both the Debts afore-mentioned; that is, the Remainder of the Brotherly-Affistance Money and the Arrear of the Army in *Ireland*, and such further Payments as shall grow due, untill they shall be dismissed, in any of these Ways as shall be agreeable to our Brethren: And you shall receive any further or other Propositions from them concerning the same; and such Propositions certify to the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that so you may receive further Directions therein.

VII. You shall, with the like Plainness and Truth, make known to our Brethren of *Scotland*, that we are, by these Troubles, made

altogether unable to continue the Charge of the Army in *Ireland*; therefore, lest it should become too great a Burden to them in our Disability of Payment, we desire the said Army may be dismissed in some short Time; only such Garrisons to be kept on Foot, as our Brethren shall think fit to retain for the Guard of *Carrickfergus* and *Coleraine*, according to the Treaty in that Behalf.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
July.

VIII. ' You shall mediate and conclude an Establishment of the same Garrisons, both for the Number of Men (not exceeding 2000) and their Allowances, which the two Houses will undertake to discharge accordingly in Money or Provisions, at reasonable Rates, to be agreed upon.

IX. ' You shall put our Brethren in Mind, That the Popish and Prelatical Faction, which begun with them in the Year 1640 and 1641, and intended to make Way for our Ruin by theirs, and so to have corrupted and altered Religion in the whole Island, have not diminished in any Part of their Malice towards them, or at all departed from their Design; but only varied in the Manner of their Proceeding; conceiving that they have an easy Way to destroy them, if they may first prevail over us: And thereupon you shall use your utmost Endeavour to persuade and excite our Brethren to join with us in the Common Cause, not only of the two Kingdoms, but of all the Professors of the Protestant Religion; for the total and universal Suppression whereof they may discern that the Pope and his Faction, in several Factions, are strongly combined.

X. ' You shall desire, therefore, That both Nations may be straitly united and tied for our mutual Defence against the Papists and Prelatical Faction, and their Adherents, in both Kingdoms; and not lay down Arms till they shall be disarmed, and subjected to the Authority and Justice

An. 29. Car. I.

1643.

July.

Justice of Parliament in both Kingdoms respectively: For the effecting whereof, we desire our Brethren of *Scotland* to raise an Army of 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, or more, to be forthwith sent against the Papists, Prelatical Faction, and Malignants; the same to be commanded by the Earl of *Leven*, or such other General as shall be appointed by the States of *Scotland*, according to the Orders and Directions of both Houses of Parliament; and to be paid, according to such an Establishment as shall be agreed on, out of such Revenues of Papists, Malignants, and other Delinquents, as shall be assigned for that Purpose by the two Houses of Parliament.

XI. You shall take Care that the City of *Carlisle* and the Town of *Berwick*, whensoever they shall be secured from the Papists and Malignants, be delivered over unto the Hands of such Persons and Garrisons as shall be appointed by the two Houses of Parliament to receive and defend the same.

XII. For the Charge in raising and arming those Men; we shall give our Brethren Satisfaction as speedily as may be; and if the Reason of the War require that those Forces, or any Part thereof, be employed on this Side *Tees*, or that it shall be so desired and directed by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, they are, in such Case, to be subject to the Order and Command of his Excellency the Earl of *Essex*, or such other as shall be appointed Lord-General by the two Houses of Parliament.

XIII. You shall assure our Brethren of *Scotland*, That, if they shall be annoyed or endangered by any Force or Army, either from *England* or any other Place, the Lords and Commons of *England* will assist them with a proportionable Army of 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, or more, to be sent into *Scotland* for their Defence, under such Order and Directions as shall be thought fit by the Parliament or State of *Scotland*; and if

any

any Invasion of the *Irish* Rebels, or other Enemies, shall happen during such Time as their Army shall be employed for the Defence of this Kingdom, you shall agree with them for a Guard of Ships to be maintained by us upon that Coast.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
July.

XIV. And, that the mutual Interest and Dangers of both Kingdoms may be defended and preserved by both, you shall, on the Behalf of the Lords and Commons of *England*, contract and agree with the Kingdom and States of *Scotland*, that no Pacification, or Agreement for Peace, shall be concluded, by the two Houses of Parliament, without sufficient Caution and Provision for the Security, Peace, and Safety, of that Kingdom; the Indemnity of all Persons and States for and concerning the Aid and Assistance, which shall be given to this Parliament and Kingdom, for the Suppression of the Popish and ill-affected Party among them; the safe and peaceable Return of their Forces sent hither, and the real Performance of all Articles agreed upon with them.

XV. You shall receive the Public Faith of that Kingdom, that neither their Entrance into, nor Continuance in, this Kingdom, in Arms, shall be made use of to the Prejudice of the Rights and Prerogatives of the Crown of *England*, nor of the Liberties and Privileges of the Subjects; but that all Matters concerning the same be determined by the two Houses of Parliament; and that as our Brethren shall be pleased to come in to help us, at our Request, so their Forces shall be always ready to depart this Kingdom whensoever they shall, by both Houses of Parliament, be thereunto desired.

XVI. You shall further consider, with our Brethren of *Scotland*, what other Articles or Propositions may be fit to be added and concluded; whereby the Assistance and Union betwixt the two Nations may be made more beneficial, and effectual

346 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
July.

tual for the Security and Defence of Religion and Liberty in both Kingdoms : And you shall certify all such Propositions to the two Houses of Parliament, and thereupon proceed to a Conclusion, as you shall receive further Direction from them.

You are, together with 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, or more, desired of our Brethren of Scotland for our Assistance, to consider, agree, and conclude with them concerning a fitting Train of Artillery to accompany the same,

You are to represent to our Brethren of Scotland the Desire of both Houses, that the Earl of Antrim may be examined with reference to the Affairs of this Kingdom, upon such Interrogatories as shall be, by you, framed and propounded in that Behalf, or such as shall be hereafter appointed by both Houses ; which Examinations you are to return unto the Houses with all convenient Speed.

You are to prosecute the Instructions formerly given, by the two Houses, unto Michael Welden and John Corbet, Esquires, concerning the six Earls of Scotland voted Incendiaries by both Houses ^a.

And whereas, by Act of Parliament in both Kingdoms, concerning the Treaty of Peace between the two Nations, two Commissions, the one for conserving of Peace, and the other for Trade, are directed and appointed ; which Commissions are passed and consented to by the two Houses of Parliament ; you are therefore, according to the said Commissions, and in the Capacity of Commissioners in that Behalf, to treat and advise of all such Matters as, by the said Act of Parliament, is appointed ; and to carry with you authentic Copies of the same, and them to deliver to the Commissioners for conserving of Peace, as you shall see Cause.

You

^a The Earls of Roxburgh, Morton, Annandale, Kinnoul, Carnwath, and Lanerk.

' You are to represent to the General Assembly An. 19. Car. 1.
 of *Scotland*, or to the Commissioners appointed by 1643.
 them, the Care and Endeavours of both Houses
 for a perfect Reformation in this Church, and
 the happy Progress made by them therein; for
 the better accomplishing whereof they have called
 an Assembly of Godly and Learned Divines, who
 are now sitting; and that, by reason of the Pre-
 valency of the Papists, Prelatical Faction, and
 other Malignant Enemies to this so-much-desired
 Reformation, now in Arms against the Parlia-
 ment, these good Beginnings are like to receive
 Interruption, if they be not utterly disappointed;
 And therefore you are not only to desire Assistance
 of that Reverend and Godly Assembly, for the
 carrying on this Work with their Prayers, but
 also by such seasonable and effectual Means, as
 to them shall seem meet; and you are to co-ope-
 rate with the States of the Kingdom of *Scot-*
land, for the effecting of the Desires of both
 Houses in the necessary Supplies and Aid now
 desired of our Brethren.

July,

' You are also, according to the Desires of both
 Houses, formerly expressed in their Instructions to
John Corbet, Esq; and now in their Declaration
 to the General Assembly, to solicit the speed-
 ing away of such and so many Reverend and
 Godly Divines as they shall make Choice of,
 to be Assistants in the Assembly called by the
 two Houses.'

July 22. A Letter to the Speaker of the House
 of Lords, from the Council of War, was read; the
 Occasion of it will be best known from its own
 Words:

My Lord,

Brickhill, July 25, 1643.

WE have, after divers Addresses to the Houses, A Letter from
with Patience expected Recruits, and Supplies the Council of
of Men, Horses, Saddles, and Arms, to enable us War, in the Earl
to do the State that Service which we most heartily of *Essex's* Army.
wish we could perform: And we have, in Modesty,
for-

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
July.

forborne to press the Necessity of the Armies upon your Lordships, so often as the Condition thereof required, till now we are driven to that Exigent that we can be no longer silent; we must therefore, to discharge that Trust reposed in us, make known unto your Lordships, That the Army is much decayed very suddenly, partly by the Mortality and Sicknes which hath befallen us, and which lieth still upon us; and partly for Want of Pay and Cloathing, our Soldiers being grown bare, and many of them almost naked; and the Running away of our Soldiers is not the least Occasion of our Weakness, who are encouraged to leave us, out of a Report of raising new Armies, wherein they hope they shall be entertained.

We hold it now fit to make public the particular Condition of the Army; not knowing whether it will be more pleasing to their Lordships to refer the Information thereof to such as shall be appointed, by your Lordships, to receive the particular Relation thereof from those who are herewith sent to give a full Satisfaction therein: But thus much we shall be bold to say, That if a constant Course be not held that the Soldiers may be duly paid and better cloathed, and the Recruits of Men, Horse, Saddles, and Arms, may likewise be provided, it will be impossible for us to answer your Expectations, or discharge the Duties of our Place; whereof we have thought fit to give your Lordships timely Notice, that we may not, hereafter, have it laid to our Charge that we have dealt unfaithfully in concealing that which, in the End, and that too soon, will be the Destruction and Overthrow of this Army, if speedy Course be not taken to supply the Wants, and prevent our further Weakness, occasioned chiefly by those Particulars mentioned; some whereof will rest in your Lordship's Power to provide against.

My Lord, it concerning our Honour and the Safety of the Kingdom, we must deal plainly and clearly with you, That if a speedy Care be not had, there will not, in a few Days, be left the Face
of

of an Army here amongst us: All which we refer to An. 19. Car. I.
your Lordship's most serious and speedy Consideration, 1643.
and rest

Your Lordship's

July,

Humble Servants,

THOMAS GREY,	JA. HOLBORNE,
WILLIAM BROOKE,	LIONEL COPLEY,
JOHN MIDDLETON,	JOHN MERRICK,
HARRY BARCLAY,	PHIL. SKIPPON,
JOHN BURGOYN,	PHIL. STAPYLTON.
FRANCIS RUSSEL,	EDWARD ALDRICH,
THOMAS TYRRELL,	SAMUEL LUKE.

This Letter was ordered to be communicated to the Commons, at a Conference; after which both Houses fell upon various Ways and Means to raise Money, of which they were then in great Want. They also agreed that a large Body of Horse should be raised; and this Day, *July 25*, a long Ordinance was read and agreed to for that Purpose. This Army was to be commanded by the Earl of *Manchester*, and was, as it is declared in the Ordinance, to prevent the great Mischiefs done by the King's Horse, his Army being said to be vastly superior in that Kind of Force.

The Parliament resolve to raise another under the Earl of *Manchester*,

The rest of the Transactions of this Month, any way relative to our Design, will be comprized in a very little Room.—Sir *John Conyers*, Lieutenant of the Tower, having asked Leave of both Houses to go into *Holland*, with his Lady, for two Months, it was agreed to; and the Lord Mayor and the two Sheriffs of *London* were appointed to execute that Office till the other's Return. Sir *William Waller* also, having lost his own Army in the West, was authorized to command all the Militia in and about *London*.

The Earl of *Portland* and the Lord *Conway*, having now laid as Prisoners seven Weeks, on the single Testimony of Mr. *Waller* against them, were, by the Lords, admitted to Bail. The Earl of *Denbigh* and

An. 19. Car. I. and the Lord *Hunsdon* for the former, and the Earl of *Bedford* and Lord *Howard of Eskrick* for the latter, in 1000*l.* each; to be forfeited to the King, if, after Notice, they did not appear before the Parliament in three Days Time.

1643
July,

July 31. To close this Month, we shall give an authentic Proof of the Weakness the Parliament was reduced to at this Time, from their Lord-General *Essex's* Propositions; which were delivered to the Earl of *Northumberland*, by some Officers of the Army, sent on purpose to the Committee of Safety; and by the said Earl again presented to the House of Lords, as a Matter deserving the most serious Regard of both Houses of Parliament. They bore this Title:

CONSIDERATIONS to be offered to the Parliament, concerning the Weakness of the Army, and the EXPEDIENTS for Remedy thereof.

The Earl of *Essex's* Proposals for reinforcing his Army.

THE Number of Foot are 3000 marching Men, and at least 3000 sick, occasioned by the Want of Pay, ill Cloathing, and all other Miseries which attend an unpaid sickly Army.

The Number of the Horse 2500, (3000 last Muster) occasioned by the Loss of Horses upon hard Duty and Service, and other Casualties incident to Horse in Service; Recruits of Horse, though often desired, not performed. Besides, by reason of a new Army being raised, the Officers find themselves neglected, the present Regiments much lessened, lifting themselves elsewhere for the new Army, expecting better Pay and Cloathing; and, upon their going hence, are entertained and protected: And great Discouragements and Scandals put upon his Excellency, the Officers, and Army, either through false Suggestions of some amongst us, or the Misunderstanding of others; poisoning the Affections of the People, which hinders Recruits and Contributions.

As

As Remedies for which Mischiefs we offer these An. 19. Car. I.
Things: 1643

1. 'A speedy Pay of Arrears, and a constant Pay settled for the future; which will draw on Recruits, and give Way to more strict Discipline: And that Cloaths may be provided according to 1000 for every Regiment: To which Purpose an Ordinance for a Prefs may be immediately passed.

2. 'That 500 Horse be sent, and 200 provided, monthly, for Recruits.

3. 'That the Forces to be raised may not be put into a new Army untill the old Regiments be recruited: No Officer or Soldier to be entertained into any other Employment: And that severe Punishment be executed upon such, and those that entertain them.

4. 'That such as shall be found guilty of any Scandals laid upon his Excellency, any of his Officers, or Army, may be severely punished; whereby the like Offences may be no more committed: And a Declaration of both Houses passed, for the Vindication of his Excellency and them.

5. 'That full Power having been given to his Excellency, by an Ordinance of both Houses, for the granting of all Commissions for the raising or commanding of any Forces, Towns, or Garrisons: It is conceived most requisite, for the better ordering of the Army, that no Commission be granted whatsoever, but from his Excellency; the Want of which breeds Disobedience to his Excellency's Commands, to the Prejudice of the Kingdom.

6. 'That the Loss of the West is rumoured to be occasioned by his Excellency. Desired, it may be thoroughly examined what the Loss was, and the Occasion of it.'

E S S E X.

July 28, 1643.

The

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

August.

The Lords taking these Considerations into serious Debate, came to the following Resolutions:

1. 'That the Lord-General's Army shall be recruited, in the first Place, by all possible Means; and for the speedier expediting thereof, their Lordships think it fit that an Ordinance of both Houses be passed for pressing of Soldiers.

2. 'That a Declaration be published, to vindicate the Lord-General, his Commanders and Officers, from Scandals and Aspersions.

3. 'That a Declaration may be published, that no Commander, or Soldier, of the Lord-General's Army, shall be entertained in the City, or any other Place. If they be seen there they shall be punished.

4. 'That such Persons, that shall be employed in the Army under the Lord-General, shall be under his Command, and receive their Commissions from him.

5. 'That it be recommended to the House of Commons, to provide for the Paying the Arrears of the Army, and to recruit him with 200 Horses monthly.

6. 'That their Lordships hold it fit that the Rumour of losing the West be examined.

'Ordered, That these Considerations and Remedies, with the Sense of this House, shall be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference, and their Concurrence herein desired.'

August 3. Many Alterations had been made, from Time to Time, in the Parliament's Ordinance for the General Weekly Assessment, as well as in that for sequestering Delinquents' Estates, &c. occasioned chiefly by a wrong Interpretation of these new Acts of Power, or the Partiality of the Collectors. To remedy which, the former Ordinance was now regulated, and put on a Footing to stand throughout *England* and *Wales*; and, this Day, being agreed to by both Houses, was ordered to be printed and published. This Ordinance, which is neither in *Rushworth's Collections*, nor

nor *Husbands's*, nor in any other that we have seen, An. 19. Car. I.
we give from the *Lords' Journals*. 1643.

The Preamble runs thus :

August.

‘THE Lords and Commons now assembled in Parliament, being fully satisfied, and resolved in their Consciences, that they have lawfully taken up Arms, and may and ought to continue the same for the necessary Defence of the true Reformed Religion, of themselves and the Parliament, from Violence and Destruction, and of this Kingdom from foreign Invasion, and for the bringing of notorious Offenders to condign Punishment ; which are the only Causes for which they have raised, and do continue, an Army and Force, which cannot possibly be maintained, nor the Kingdom subsist, without the speedy raising of large and considerable Sums of Money, proportionable to the great Expences which now this Kingdom is at, for the supporting of the said Army, and for the saving of the whole Kingdom, our Religion, Laws, and Liberties, from utter Ruin and Destruction : Which that it may be done with as much Ease and Indifferency to the good Subjects, as the Exigence of the Time will permit, the said Lords and Commons do ordain, &c.

The enacting Clauses, in which, for Brevity's Sake, we have left out the Words of Form, run thus :

‘That, for the several Purposes aforesaid, the Weekly Sums of Money hereafter mentioned shall be levied upon all the Counties, Cities, Towns, Liberties, Places, and Persons, hereafter mentioned, according to the Proportions herein expressed, to be paid in weekly to the Collectors appointed for receiving thereof.

			£.	s.
Bedfordshire,	—	—	220	00
Berkshire,	—	—	550	00
Buckinghamshire,	—	—	420	00
Cambridgeshire,	—	—	375	00
Isle of Ely,	—	—	147	10
Vol. XII.	Z		Cheshire,	

354 The Parliamentary History

			L.	s.
An. 19. Car. I.	<i>Cheshire,</i>	_____	175	00
	City of <i>Chester</i> and County thereof, —	_____	62	00
1643.	<i>Cornwall,</i>	_____	625	00
August.	<i>Cumberland,</i>	_____	37	10
	<i>Derbyshire,</i>	_____	175	00
	<i>Devonshire.</i>	_____	1800	00
	City of <i>Exeter</i> and County thereof, —	_____	50	10
	<i>Dorsetshire,</i>	_____	705	00
	<i>Durham,</i>	_____	62	10
	<i>Essex,</i>	_____	1125	00
	<i>Gloucestershire,</i>	_____	750	00
	City of <i>Gloucester</i> and County thereof,	_____	62	10
	<i>Hampshire,</i> with the City of <i>Winche-</i>	}	750	00
	<i>ster, Southampton,</i> and the Isle of			
	<i>Wight,</i>			
	<i>Herefordshire,</i> and City of <i>Hereford,</i> —	_____	437	10
	<i>Hertfordshire,</i>	_____	450	00
	<i>Huntingdonshire,</i>	_____	220	00
	<i>Kent,</i> with the Cities there,	_____	1250	00
	<i>Lancashire,</i>	_____	500	00
	<i>Leicestershire,</i>	_____	187	10
	<i>Lincolnshire,</i> with the City of <i>Lincoln,</i> —	_____	812	10
	<i>Middlesex,</i> and the City and Liberty of	}	750	00
	<i>Westminster,</i>			
	<i>Monmouthshire,</i>	_____	62	10
	<i>Norfolk,</i> with the City of <i>Norwich,</i> —	_____	1250	00
	<i>Northumberland,</i>	_____	50	00
	<i>Newcastle upon Tyne,</i>	_____	25	00
	<i>Northamptonshire,</i>	_____	425	00
	<i>Nottinghamshire,</i>	_____	187	10
	<i>Oxfordshire,</i>	_____	400	00
	<i>Rutlandshire,</i>	_____	62	10
	<i>Salop,</i>	_____	375	00
	<i>Somersetshire,</i>	_____	1050	00
	City of <i>Bristol,</i>	_____	55	15
	<i>Staffordshire,</i>	_____	212	10
	City of <i>Litchfield,</i>	_____	45	00
	<i>Suffolk,</i>	_____	1250	00
	<i>Surrey,</i> with the Borough of <i>Southwark,</i>	_____	500	00
	<i>Sussex,</i>	_____	625	00
				War-

Of ENGLAND.

355

	£.	s.	An. 19. Car. I.
Warwickshire, ————	562	10	1643.
Coventry City and County thereof, —	37	10	August.
Westmoreland, ————	27	05	
Wiltshire, ————	725	00	
Worcestershire, ————	150	00	
Worcester City and County thereof, —	16	13	
Yorkshire, ————	1062	10	
York City and County thereof, —	62	00	
Kingston upon Hull, ————	25	00	

W A L E S.

Anglesey, ————	25	00
Brecknock, ————	50	10
Cardigan, ————	62	10
Carmarthen, ————	50	00
Carnarvan, ————	30	00
Denbigh, ————	25	00
Flint, ————	16	10
Glamorgan, ————	67	10
Merioneth, ————	12	10
Montgomery, ————	62	10
Pembroke, ————	50	00
Haverford-West, ————	5	00
Radnor, ————	37	10

‘ Every Person of the Estate of a Baron or Barons, and every Estate above, and every other Person born within *England, Wales*, or other the King’s Dominions, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal; and every Corporation, Fraternity, Guild, Mystery, Brotherhood, and Commonalty, Corporate or not Corporate, shall pay towards the Weekly Sum so assessed upon each County, according as the same shall be tax’d upon the respective Town, Hamlet, Parish, or Place where such Person is chargeable, his respective Proportion for whatsoever he hath to his own proper Use, as well in Coin as in Plate, Stock of Merchandize, or any Manner of Corn, Grain, Household Stuff, and of all other Goods and Moveables, as well within this Realm as without, and of all such Sums of Money as to him is

Z 2

‘ owing,

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

owing, whereof he trusts in his Conscience to be paid, except Money that he doth owe, and, in his Conscience, intends truly to pay; and except also the Apparel of every such Person, their Wives and Children, belonging to their own Bodies, saving Jewels, Gold, Silver, Stones, Pearl: And every Alien and Stranger, born out of the King's Obedience, as well Denizens as others, inhabiting within this Realm; and also every Popish Recusant, convict or not convict, shall pay a Proportion double to those of the like Estates, being no Aliens or Recusants.

Every Person born within the King's Obedience, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal; and every Corporation, Fraternity, &c. shall also, for every Estate which such Person, Corporation, Fraternity, &c. or any other to their Use, in Trust or otherwise, hath, in Fee-Simple, Fee-Tail, or Term of Life, Term of Years, by Executorship, Wardship, or by Copy of Court-Roll, in any Honours, Castles, Manors, Lands, Tenements, Rents, Services, Tythes, Obligations, Obventions, Annuities, Offices of Profit, Fees, Corrodies, or other yearly Profits or Hereditaments, as well within antient Demesne and other Places privileged, as elsewhere, shall pay towards the said Weekly Sums his Proportion thereof as charged upon each County as aforesaid, according to the true Intent and Meaning of this Ordinance. Excepted always from this Assessment, all the Goods, Chattels, and Ornaments belonging to any Church or Chapel for the Service of Almighty God; and except yearly Wages due to Servants.

And the said several Sums, so charged upon the several Counties, Cities, &c. shall be rated before the tenth Day of *August*, 1643; and the said Weekly Payments are to continue for two Months (accounting twenty-eight Days to the Month) next ensuing, from the said tenth Day of *August*, unless the King's Army shall be disbanded in the mean Time.

Next

Next follow the Names of the Commissioners for
executing this Ordinance in each County, &c.
but these, being mostly the same with those ap-
pointed for the Sequestration of Delinquents'
Estates, before given at large, we pass over,
and proceed with our Abstract of the Ordinance.

An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 August.

' The Commissioners of the several Counties and
 ' Places, or the greatest Part of them, shall, with
 ' all convenient Speed, after Notice of this Ordinance,
 ' meet together in some convenient Place
 ' within their several Counties and Places, and may
 ' there agree to divide themselves, for the Execution
 ' of the said Service, into such Hundreds, Places,
 ' and Divisions within their respective Counties, &c.
 ' as to them shall seem expedient; and afterwards
 ' they, or any two of them respectively, shall
 ' direct their Warrants to such Number of Persons
 ' as they shall think fit, within their several
 ' Divisions, to appear before them; and, upon
 ' their Appearance, the said Commissioners, or any
 ' two of them, shall appoint such Persons as they
 ' think fit, within their respective Divisions, who
 ' shall have Power to assess every Person, Corporation,
 ' Fraternity, &c. according to the Weekly
 ' Rates and Proportions in this Ordinance mentioned.

' And the respective Commissioners, or any two
 ' of them, shall have Power, within their respective
 ' Limits, to nominate Collectors for the Money so
 ' assessed, who shall pay the same to the Treasurers
 ' of the Army, raised by the Parliament, for the
 ' Time being, at *Guildhall, London*; or at such
 ' Place, or to such Persons, as the said Commissioners
 ' shall appoint: And if any Person, Corporation,
 ' Fraternity, &c. shall refuse to pay the
 ' Sums upon them assessed, or shall not pay the
 ' same, upon Demand, at the Place of his Abode,
 ' or where such Assessment shall be made, it shall
 ' be lawful for the Collectors, or any two of them,
 ' to levy all Sums so assessed by way of Distress and

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

‘ Sale of their Goods, wherever the same shall be
 ‘ found; and to break open any House, Chest,
 ‘ Trunk, Box, or any other Thing wherein such
 ‘ Goods are: And if any Person, so distrained, shall
 ‘ make Resistance, it shall be lawful for the said
 ‘ Collectors, as they shall see Cause, to call to their
 ‘ Assistance any of the Train’d Bands, or Compa-
 ‘ nies of Volunteers, or other Forces, within the
 ‘ County or Place where such Resistance shall be
 ‘ made, or any other Person dwelling in or near the
 ‘ Place; and the said Train’d Bands, &c. are re-
 ‘ quired to be assisting to the said Collectors at their
 ‘ Peril.

‘ Every Person shall be rated, in every County,
 ‘ for the Estate he hath, either in Lands, Tene-
 ‘ ments, Hereditaments, Rents, Annuities, Fees,
 ‘ Offices, Goods, Cattle, or Chattels, in that County
 ‘ only; and if he has an Estate, either in Lands,
 ‘ Tenements, &c. in more Counties than one, then
 ‘ to be rated in each County according to such his
 ‘ Estate.

‘ All Lands, Tenements, &c. of every Person,
 ‘ of what Degree soever, shall be rated towards
 ‘ raising of the said Weekly Sum charged by this
 ‘ Ordinance; with this Proviso, That if the Lands
 ‘ be set at, or lett near, the yearly Value thereof,
 ‘ in the Possession of any Tenant for Life, Lives,
 ‘ Years, or at Will, such Person, to whom the Rent
 ‘ thereof belongeth, to be solely chargeable there-
 ‘ with; but if the same be lett at any Under-Value,
 ‘ then the Sum taxed to be apportioned between the
 ‘ Party to whom the Rent belongeth and the Te-
 ‘ nant thereof, as the Taxers shall think meet; and
 ‘ if any of them shall do any Injury, the same to
 ‘ be rectified by the Commissioners, or any two of
 ‘ them, within their several Limits, according to
 ‘ their Discretion: And if any such Tenant of
 ‘ Lands, &c. shall be charged with any Sum, con-
 ‘ trary to the true Meaning of this Ordinance, it
 ‘ shall be lawful for such Tenant to stop the same
 ‘ out of his Rent due for the same Lands, or to
 ‘ take his lawful Remedy against such Person to
 ‘ whom

‘whom the said Rent is due, (who ought, by the true Meaning of this Ordinance, to be charged therewith) by Action of Debt, wherein no Wa-
ger of Law, Protection, or Esloign, shall be allowed.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
August.

‘All Persons having any Debts or Sums of Money owing to them within this Realm, or any Debts, Goods, or Sums of Money beyond the Seas, out of his Majesty’s Dominions, shall be charged for the same in the Place of his Residence at the Time of the Taxation.

‘No Person having two Mansions to resort to, and calling himself Household Servant or Waiting Servant to the King’s Majesty or other Persons, shall be excused from Payment to this Assessment; And if any Person, by Craft, happen to escape from the said Payment, according to the true Meaning of this Ordinance, and that proved before the said Commissioners, or any two of them, then every such Person shall be charged the treble Value of so much as he should have been taxed at; and the same to be levied by Distress and Sale of his Goods: And if no Distress be found, then the said Collectors shall respectively have Power to inquire for any Money due, or to be due, to the Persons so assessed, for any Rents or Goods whatsoever, and to compound for any of the said Rents, Goods, &c. with any Person by whom they are due; also to give a full Discharge for the Money by them so received upon Composition, or otherwise; which Discharge shall be valid to all Intents and Purposes.

‘If any Person shall find himself over-rated, such Person, before Distress taken, may complain to the Commissioners within that Division; which Commissioners, or any two of them, shall have Power to give Relief as they shall see Cause; and if any Person, so aggrieved, be such as have not formerly contributed to the Propositions, or not paid upon the Ordinance for assessing of such as have not contributed at all, or not contributed according to
‘the

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

August.

the Proportion of their Estates, then the said Parties, if they be not assessed above a proportionable Part as other Men of their Ability have paid upon the Propositions, or have paid upon the said Ordinance, not exceeding the Twentieth Part, the Rates so assessed to stand without Appeal: Provided that no Person be assessed above the Sum of 10*l.* the Week.

And, for the Encouragement of the Collectors, Three-pence in the Pound shall be allowed for every Sum paid to the Receivers appointed by this Ordinance; Two-pence whereof shall be allowed to the Collectors, and the Residue to such other Persons as shall be employed in the said Service, according to the Discretion of the Commissioners.

And that all the Monies assessed may be collected, the respective Assessors shall, within one Week after their respective Assessments made, return their several Assessments to the Commissioners for their respective Divisions; who are hereby required, within ten Days after, to deliver a Copy thereof, subscribed with their Hands, to the Collectors within their Divisions; and also to send up another Copy to the Treasurer of the Army raised by the Parliament, for the Time being, that the said Treasurer may know thereby what he is to receive of every Parish, &c. within the Realm; which Sums shall be paid to the said Treasurer at *Guildhall, London.*

And if any Assessors or Collectors shall refuse the said Service, or be faulty therein, the Commissioners for the Divisions where such are, shall have Power to commit them to Prison, or to set such a Fine upon them as they shall think fit, not exceeding the Sum of 20*l.* upon the Assessor, or the Sum of 5*l.* upon the Collector, the same to be levied by Distress and Sale: And if any Person so assessed as aforesaid, shall conceal his Goods, so that no Distress can be taken, or the Sum so assessed levied by any the Ways in this Ordinance

men-

mentioned, then the Collectors shall certify the same; in case he be a Peer, unto the Lords in Parliament; and, if he be under that Degree, to the Committee of Lords and Commons appointed for the Advance of Monies; which Committee shall have Power to send for such Persons as Delinquents, and commit them Prisoners to such Place within this Kingdom, and for so long a Time, as the Committee for Examinations shall think fit.

All the Assessors and Collectors, and all that shall assist them in the Premises, shall be protected, by both Houses of Parliament, from all Damage that may come to them by this Service; and shall further receive such Allowances for their Charge and Obedience in the Execution of this Ordinance, as upon Certificate from the Commissioners, or any two of them, shall be thought fit by the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations.

Lastly, Where no Commissioners are named in this Ordinance for any County, &c. such other Commissioners as are appointed by Parliament shall put this present Ordinance in Execution within any such County, &c.

Provided that no Peer of this Realm shall, by virtue of this Ordinance, be rated for any of his Mansion-Houses, with the Appurtenances, in any Place whatsoever; but that the Assessors shall certify the same unto the House of Peers, that such Peers may be there rated for the same according to this Ordinance.

And whereas, by this Ordinance, the Inhabitants of the City of London are not to be rated, in respect of the great Proportion laid upon them by the late Weekly Assessment for three Months, it is now ordered, That those Persons within the said City of London, which have not paid the said Assessment, formerly rated on them, shall, in case they pay not the same within twenty Days after the Date of this Ordinance, be rated, for the Space

An. 19. Car. I.

1643

August.

of

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

August.

of two Months, as other Counties by this Ordinance are to be.

August 4. The Lords received Letters from the Lord *Willoughby of Parham*, dated *August 1*, (but they are not entered in their *Journals*) giving an Account of the ill State and Condition the Parliament's Forces were in, in those Parts of *Lincolnshire* where he commanded; desiring present Relief, both of Men and Money, else he could not defend them against the Earl of *Newcastle's* Army. It was ordered to be communicated to the House of Commons.

The same Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee appointed to consider of Means for settling the present Distractions of the Kingdom, reported, That they had considered of a Petition to be presented to his Majesty, from both Houses, to that Purpose; which being read and, after Debate, agreed to, a Message was sent to the Lower House, to desire a Conference with them the next Morning.

August 5. The Lords took into further Consideration their Propositions for Peace, and ordered that their Speaker should introduce them to the Commons, at the Conference, with this Preface:

Gentlemen,

Preamble to the
Lords' Propositions
for Peace.

THE Lords believe it too visible to the Understanding of all Persons, that this Kingdom, with all those Blessings of Plenty and Abundance, the Fruits of our long and happy Peace, must be forthwith turned into that Desolation and Famine which accompany a Civil War: And that those Hands and Hearts, that should support this Land, do now endanger it by unnatural Divisions: Which Considerations have moved the Lords to send Propositions again to his Majesty, in which they do desire your Concurrence; the Reasonableness and Justice of them being such, that if they be rejected, our Cause will thereby

be

be strengthened, and the Kingdom encouraged to pre-serve themselves in their just Rights. An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

August.

But though we are told the Conference was held this Day, yet the Report of it is not entered in the *Journals*; nor does it appear from those Authorities what the Propositions of Peace were. Mr. *Whitlocke* passes over this whole Affair in Silence. Mr. *Rushworth*, indeed, gives us a Petition from the City of *London* against them, but nothing more: This Deficiency is very luckily supplied by Lord *Clarendon*, who has not only given us the Propositions themselves, but also the Arguments urged in the House of Commons for and against them. The Neglect of the other Contemporaries, in a Point of so great Importance, is a sufficient Apology for our giving his Lordship's Account of this Matter, though he was not, nor could be, present at the Debate^a.

The Particulars proposed by the Lords were: The Articles

1. 'That both Armies might be presently disbanded, and his Majesty be entreated to return to his Parliament, upon such Security as should give him Satisfaction. thereof.
2. 'That Religion might be settled with the Advice of a Synod of Divines, in such a Manner as his Majesty, with the Consent of both Houses of Parliament, should appoint.
3. 'That the Militia, both by Sea and Land, might be settled by a Bill; and the Militia, Forts, and Ships of the Kingdom, put into such Hands as the King should appoint, with the Approbation of both Houses of Parliament; and his Majesty's Revenue to be absolutely and wholly restored unto him, only deducting such Part as had been of Necessity expended for the Maintenance of his Children, and not otherwise.
4. 'That all the Members of both Houses, who had been expelled only for absenting themselves, or meer

^a History, Vol. III. 8vo. Edit. p. 318.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

August.

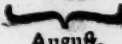
meer Compliance with his Majesty, and no other
Matter of Fact against them, might be restored to
their Places.

5. That all Delinquents, from before the 10th
Day of *January*, 1641, should be delivered up to
the Justice of Parliament, and a General Pardon
for all others on both Sides.

6. And lastly, That there might be an Act of
Oblivion for all by-gone Deeds and Acts of Hosti-
lity.

Debate thereon
in the House of
Commons ;

When this Conference was reported in the
House of Commons, it begot a wonderful long
and a hot Debate, which lasted till Ten o'Clock
that Night, and continued a Day or two more ;
the violent Party (for there were yet many among
them of more moderate Constitutions, who did, and
ever had, heartily abhorred their Proceedings, tho',
out of Fear, or Indisposition of Health, or not
knowing else well what to do, they continued there)
 inveighed furiously against the Design itself of send-
ing to the King at all, and therefore would not
have the particular Propositions so much as con-
sidered : They had received much Prejudice by
the last Treaty at *Oxford*, and therefore must un-
dergo more now their Condition was much lower ;
the King had since that, upon the Matter, de-
clared them to be no Parliament ; for if they
were not free, they could not be a Parliament ;
so that till that Point was vindicated, they could
not treat in any safe Capacity, but would be look-
ed upon under the Notion of Rebels, as his Ma-
jesty had declared them. They had sent Mem-
bers into *Scotland* to require Assistance, which
that Kingdom was preparing with all Brotherly
Affection and Forwardness ; and, after such a
Discovery, to treat for Peace, without the Privy
of the *Scots*, was to betray them, and to forfeit
all Hopes hereafter of Relief from thence, what
Necessities soever they might be reduced to. That
the City of *London* had expressed all imaginable
Readiness to raise Forces for Sir *William Waller* ;
and

and the Counties near *London* were ready to rise An. 19. Car. I.
as one Man; whereby the Earl of *Essex* would
be speedily enabled to march, with a better Ar- 1643.
my than ever he had, to give the King Battle, 
except this Discourse of Peace did extinguish the
Zeal that was then flaming in the Hearts of the
People.

August,

But notwithstanding these Reasons, and the
Passion in the Delivery, the Terror of the King's
Successes suggested Answers enough: 'They had
been punished for breaking off the Treaty of *Ox-*
ford, when they might have had better Terms
than now they could expect; and if they omit-
ted this Opportunity, they should fare much
worse; that they were not sure of Aid from *Scot-*
land, neither was it almost possible it should come
Time enough to preserve them from the Ruin at
Hand: And for the City of *London*, though the
common and meaner Sort of People, who might
promise themselves Advantage by it, desired the
Continuance of the Distractions, yet it was evi-
dent the most substantial and rich Men desired
Peace, by their Refusal to supply Money for the
carrying on the War; and if they should judge
of the common People by their Forwardness to
engage their own Persons, they had Reason to
believe they had no Mind to the War neither; for
their General was forced to retire even under
their own Walls, for Want of Men to recruit
his Army. However, the sending reasonable Pro-
positions to the King, would either procure a
Peace, and so they should have no more Need of
an Army; or, being refused, would raise more
Men and Money than all their Ordinances with-
out it.' These Reasons and Arguments prevail-
ed; and, after the Debate had lasted till Ten of
the Clock at Night, it was resolved upon the Que-
stion, and carried by Twenty-nine Voices, 'That
'they

^b This Circumstance is confirmed by the *Commons' Journals*; wherein we find the Numbers for taking the Lords Propositions into Consideration were Ninety-four. Against it, Sixty-five. The Tellers for the Question, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*; against it, Mr. *Martin* and Mr. *Strode*.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

Which being by
them, in some
Measure, approv-
ed of,

‘ they should insist upon the Propositions, and send
‘ them to his Majesty.’

Lord *Clarendon* proceeds to remark, ‘ That, with-
out Doubt, if they had then sent, (as, if the Power
had been in the two Houses of Parliament, they had
done) a firm Peace had immediately ensued: For
besides that, if a Treaty and Cessation had been in
that Conjunction enter’d upon, no extravagant De-
mand would have been pressed, only a Security for
those who had been faulty, which the King would
gladly have granted, and most religiously obser-
ved; the fourth Proposition, and Consent to re-
store all Members to their Places in Parliament,
would have prevented the kindling any more Fire
in those Houses. But this was too well known
to be suffered to pass; and, therefore, the next
Day, being *Sunday*, the seditious Preachers filled
all the Pulpits with Alarms of Ruin and Destruction
to the City, if a Peace were now offered to the
King; and printed Papers were scattered through
the Streets, and fixed upon Gates, Posts, and the
most public Places in the City and Suburbs, re-
quiring all Persons well-affected to rise as one Man,
and to come to the House of Commons next Morn-
ing, for that 20,000 *Irish* Rebels were landed;
which Information was likewise given that Day in
many Pulpits by their Preachers; and, in other
Papers likewise set up, it was declared, That the
Malignant Party had over-voted the Good, and, if
not prevented, there would be a Peace.’—Thus far
the Noble Historian.

This Apprehension of a Peace so alarmed the
Leading Men in the City of *London*, that the Lord
Mayor (*Pennington*) who had been excepted by
Name in the King’s Offer of a General Pardon,
call’d a Common Council at the *Guildhall* the
same Evening, though on a *Sunday*; where a Pe-
tition against any Accommodation, and a Draught
of an Ordinance for vigorously prosecuting the
War, was agreed on to be presented to the House
of Commons next Morning (*August 7*): For tho’
these

these Propositions for Peace took their Rise in the An. 19. Car. 1.
House of Lords, the Citizens did not offer any Pe- 1643.
tition to that House against them. Instead thereof
we find that, the Lords being met, they were in-
formed that a great Concourse of People were ga-
thered about their House, occasioned by several Pa-
pers printed and dispersed all over the City the Day
before, inviting the People to come down in an un-
lawful Manner to *Westminster*: On which they
agreed to have a Conference with the Other House,
to let them know, That their Lordships did account
this Manner of coming down a great Breach of Pri-
vilege, and that they did adjourn their House till the
next Morning; and that, if the Concourse of Peo-
ple still continued, they would adjourn themselves
to a further Time. Likewise to desire the Com-
mons to join with them, to find out who printed
and dispersed those Papers, and who were the Au-
thors of them, that they might be brought to con-
dign Punishment.

A great Tumult
is raised in both
Houses,

August.

In the Midst of this Tumult came down also a And the City of
select Body of Aldermen and Common Council to London petition
Westminster, with the Petition before-mentioned; the Commons
and the Commons being informed they were at the against any Ac-
Door, they were called in; when Alderman *Atkins*, commodation;
one of the Sheriffs, in the Name of all the rest, pre-
sented the following Petition:

To the Honourable the Knights, Citizens, and
Burgesses, of the Commons House, in Parliament
assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Al-
dermen, and Commons of the City of *London*, in
Common Council assembled,

Sheweth,

THAT your Petitioners having heard that such
Propositions and Offers have been lately sent, from
the House of Peers, to this Honourable House, which,
(as we greatly fear) if yielded unto, would be de-
structive to our Religion, Laws, and Liberties; and
finding

368 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

August.

finding already, by Experience, that the Spirits of all the well-affected Party, in the City and Counties adjacent, that are willing to assist the Parliament both in Person and Purse, are much dejected thereat; and the Brotherly Assistance from Scotland, as well as the Raising and Maintaining of Forces ourselves, thereby likely to be retarded; all which the Petitioners refer to your serious Consideration; and, considering our present sad Condition, lies upon us in a special Manner, through the incensed Patience of the Almighty, by Delay and Want of Execution of Justice upon Traitors and Delinquents; and, having an Opportunity yet afforded us to speak, our Desires are,

That you would be pleased to persist in your former Resolutions, whereupon the People have so much depended, and wherein you have so deeply engaged yourselves, (though you should perish in the Work) that Justice may be done upon Offenders and Delinquents. And that, since we are as willing as ever to expose what we are, and have, for the crowning of so good a Cause, you will be pleased, by a speedy passing the Ordinance hereunto annexed, or one to this Effect, to put us in a probable Way for our and your Defence, wherein your Petitioners will, by the Blessing of God, never be wanting; but shall ever pray, &c.

Who thereupon reject the Lords' Propositions for Peace.

The Commons, after having read the Petition and Ordinance, first returned the Citizens hearty Thanks for their great Expressions of Care for the Safety of the Commonwealth, &c. Next ordered their Committee, formerly appointed to meet with the City's concerning the Militia, to receive such Propositions as shall be offered them, for the Safety of the City and Peace of the Kingdom: To prepare a Draught of an Ordinance upon them, and present it to the House. They then proceeded to take into Consideration the Propositions for Peace sent from the Lords; and, after a very long Debate, the House divided on this Question, Whether they should take those

Pro-

Propositions into a more particular Consideration? An. 19. Car. I.

The Yeas went out, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Hol-*
land, Tellers for the Yeas, and Sir *Robert Harley*
with Sir *Thomas Barrington*, for and with the Noes;
who brought in the Number of 81 of the former,
and 79 of the latter. This near Division occasioned
a stricter Scrutiny; for the House, not being satisfied
with the Report of the Tellers, divided again, when
the Number of the Yeas that went forth were 81,
as before, but the Number of the Noes that sat
amounted now to 88. A very odd Circumstance,
unless we may suppose that nine Members came into
the House at that Interval!

1643.

August.

Thus all Hope of an Accommodation, between
King and Parliament, was stopped by the Commons;
for another Question arising at the same Time,
Whether that House would concur with the Lords
in their Propositions, or not? it passed in the Ne-
gative without any Division^a. But the Commons,
to soften the Harshness of this Vote to the Lords,
appointed a Committee to prepare Reasons to be
offered to them, why they dissented from them;
and particularly to desire their Lordships, at the
next Conference, *not to desert the Defence of the*
Kingdom at this Time; for the Commons would do
their utmost in the Defence of the Lords, as much as
for themselves. They also resolved to recommend
it to the Lord Mayor of *London*, to take some Course
to prevent all Tumults; who accordingly issued an
Order, prohibiting, on the utmost Penalties the
Law could inflict, the making of any unlawful As-
semblies, or printing any Papers, &c. for that Pur-
pose.

Two Days after this, (*August 9*) as a Counter-
poise to the foregoing Petition for continuing the
War, another was presented to the Commons for
VOL. XII. A a Peace.

^a Lord *Clarendon* says, The People about the Doors behaved so im-
periously, as to tell the Members of both Houses, as they passed by
them, 'That if they had not a good Answer, they would be there the
'next Day with double the Number.'

370 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. Peace.
1643.

August,

This was from the Women; the Men, as Lord Clarendon remarks, being deterred from any Attempt of this Sort by the late Execution of Mr. Tomkins and Mr. Chaloner, and the Severities which followed the Discovery of Mr. Waller's Plot.— This remarkable Petition runs thus :

To the Honourable the HOUSE of COMMONS in Parliament assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of many CIVILLY-DISPOSED WOMEN, inhabiting in the Cities of London, Westminster, the Suburbs, and Parts adjacent,

Sheweth,

A Petition from the Women of London, &c. for Peace.

THAT your poor Petitioners, though of the weaker Sex, do too sensibly perceive the ensuing Desolation of this Kingdom, unless, by some timely Means, your Honours provide for the speedy Recovery thereof. Your Honours are the Physicians that can, by God's special and miraculous Blessing, (which we humbly implore) restore this languishing Nation, and our bleeding Sister the Kingdom of Ireland, which hath now almost breathed her last Gasps.

We need not dictate to your Eagle-eyed Judgments the Way; our only Desire is, That God's Glory in the true Reformed Protestant Religion may be preserved; the just Prerogatives and Privileges of King and Parliament maintained; the true Liberties and Properties of the Subject, according to the known Laws of the Land, restored; and all honourable Ways and Means for a speedy Peace endeavoured.

May it therefore please your Honours, that some speedy Course may be taken for the Settlement of the true Reformed Protestant Religion for the Glory of God, and the Renovation of Trade for the Benefit of the Subject, they being the Soul and Body of the Kingdom.

And your Petitioners, with many Millions of afflicted Souls, groaning under the Burden of these Times of Distress, shall (as bound) pray, &c.

We

We have before taken Notice of a Petition from An. 19. Car. I.
the Female Sex at the Beginning of the Troubles,
and Mr. *Pymme*'s Speech to them at that Time ^b:
But this Gentleman seems now to have been great-
ly out of the Ladies Favour, by what follows in
Mr. *Rushworth*'s Account of this Matter: He tells
us, ' That this Petition was brought up by 2 or
3000 Women, generally of the meanest Sort,
(whom Lord *Clarendon* calls a great Multitude of
the Wives of substantial Citizens) with white Silk
Ribbons in their Hats; and was, by some of their
Number, presented to the House of Commons,
who received and read the same; and sent out Sir
John Hippesley and two or three Members more to
return them an Answer, ' That the House were no
' way Enemies to Peace, and that they did not
' doubt, in a short Time, to answer the Ends of
' their Petition; and desired them to return to their
' Habitations ^c. ' But the Women, not satisfied,
remained thereabouts, and, by Noon, were en-
creased to 5000 at the least; and some Men of
the Rabble, in Women's Cloaths, mixed them-
selves amongst them, and instigated them to go
up to the Commons' Door, and cry, *Peace, Peace*;
which they did accordingly, thrusting to the Door
of the House at the Upper Stairs-Head. The
Trained Band advised them to come down, and
first pulled them; and afterwards, to fright them,
shot Powder: But they cried out, *Nothing but
Powder*; and some of them in the Yard having
Brick Bats, threw them a-pace at the Trained
Band, who then shot Bullets. Yet the Women,
not daunted, cried out the louder at the Door of
the House of Commons, *Give us those Traitors that
are against Peace, that we may tear them to Pieces:
Give us that Dog Pymme, &c.*'

1643.
August.

A a 2

Upon

^b In our Tenth Volume, p. 271, *et seq.*

^c The Petition itself is not entered in the *Journals*: But those Au-
thorities mention the Presentment and Reading of it; and that Sir
Robert Harley, Sir *John Corbet*, Sir *John Hippesley*, Mr. *Buller*, Mr.
Noble, and Sir *Edward Bainton*, were appointed to give the Petitioners
an Answer; which was to the above Effect.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

August.

Upon the whole, it appears to have been with some Difficulty, and not without some Bloodshed also, that this Mob of Female Petitioners was silenced and dispersed.

Ordinance for
pressing of Sol-
diers.

August 10. The Commons sent up an Ordinance for pressing Soldiers, throughout the Kingdom; to which the Lords agreed. It had this remarkable Preamble :

‘ Forasmuch as the true Protestant Religion, the
‘ Laws and Liberties of the Subject and the Parlia-
‘ ment, are in Danger to be subverted ; Idolatry
‘ and Tyranny like to be introduced by Force and
‘ Power of several Armies, raised by Pretence of
‘ the King’s Authority, consisting of Papists and
‘ other dangerous and ill-affected Persons of this
‘ Kingdom, *Irish* Rebels, Popish Soldiers, and
‘ others of foreign Dominions and Nations, not be-
‘ ing under the King’s Obedience, for the Ruin and
‘ Destruction of this Kingdom, unless the same be
‘ prevented by a considerable Power of Forces, to be
‘ suddenly raised by both Houses of Parliament, be-
‘ ing, with God’s Blessing and Assistance, the most
‘ probable Way to preserve the Kingdom, our Re-
‘ ligion and Liberty.

‘ Be it therefore ordained, &c.’

August 16. A Passage which happened, as this Day, in the House of Commons, is expunged in their *Journals*, as appears in the Margin, by an Order made *January 6, 1645* ; by which Means this Affair is rendered so dark and obscure, that nothing can be made of it in that Authority. We are obliged to Mr. *Whitlocke* for an Explanation, who tells us, ‘ That one Mr. *Saltmarsh*, a Minister, had published a Book, in which were these bold Positions :

1. ‘ That all Means should be used to keep the King and his People from a sudden Union.

2. ‘ To cherish the War, under the Notion of Popery, as the surest Means to engage the People.

3. ‘ If

3. ' If the King would not grant their Demands, then to rout him out and the Royal Line, and to collate the Crown upon somebody else.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
August.

' This strange Doctrine gave Offence, says our Author, to sober Men; and Saltmarsh was sent for and examined, before the Commons, about it; when some Exceptions being taken against it, Mr. Henry Martin said, *That he saw no Reason to condemn Mr. Saltmarsh; and that it was better one Family should be destroyed than many.* Sir Nevile Poole moved, *That Mr. Martin should explain, What one Family he meant;* who boldly answered, *The King and his Children.* Upon this some Members urged the Height and Danger of these Words, and taxed him with his lewd Life; and, many speaking very sharply against him, he was committed to the Tower: But, shortly after, released, and re-admitted to his Seat in Parliament c.'

Mr. Martin committed to the Tower for reviling the King and Royal Family.

The rest of the Affairs in both Houses, for several Days, turned chiefly on Ways and Means to raise more Money and Men, in order to recruit and pay their Armies; the Lord-General Essex complaining again very heavily for Want of both. He likewise added, *That his Army was much visited with Sicknes;* and that though he was ready to march, yet he did not care to adventure the Commonwealth of *England* by a Battle, in so weak a Condition, &c. Upon which Advice the Parliament thought fit to dispatch a Committee of both Houses to him, on the nineteenth of this Month, to learn particularly his Wants, that they might be speedily redressed. This Committee returning, reported, *That they had been with the General, and they had brought him to agree to the following Propositions:*

The Earl of Essex requires farther Supplies.

First, ' That his Excellency intends to begin his March in three Days Time; and that about

A a 3

' Twelve

c Upon his Petition to the House, presented the second of September following, he was ordered to be forthwith discharged, without paying any Fees for his Imprisonment.

Commons' Journals.

374 The Parliamentary History

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

August.

' Twelve o'Clock, on that Day, he promises to draw his Army up to their Rendezvous on *Hounslow-Heath*; whither he desires the Parliament to send Commissioners to be present and view the Troops.

' Next, He desired the City would send to him what Strength they could possibly spare, as had been proposed to him by the Parliament. He approved of the Motion that a Committee of both Houses might constantly attend the Army.

' And, lastly, The General expected such Supplies of Money as might enable him to proceed upon his March.'

August 21. The Queen of *Bohemia* had hitherto lived under an unhappy Planet; and, though the Daughter of one King, Wife to another, and Sister to a third, was now reduced almost to beg her Bread of the Parliament; for, this Day, a supplicating Letter from her, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read in these Words:

My Lord,

The Queen of *Bohemia's* second Letter, desiring some Allowance from Parliament.

SINCE my last to you, whereby I craved the Assistance of the most Honourable House of Peers (whereof you are Speaker) towards the Relief of my present Necessities, I daily find my Burden growing heavier the longer their Help is deferred; which maketh me trouble you once again by this Bearer, Cromwell my Servant, whom I send expressly over about this Business; desiring you to give him such Credit and Access as my Occasions may therein require. Hereby I entreat you to represent my earnest Request to the most Honourable House, if they would be pleased to grant me their favourable Concurrence, in this Time of my Need; whereby I may be freed both from my pressing Wants, and from the Mischiefs which thereupon ensue. I have no Cause to doubt but that the Lords, understanding the Extremity of my Case, will take an honourable Sense thereof; and hasten, on their Parts, the Means

Means of my Supply; whereof I beseech you to assure them all that I shall be ever sensible, and remain

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

August.

Your most affectionate Friend,

Haghe, June 29,
1643

ELIZABETH.

The Lords ordered, That this Letter be communicated to the Commons, and to desire them to consider how the Queen might be supplied with the Allowance formerly given her from this Kingdom, as soon as they could find Means to do it. But very little was done in this Business.

Many Ordinances now croud the *Journals* of the Lords, all concerning Men and Money to support this unnatural War; but none of them of Consequence enough for this History. The King, at this Time, as has been said, was every where victorious, and his own Army so strong, that the Earl of *Essex* durst not cope with him. In this Situation, the King and his Counsellors are greatly blamed, by Historians, for not marching directly for *London*, where he must have either taken the Place, or forced the Earl to a Battle; either of which would, in all Probability, have ended the War: For, at this Time, says *Whitlocke*, 'The Parliament had no considerable Body of an Army together, and their Party in some Divisions; but, by the Time of the King's March and Stay at *Gloucester*, they had recruited their Army, provided Money, and pieced up their Discontents amongst themselves ^{d.}' But such was the Unhappiness of the Prince's Fate, that, after the Surrender of *Bristol* to his Forces, he turned aside; and, in Person, with his whole Army, laid Siege to *Gloucester*. This was on the 10th of *August*, and the Place holding out resolutely, it took the King much more Time than he thought of, and proved fruitless in the Event.

The Siege of
Gloucester.

Mr.

376 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

August.

Mr. *Rushworth* hath left us a Journal of this famous Siege; and other Historians, of these Times, are very particular in their Accounts of it. To them, therefore, we refer, and shall only take Notice, that the Parliament thought it a Place of such Importance, as occasioned both Houses to make an Ordinance, on the 23d of this Month, to authorize the Committee for the Militia of the City of *London*, to order six Regiments of Foot, consisting of 8000 Men, and 1500 Horse, to march immediately for its Relief.

August 27. An Ordinance for removing superstitious Images, Crucifixes, Altars of Stone, &c. passed the Lords, which had been formerly sent up by the Other House: It ran in these Words, and with which we shall conclude the Affairs of this Month.

Ordinance for
removing
Images, Altars,
&c. out of
Churches.

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, taking into their serious Consideration how well pleasing it is to God, and conducive to the blessed Reformation in his Worship, so much desired by both Houses of Parliament, that all the Monuments of Superstition or Idolatry should be removed and demolished, do ordain, That in all and every the Churches and Chapels, as well Cathedral and Collegiate as other Churches and Chapels, and other usual Places of public Prayer, authorized by Law within this Realm of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, all Altars and Tables of Stone shall, before the first Day of *November*, 1643, be utterly taken away and demolished: And also all Communion-Tables removed from the East End of every such Church, Chapel, or Place of public Prayer, and Chancel of the same; and shall be placed in some other fit and convenient Place or Places of the Body of the said Church, Chapel, or other such Place of public Prayer, or of the Body of the Chancel of every such Church, Chapel, or other such Place of public Prayer: And that all Rails

what-

whatsoever, which have been erected near to, An. 19. Car. I.
before, or about any Altar or Communion-Table
in any of the said Churches or Chapels, or
other such Place of public Prayer as aforesaid,
shall, before the said Day, be likewise taken
away; and the Chancel Ground of every such
Church or Chapel, or other Place of public
Prayer which hath been, within twenty Years
last past, raised for any Altar or Communion-
Table to stand upon, shall, before the said Day,
be laid down, and levelled as the same was be-
fore the said twenty Years last past: And that
all Tapers, Candlesticks, and Basons, shall, be-
fore the said Day, be removed and taken away
from the Communion-Table in every such Church,
Chapel, or other Place of public Prayer; and
neither the same, nor any such like, shall be used
about the same at any Time after the said Day:
And that all Crucifixes, Crosses, and all Images
and Pictures of any one or more Persons of the
Trinity, or of the Virgin *Mary*; and all other
Images and Pictures of Saints, or superstitious
Inscriptions in, or upon, all and every the said
Churches or Chapels, or other Places of public
Prayer, Church-Yards, or other Places to any
the said Churches and Chapels, or other Places
of public Prayer, belonging, or in any other open
Place, shall, before the said first Day of *November*,
be taken away and defaced; and none of the like
hereafter permitted in any such Church or Chapel,
or other Places as aforesaid.

1643

August.

And be it further ordained, That all and every
such Removal of the said Altars, Tables of Stone,
Communion-Tables, Tapers, Candlesticks, and
Basons, Crucifixes and Crosses, Images and Pic-
tures as aforesaid, taking away of the said Rails,
levelling the said Grounds, shall be done and
performed; and the Walls, Windows, Grounds,
and other Places which shall be broken, impair-
ed, or altered by any the Means aforesaid, shall
be made up and repaired in good and sufficient
Manner, in all and every of the said Parish Churches
or

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

August.

or Chapels, or usual Places of public Prayer
 belonging to any Parish, by the Church-Warden
 or Church-Wardens of every such Parish for the
 Time being respectively; and in any Cathedral
 or Collegiate Church or Chapel, by the Dean
 or Sub-Dean, or other chief Officer of every such
 Church or Chapel for the Time being; and in
 the Universities, by the several Heads and Go-
 vernors of every College or Hall respectively; and
 in the several Inns of Court, by the Benchers
 and Readers of every of the same respectively,
 at the Cost and Charges of all and every such Per-
 son or Persons, Body Politic or Corporate, or
 Parishioners of every Parish respectively, to whom
 the Charge of the Repair of any such Church,
 Chapel, Chancel, or Place of public Prayer, doth
 or shall belong.

And in case Default be made in any of the Pre-
 mises, by any of the Person or Persons thereunto
 appointed by this Ordinance, from and after the
 said first Day of *November*, 1643, that then every
 such Person or Persons, so making Default, shall,
 for every such Neglect or Default by the Space of
 twenty Days, forfeit and lose forty Shillings to the
 Use of the Poor of the said Parish wherein such
 Default shall be made; or if it be out of any Pa-
 rish, then to the Use of the Poor of such Parish
 whose Church is, or shall be, nearest to the Church
 or Chapel, or other Place of public Prayer, where
 such Default shall be made; and if Default shall
 be made after the first Day of *December*, 1643, then
 any one Justice of the Peace of the County, City,
 or Town, where such Default shall be made, up-
 on Information thereof to him to be given, shall
 cause or procure the Premises to be performed, ac-
 cording to the Tenor of this Ordinance, at the
 Cost and Charges of such Person or Persons, Bo-
 dies Politic or Corporate, or Inhabitants in every
 Parish, who are appointed by this Ordinance to
 bear the same.

Provided that this Ordinance, or any thing
 therein contained, shall not extend to any Image,
 Pic.

Picture, or Coat of Arms in Glass, Stone, or otherwise, in any Church, Chapel, Church-Yard, or Place of public Prayer as aforesaid, set up or graven only for a Monument of any King, Prince, or Nobleman, or other dead Person, which hath not been commonly reputed or taken for a Saint : But that all such Images, Pictures, and Coats of Arms, may stand and continue in like Manner and Form, as if this Ordinance had never been made ^d.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

September.

Military Orders of various Kinds continue to be made by both Houses, at the Beginning of the Month of *September* ; nor is there any Thing else, material enough for our Purpose, till the seventh of this Month : When Sir *John Hotbom* was brought to the Bar of the House of Commons, by Order, before he took his Trial ; and being acquainted by the Speaker, That he had Liberty to speak to the House if he desired it, he said, He had some Petitions to present to them ; which was, That his Lady might come up with her Coach and Horses, Children, Servants, and Evidences ; and some Goods and Plate he had left, for their Maintenance. He desired also, that he might continue where he was till his Trial : He protested his own Innocency, and did not doubt, when he knew his Charge, but to make it appear as clear as the Sun. Being demanded, Whether he knew of any Members of that House, or of the Lords, that had conveyed any Treasure beyond Seas ? He answered, He knew of none, if he were to die that Instant. And being again asked, Whether he knew that Mr. *Pymme* had conveyed any Treasure in like Manner ? With some Astonishment he asked, If that Question was asked him in Earnest ? Protested he knew nothing of it, and that he had never reported any such Thing.

Sir *John Hotbom*
and his Son examined by the
Commons.

Then the Examination taken by the Committee, concerning the Correspondence he held with Lord

Digby,

^d This Proviso seems to have been founded upon the Statute of 4 Edward VI. Cap. 12. for defacing of Images ; which see in our Third Volume, p. 252.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

September.

Digby, was read to him. And, being demanded by the Speaker, Whether it was true or not which he had there expressed? He answered, It was true; only in that concerning Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, and *Keyes*, his Son's Servant, were some Mistakes: For when *Keyes* came to him at *Hull*, he, wondering to see him, said, *How the Devil camest thou hither?*—*How couldst thou come through the Queen's Army?* and that was all he said to him. Further, he said, the Lord *Digby* did send a Declaration to him, to publish to the World his Reasons for his turning to his Allegiance to the King; but he tore it in Pieces, and told him, That he could not serve the King, till he had sent just Propositions to the Parliament. And being pressed by the Committee to answer to some farther Questions about Lord *Digby*, he said, He was not bound to accuse himself^e; made no farther Answer, and confessed that he did refuse to sign this Examination. After this the Commons proceeded to expell Sir *John* their House, and to commit him close Prisoner to the Tower.

Sept. 8. The Son of this unfortunate Father was likewise brought to the same Bar, the Serjeant standing with his Mace within it, when the Speaker told him, If he had any Thing to say the House would hear him. Upon which he made a long Narration of the whole Carriage of Affairs, from the first Time he took Possession of *Hull*, to that of his Commitment; acknowledging he had committed many Errors and Offences, but nothing to betray the Trust reposed in him by the Parliament. Being asked, as his Father had been before, If he could tell what Monies, Treasure, or other Goods, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pymme*, or any other Member of either House, had transported beyond Sea?

He

^e Lord *Clarendon* gives a very particular Narrative of what passed between Lord *Digby* and Sir *John Hotbam*, in relation to a Proposal made by the former for the Surrender of *Hull* to the King, when he was taken Prisoner in Disguise, on board the Ship *Providence*.

Clarendon, Vol. II. p. 705.

We took some Notice of this Matter in our Eleventh Volume, p. 356: But the Whole is too long for our Purpose.

He answered, He knew of none, nor ever heard of any that knew any such Thing.—Notwithstanding this the Commons expelled Captain *Hotham*, and remanded him to the same Custody he was before; but ordered that a Warrant should be made to bring up both their Ladies, Children, Servants, &c. as his Father had desired.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
September.

They are expelled the House and recommitte^d to Prison.

In the Course of these Examinations, the Reader may observe that Mr. *Pymme* is mentioned, along with others, as charged with some indirect Practices. To do Justice to the Memory of that great Man, on the same Day Sir *Edward Bainton*, a Member of the House of Commons, was sent for, charged with saying, That the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pymme* had betrayed the West and North. And being demanded, Whether he had spoke those Words charged upon him? Answered, He did not speak them as they were there laid down. Being then demanded, What he had spoken to that Purpose? Answered, That he had learned, since he had sat here, that he ought not to speak any Thing here that reflected to the Prejudice of another Member; and therefore desired to be excused, unless he were enjoined and commanded. Whereupon he was enjoined to speak the whole Truth: And then he said, That he did not say that Mr. *Pymme* had betrayed the West, but that he had betrayed his County; which he did, by being a Means of detaining him in Prison, who only was able to maintain and preserve that County, till the said County was quite lost, notwithstanding many Orders made for his bringing up^f: As for betraying the North, he knew nothing more of that than he had heard in the House, which sounded bad enough, viz. That the Offer of the Lord *Savile* and Sir *William*

A Charge against Mr. *Pymme* for indirect Practices,

^f This Passage runs thus in the *Commons' Journals*:—Probably *Wiltshire* is intended, where Sir *Edward Bainton* was a Deputy-Lieutenant of the Militia; and had been so active in the Parliament's Service as to be particularly mentioned in the King's Declaration, on Occasion of the Parliament's Ordinances for laying an Assessment; which we have already given in this Volume, p. 65.

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

September.

William Savile, to deliver up, to the Parliament's Forces, *York* and that whole County, if they might not be prejudiced in their Persons and Estates, was prevented. Adding, That he had heard it said and affirmed, with solemn and deep Oaths and Protestations, That the Lord *Cottington* had treated with his Majesty for the Pardon of the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pymme*; and that if they had had the Preferments they expected, we had not been brought to the Condition we now are in. Being demanded from whom he heard this, answered, It was from the Lord *Grandison's* Brother, Lieutenant-Colonel *Brett*, and Serjeant-Major *Juques*, all Officers in the King's Army, and Prisoners with him at *Gloucester*.

Which the Commons vote to be false and scandalous.

Mr. *Pymme*, in Answer to this Charge, protested solemnly, That he never had Intercourse with the Lord *Cottington*, by one Means or other, since the Difference between the King and Parliament: That he never received but two Messages from him since this Parliament began; the one was by Sir *Arthur Ingram*, long before he died; the other by Sir *Benjamin Rudyard*.—Upon the whole, the Commons voted the Charge laid upon Mr. *Pymme* by Sir *Edward Bainton*, to be false and scandalous; and that the said Sir *Edward* should be forthwith sent to the Tower, there to remain a Prisoner during the Pleasure of the House. But, soon after, the Question being put, Whether Sir *Edward Bainton* should be now called to the Bar, and from thence sent to the Tower, the House divided into 20 Yeas and 40 Noes; so it passed in the Negative.—Howsoever this last Charge against Mr. *Pymme* may be true or false, Mr. *Whitlocke* has insinuated, in his Account of the Beginning of these Troubles, 'That the Earl of *Strafford's* Prosecution might have been stopped, and the King's Enemies have become his Friends, if some particular Persons had been gratified in their Expectations and Desires; amongst whom he names Mr. *Pymme* to have been designed for Chancellor of the Exchequer.

quer 2. But it is very strange that neither this An. 19. Car. I.
Memorialist, nor Mr. *Rushworth*, nor even Lord 1643.
Clarendon himself, make any Mention of this Ac-
cusation. September.

Sept. 9. The Reader must remember, that, on the famous Affair of Ship-Money, most of the Judges who had given the King their Opinions for the Legality of it, were committed, some to the Tower, others elsewhere. Amongst these, Sir *Robert Berkeley*, one of the Justices of the King's-Bench, had been long a Prisoner in the Tower, and his Trial put off *de Die in Diem*, for many Months together, 'till this Day; when it came on peremptorily before the House of Lords; a Committee of the Commons being at the Bar to manage the Evidence against him, concerning so much of the Charge as respected Ship-Money only, and the Opinions of the Judges thereupon.

The Proceedings
against Judge
Berkeley for his
Opinion, in rela-
tion to Ship-
Money, revived.

Then, by the Direction of the House of Lords, the Gentleman-Usher of the Black-Rod brought Mr. Justice *Berkeley* to the Bar; where, after he had kneeled as a Delinquent, and being commanded by the Speaker to stand up, the Committee proceeded in the Charge: But first acquainted the Lords, That whereas the Commons had impeached Mr. Justice *Berkeley*, and brought up divers Articles against him, they intended to proceed only upon the Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth, which concerned Ship-Money ^h.

Then the Lords commanded the said Articles to be read, viz.

IV. That the said Sir *Robert Berkeley*, then being
'one of the Justices of the Court of King's Bench,
'and having taken an Oath for the due Administra-
'tion of Justice, according to the Laws of this
Realm,

^g *Memorials*, p. 39.

^h In the Proceedings of July 6, 1641, we took Notice of Articles of Impeachment being exhibited against Sir *Robert Berkeley* and other Judges. These we passed over with a Reference to *Rushworth*, *Nelson*, and the State Trials: But the Proceedings, and Sentence in Consequence of this Impeachment, are omitted in all those Collections.

An. 29. Car. I.

1643.

September.

‘ Realm, to his Majesty’s liege People, did, on the
 ‘ last Day of November, 1635, subscribe an Opinion,
 ‘ in hæc Verba :

I am of Opinion that, where the Benefit doth more particularly redound to the Good of the Ports, or maritime Parts, as in the Case of Piracy or Depredations upon the Seas, there the Charge hath been, and may be, lawfully imposed upon them according to Precedents of former Times : So where the Safety and Good of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, of which his Majesty is the only Judge, there the Charge of the Defence ought to be borne by all the Realm in general. This I hold agreeable both to Law and Reason.

V. ‘ That the said Sir Robert Berkeley, being one
 ‘ of the Justices of the Court of King’s-Bench, and
 ‘ duly sworn as aforesaid, did, in February 1636,
 ‘ subscribe an extrajudicial Opinion in an Answer
 ‘ to Questions in a Letter from his Majesty ; which
 ‘ was to this Effect :

CHARLES R.

‘ **W**HEN the Good and Safety of the King-
 ‘ dom in general is concerned, and the
 ‘ whole Kingdom in Danger, whether may not
 ‘ the King, by Writ under the Great Seal of Eng-
 ‘ land, command all the Subjects of this Kingdom,
 ‘ at their Charge, to provide and furnish such Num-
 ‘ ber of Ships with Men, Victuals, and Ammu-
 ‘ nition, and for such Time as he shall think fit,
 ‘ for the Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom
 ‘ from such Danger and Peril ; and, by Law, com-
 ‘ pell the doing thereof in case of Refusal or Refrac-
 ‘ toriness ; and whether, in such Case, is not the
 ‘ King the sole Judge both of the Danger, and how,
 ‘ and when, the same is to be prevented and avoid-
 ‘ ed ?’

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

***W**E have, according to your Majesty’s Command,
 severally, every Man by himself, and all of us
 together, taken into serious Consideration the Case and*
 Que-

Question signed by your Majesty, and inclosed in your Royal Letter; and are of Opinion, That when the Good and Safety of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, your Majesty may, by Writ under the Great Seal of England, command all the Subjects of this your Kingdom, at their Charge, to provide and furnish such Number of Ships, with Men, Victuals, and Munition, and for such Time as your Majesty shall think fit, for the Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom from such Danger and Peril; and that, by Law, your Majesty may compell the doing thereof in case of Refusal or Refractoriness: And we are also of Opinion, That, in such Case, your Majesty is the sole Judge both of the Danger, and when and how the same is to be prevented and avoided.

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
September,

JOHN BRAMSTON,	FRANCIS CRAWLEY,
JOHN FINCH,	JOHN DENHAM,
HUM. DAVENPORT,	WILLIAM JONES,
RICHARD HUTTON,	THOMAS TREVOR,
GEORGE CROOKE,	ROBERT BERKELEY,
GEORGE VERNON,	RICHARD WESTON.

VI. ' That the said *Robert Berkeley*, then being
' one of the Justices of the Court of King's Bench,
' and duly sworn as aforesaid, did [on the 10th of
' February, 13^o Car. 1637] deliver his Opinion in
' the Exchequer-Chamber against *John Hampden*,
' Esq; in the Case of Ship-Money, That he the
' said *John Hampden*, upon the Matter and Sub-
' stance of the Case, was chargeable with the Mo-
' ney then in Question: A Copy of which Pro-
' ceedings and Judgment the Commons, in this
' present Parliament, have delivered to your Lord-
' ships.'

Then Mr. *Maynard*, one of the Committee, de-
sired that Mr. Justice *Berkeley* might have this Que-
stion put to him, Whether he did give his Opinion,
and subscribe the said Opinion?

Mr. Justice *Berkeley* desired Leave of the House,
that he might have Liberty first to make a Protestation

386 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
September.

tion before he speaks any Thing of the Matter. The Lords gave him Leave to do it; and then he said, He cannot but take Notice of the supreme and unquestionable Votes of both Houses of Parliament concerning the Judgment against Ship-Money, to which Votes he humbly submits; and against which he will not speak one Syllable.

Then he confessed that about *Hilary Term*, 11^o *Caroli*, the Lord Chief Justice *Finch* came to his Chamber at *Serjeants-Inn*, and told him he had a Case to deliver to him from the King, and he was to deliver his Opinion in it. He confessed he read and considered of it, and he did subscribe to the Opinion now read, and he subscribed to it as his Opinion, according as he then thought the Law to be.

Next he was asked, Whether the rest of the Judges did not subscribe the same Opinion as it is charged?

He answered, That on the sixth of *February* the Lord Chief Justice *Brampton* sent to all the Judges to meet at *Serjeants-Inn*; and there acquainted them, that he had received a Letter from the King and a Case inclosed, which he was to communicate as from him, and that his Majesty required them to subscribe their Opinions; that the said Case and Letter was read, being the very same as in the Charge; and that, upon Consideration, it was carried by the Major Part; and all the Judges subscrib'd the same as their Opinion.

Then being asked, Whether he delivered his Opinion, in the Judgment, in Mr. *Hampden's* Case, as 'tis charged in the Impeachment, which was for levying of Money? He confessed, That, by Mr. *Hampden's* Plea of Demurrer, he conceived that Mr. *Hampden* had confessed the Necessity that *Salus Reipublicæ periclitabatur*: And he gave Judgment therein as he conceived then the Law to be; but that he is now enlightened by the Votes of both Houses of Parliament since made; and that he did not do any Thing out of Malice, but out of Error of Opinion.

Mr.

Mr. Maynard and the rest of the Committee An. 19. Car. I.
concluded with a short Reply, by Way of Aggrava- 1643.
tion, That the Judgment was for Money, though
the Opinion was not: That the Judgment in Mr. September.
Hampden's Case was extrajudicial, and the Judges
had no Cognizance of it; but they ought to have
refused any Judgment in it: That being so great a
Concernment to the Commonwealth, it was a Crime
done to the whole Commonwealth, contrary to the
Liberty of the Subject, destructive to the Privileges
of Parliament, and to the Petition of Right, and the
Laws of this Kingdom.

The Committee added, That this Judgment was
contrary to his Oath as a Judge, being sworn to
do equal Right, and to give Counsel between the
King and the Subject, according to Law, as 18 *Ed-*
ward III. Parliament-Roll: That this Crime was
more than an Error of Judgment, though Judges
have been questioned and judged in Parliament not
only for false Judgment, but also for Error of Opi-
nion.

And concluded with a Desire, That the Matter
of Fact being confessed, their Lordships would please
to take the whole into Consideration, and inflict
such exemplary Punishment as their Lordships, in
their great Wisdom, should think fit.

Sept. 12. The Lords proceeded to Sentence
against Sir Robert Berkeley; and having previously
found him guilty of the Charge in the three fore-
going Articles against him, that High Court did
award and adjudge,

I. That the said Sir Robert Berkeley, Knt. shall The Lords pro-
be fined in the Sum of 20,000 l. to be paid in at nounce Sentence
Guildhall, London, to be disposed of by the Autho- against him.
rity of both Houses of Parliament, for the Safety of
the Kingdom. And if it shall not be paid and satis-
fied within six Weeks next after the Date of this
Judgment, other Course shall be taken for levying the
same.

II. That he be hereby discharged from being a
Judge in the Court of King's Bench; made incapable
of

An. 19. Car. I. of any Honour, or to hold any Place or Office in the State or Commonwealth for the future.

1643.

September.

III. That he shall be imprisoned in the Tower of London, during the Pleasure of this House ^a.

At this Time it was that the Scots sent over Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland, with some Propositions to be presented to the English Parliament. These Commissioners were some Noblemen and others, called Ruling Elders, with Ministers, &c. who delivered their Credentials to a Committee of both Houses appointed for that Purpose. There had been a Declaration of Parliament, sent some Time before into Scotland, concerning Religious Matters, to which these Commissioners brought the following Answer:

The ANSWER of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, to the DECLARATION of the Honourable Houses of Parliament in England.

The Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland propose their Solemn League and Covenant to the Parliament of England.

THE General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, having received a Declaration from the Honourable Houses of the Parliament of England, by their Commissioners now residing here, hath thought good to make known unto the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That all the Members of this Assembly, and others well-affected here, do, with most Thankfulness, take special Notice of the Expressions which they have been pleased to make in the forementioned Declaration; not only concerning their Approbation of the Desires and Endeavours of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland for the Reformation of the Church of England, and the Union of both Churches in Religion and Church Government; but also concerning the Resolution of both Houses fully to concur with them in those

^a Lord Clarendon observes, That there were only ten Peers present at the passing of this Sentence: And that Sir Robert Berkeley was abated one Half of the Fine, and had his Liberty, upon present Payment of the other to the Persons appointed by the Parliament to receive it.—This last Circumstance is confirmed by Mr. Whitlocke, as before observed in our Tenth Volume, p. 12.

‘ pious Intentions. With the same Thankfulness and
 ‘ due Reverence they acknowledge the high Re-
 ‘ spects expressed towards them by both Houses, in
 ‘ directing unto them their Commissioners assisted
 ‘ by two Reverend Divines; and in desiring some of
 ‘ the Godly and Learned of this Church to be sent
 ‘ unto the Assembly sitting there.

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

September.

‘ The Assembly doth bless the Lord, who hath
 ‘ not only inspired the Houses of Parliament with
 ‘ Desires and Resolutions of the Reformation of Re-
 ‘ ligion, but hath advanced, by several Steps and
 ‘ Degrees, that blessed Work; by which, as they
 ‘ shall most approve themselves to the Reformed
 ‘ Churches and to their Brethren abroad, so shall
 ‘ they most powerfully draw down from Heaven the
 ‘ Blessing of Prosperity and Peace upon *England*. And
 ‘ as it is the earnest Wish of their Brethren here,
 ‘ that the true State and Ground of the present Dif-
 ‘ ferences and Controversies in *England* may be more
 ‘ and more cleared concerning Religion; and that
 ‘ both Houses may incessantly prosecute that good
 ‘ Work first and above all other Matters, *giving no*
 ‘ *Sleep nor Slumber to their Eye-lids, untill they find*
 ‘ *out a Place for the Lord, an Habitation for the*
 ‘ *mighty God of Jacob*, whose Favour alone can
 ‘ make their Mountain strong, and whose Presence,
 ‘ in his own Ordinances, shall be their Glory in the
 ‘ Midst of them: So it is our Confidence that the
 ‘ begun Reformation is of God, and not of Man;
 ‘ that it shall increase, and not decrease, thro’ his
 ‘ Help, to whom nothing is too hard; who can
 ‘ make Mountains Valleys, crooked Things streight;
 ‘ and rough Ways smooth; and shall lead along,
 ‘ and make perfect, this most wonderful Work,
 ‘ which shall be remembered to his Glory, in the
 ‘ Church, throughout all Generations.

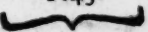
‘ And lest, through any Defect upon the General
 ‘ Assembly’s Part, the Work of Reformation, which
 ‘ hitherto, to the great Grief of all the Godly, hath
 ‘ moved so slowly, should be any more retarded or
 ‘ interrupted, they have, according to the renewed

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

September.

Desires of both Houses of Parliament, and their own former Promises, nominated and elected Mr. *Alexander Henderson*, Mr. *Robert Douglas*, Mr. *Samuel Rutherford*, Mr. *Robert Bailey*, and Mr. *George Gillespie*, Ministers of God's Word; *John Earl of Cassels*, *John Lord Maitland*, Sir *Archibald Johnston* of *Warriston*, Ruling-Elders, (all of them Men much approved here) with Commission and Power to them, or any three of them, whereof two shall be Ministers, to repair unto the Assembly of Divines, and others of the Church of *England*, now sitting at *Westminster*, to propound, consult, treat, and conclude with them, and with any Commissioners deputed by the Houses of Parliament, if it shall seem good to the Honourable Houses, in their Wisdom, to depute any for that End, in all such Things as may conduce to the utter Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Heresy, Schism, Superstition, and Idolatry; and for the settling of the so-much-desired Union of this whole Island in one Form of Church-Government, one Confession of Faith, one Common Catechism, and one Directory for the Worship of God, according to the Instructions which they have received, or shall receive, from the Commissioners of the General Assembly appointed to meet at *Edinburgh*, from Time to Time, with the Assembly's Power to that End. And as the General Assembly doth most gladly and affectionately receive, and fully trust, the Commissioners and Divines sent hither; so do they hereby commend the aforementioned Commissioners not only to the like Affection and Trust of the Assembly there, but also to the Favour and Protection of both Houses of Parliament.

And for the further Satisfaction and Encouragement of their Brethren of *England*, the whole Assembly, in their own Name, and in the Name of all the particular Churches in this Kingdom whom they represent, do hereby declare, That, from their Zeal to the Glory of God and Propagation of the Gospel, from their Affection to the Happiness

piness of their Native King and of the Kingdom An. 19. Car. 1.
 of *England*, and from the Sense of their own In- 1643.
 terest in the common Dangers of Religion, Peace, 
 and Liberty, they are most willing and ready to September.
 be united and associated with their Brethren in a
 nearer League and Solemn Covenant, for the
 Maintenance of the truly Reformed Protestant
 Religion, against Popery and Prelacy, and against
 all Popish and Prelatical Corruptions in Doctrine,
 Discipline, Worship, or Church-Government; and
 for the settling and holding fast of Unity and
 Uniformity of Religion, betwixt the Churches of
 this Island and with the best Reformed Churches
 beyond the Sea; which Union and Covenant shall,
 by God's Assistance, be seconded by your co-oper-
 ating with their Brethren in the Use of the best and
 most effectual Means that may serve for so good
 Ends: For the more speedy effecting whereof,
 to the Comfort and Enlargement of their distressed
 Brethren, whose Hope deferred might make their
 Hearts to faint, the whole Assembly, with great
 Unanimity of Judgment, and Expressions of much
 Affection, have approved, for their Part, such a
 Draught and Form of a mutual League and Cove-
 nant betwixt the Kingdoms, as was the Result of
 the joint Debates and Consultations of the Com-
 missioners from both Houses of Parliament, assist-
 ed by the two Reverend Divines and the Com-
 missioners deputed from the Convention of the
 Estates of this Kingdom, and from the General
 Assembly; expecting and wishing the like Appro-
 bation thereof by the Right Honourable the Lords
 and Commons in Parliament, and by the Reverend
 Assembly there, that thereafter it may be solemnly
 sworn and subscribed by both Kingdoms; as the
 surest and strictest Obligation to make both stand
 and fall together, in the Cause of Religion and
 Liberty.

And as the States of this Kingdom have often pro-
 fessed, in their former Declarations, the Integri-
 ty of their Intentions against the common Ene-
 mies

392 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

September.

mies of Religion and Liberty in both Kingdoms, and their great Affections to their Brethren of *England*, by reason of so many and so near Relations; so doubtless, in this Time of Need, they will not fail to give real Proof of what before they professed: *A Friend loveth at all Times, and a Brother is born for Adversity.* Neither shall the Assembly, nor their Commissioners, be wanting in exhorting all others to their Duty, or in concurring, so far as belongeth to their Place and Vocation, with the States now convened, in any lawful and possible Course which may most conduce to the Good of Religion and Reformation, the Honour and Happiness of the King's Majesty, the Deliverance of their Brethren of *England* from their present calamitous Condition, and to the perpetuating a firm and happy Peace betwixt the Kingdoms.

Both Houses ordered this Answer to be sent to the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*.

An Order against
plundering the
King's Palaces.

Sept. 13. Information being given to the Lords, That some Rooms in *Somerſet-Houſe* were broke open, and some Goods taken away, an Order was made to protect that and the rest of the King's Palaces, as *Whitehall*, *St. James's*, *Greenwich-Houſe*, *Richmond-Houſe*, *Hampton-Court*, *Oatlands*, *Theobalds*, *Wimbledon-Houſe*, with all other Houses whatsoever, of the King's, Queen's, or the Prince's. These were not to be searched or meddled with, but in the Presence of one Lord and two Members of the House of Commons; nor any Thing removed or carried out of them, without special Order from both Houses of Parliament.—How widely different is this from an Ordinance of the Commons, after the King's Death, for the Sale and Disposal of the rich Furniture of these Palaces, and the Pictures and Statues in them ^b? These last would have been, Now, inestimable.

Sept.

^b A Catalogue of these, with the Prices they sold for, (communicated by the late *John Anſſir*, Esq; Garter King at Arms) will appear in their proper Order of Time.

Sept. 15. Sir William Waller having represent-
ed to Parliament that he wanted a strong Rein-
forcement to guard the City, the Commons made
an Order for impressing 5000 Men, out of sever-
al Counties, for that Purpose; in which the very
Watermen on the *Thames* were included; alledg-
ing, 'That, in Time of common Danger and Ne-
cessity, the Interest of private Persons ought to
'give Way to the Public.' To which the Lords
agreed.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

September.

Another for im-
pressing Men to
augment the City
Guard.

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Essex*,
and another from Colonel *Massey*, relating the Con-
dition of the Army, and of the City of *Gloucester*,
directed to the Speaker of the House of Commons,
were read. Neither of these Letters are entered
in their *Journals*, or in *Rushworth*; and only
that from the Earl is in those of the Lords, as
follows:

S I R,

I Will not trouble you with the Particulars of our
March, you shall, God willing, hear that more
at large hereafter. You may be certified only here-
by, that the first Time the Enemy appeared before
us, was at Aynhoe on the Hill, with a very great
Body of Horse, which Colonel Middleton faced more
than the whole Day with but two Regiments, and
skirmished very often with them. The Enemy faced
us afterwards, at Stow on the Wold, without en-
gaging themselves more than by small Skirmishes:

The Earl of *Essex*'s Account of
his raising the
Siege of *Gloucester*.

Upon Tuesday, in the Evening, the King's Forces,
seeing us approach, raised their Siege from before
Gloucester, whither it pleased God we came very
seasonably; for the Governor had not above two or
three Barrels of Powder left; yet had he managed
his Business with so much Judgment and Courage,
that the Enemy, not knowing of such Want, had but
small Hopes of attaining their Desires. We now
stay here only for the relieving of *Gloucester* with
Vidual

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

September.

Victual and other Provisions, of which there is an extraordinary Scarcity.

That which I must press you earnestly with at this Time is, first, That there be a sudden Provision of eight or ten thousand Pounds to be sent to that Garrison, without which there will be an Impossibility of maintaining it this Winter; the Discontent of the inferior Officers and common Soldiers being very great, for Want of their Pay and Arrear; they, at this Time, justly expecting rather Reward for their good Service, than Want of what is due.

The second, That the thousand Foot, which the Parliament is already engaged, by Promise, to send, may speedily march hither; without which they will not be able to fetch any Provisions from the Country; but the Enemy will be Master to the very Gates.

The third, That Sir William Waller may be speedily sent down into these Parts, which is the only Means to preserve those Friends you have here; for my own Army is in such extreme Necessity for Want of Pay, being now in an Enemy's Country, and at this Time within four or five Miles of the King's Army, where no Provisions can be had but for ready Money; and so little Hopes I have of a Supply from you, that, unless we can presently fight, we must be immediately necessitated to draw into some other Place which may be nearer to Supplies, and have a more free Intercourse with London.

Your assured Friend,

Tewksbury, Sept. 10,
1643.

E S S E X.

After reading this Letter, and that from Colonel Massey, the Commons passed the following Votes:

1. ' That Colonel Massey shall have 1000*l.* bestowed upon him, as a Reward and an Acknowledgement of his Service, whereof 500*l.* to be paid in present; and that it be recommended especially

cially to
to take
all conv
be defin
and Pro

2. ' c
after m
and tha
be mad
of that
upon th
Comm

these Su

3. ' T
to take
the Tro
fions, a

4. ' next Lo
Westmin
tality; a
Justices
reactions

5. ' Lord-G
has don
difficult
give hi
nel Ma
men of
ward of
portant

To
their C

Th
fortunat
it, his
till they

Sept.
led Th

cially to the Committee for Advance of Monies, An. 19. Car. I.
to take Care that the rest of the 1000 l. be paid with
all convenient Speed; and that the Lord-General
be desired to prefer him to some Place of Honour
and Profit.

1643.

September.

2. ' That the Arrears of the Garrison of *Gloucester* shall be forthwith paid, upon Account made; and that the Money in Mr. *Stephens's* Hands shall be made 4000 l. and that the Officers and Soldiers of that Garrison shall have a Month's Pay bestowed upon them, as a Reward of their Service; and the Committee for Advance of Money are to provide these Sums with all Speed.

3. ' That it be referred to the Committee of Safety to take Order for the sending of the thousand Men, the Troops of Horse, the Pistols and other Provisions, as desired by Col. *Massey's* Letter.

4. ' That a public Thanksgiving be held, on the next Lord's Day, in all the Churches of *London* and *Westminster* and the Parishes within the Bills of Mortality; and that the Lord Mayor of *London*, and the Justices of the Peace for *Westminster*, do give Directions accordingly.

A Thanksgiving Day appointed on that Occasion;

5. ' That a Letter be sent by both Houses to the Lord-General, acknowledging the great Service he has done, in the conducting of his Army in the difficult March to the Relief of *Gloucester*; and to give him Thanks for the same; another to Colonel *Massey*; and a third to the Mayor and Townsmen of *Gloucester*, to the same Purpose; also a Reward of 20 l. was voted to the Messenger of this important News.'

And a Vote of Thanks, &c. to the Officers, Mayor, and Townsmen.

To all which, the next Day, the Lords gave their Concurrence.

Thus ended the Siege of *Gloucester*, the most unfortunate Step the King could have taken; for, after it, his Affairs went backwards, in every Motion, till they ended in his own Ruin.

Sept. 18. This Day the famous Instrument, called *The Solemn League and Covenant*, was debated

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

bated in the House of Lords. It was brought up out of *Scotland* by the Commissioners sent last to the General Assembly of Divines, at *Westminster*, and presented to the *English* Parliament for their Approbation, and was carried through both Houses with small Opposition. The Lords, particularly, ordered a Committee of their House to join with one of the Commons, and consult with the *Scots* Commissioners about the Manner of taking of it in both Kingdoms. The Form of this Test runs thus :

The *Scots* Solemn
League and Co-
venant agreed to
by the *English*
Parliament.

WE Noblemen, Barons, Knights, Gentle-
men, Citizens, Burgessees, Ministers of
the Gospel, and Commons of all Sorts, in the
Kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, by
the Providence of God living under one King,
and being of one Reformed Religion, having be-
fore our Eyes the Glory of God, and the Advance-
ment of the Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour
Jesus Christ, the Honour and Happinefs of the
King's Majesty and his Posterity, and the true
public Liberty, Safety, and Peace of the King-
doms, wherein every one's private Condition is
included; and calling to Mind the treacherous
and bloody Plots, Conspiracies, Attempts, and
Practices of the Enemies of God, against the true
Religion, and Professors thereof, in all Places,
especially in these Three Kingdoms, ever since
the Reformation of Religion, and how much
their

From the original Edition, published by *Edward Husband*, Sep-
tember 22, 1643. In the Title Page it is called *A Solemn League
and Covenant, for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour
and Happinefs of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the three King-
doms of England, Scotland, and Ireland.*

After which follow these Texts of Scripture, which the Commons
ordered to be printed in the Title.

Jer. 1. 5. *Come let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual Cove-
nant that shall not be forgotten.*

Prov. xxv. 5. *Take away the Wicked from before the King, and his
Throne shall be established in Righteousness.*

2 Chron. xv. 15. *And all Judah rejoiced at the Oath, for they
had sworn with all their Heart, and sought him with their whole
Desire; and he was found of them; and the Lord gave them Rest round
about.*

their Rage, Power, and Presumption, are of late, An. 19. Car. 1.
and at this Time, increased and exercised; where- 1643.
of the deplorable Estate of the Church and
Kingdom of *Ireland*, the distressed Estate of the
Church and Kingdom of *England*, and the dan-
gerous Estate of the Church and Kingdom of
Scotland, are at present public Testimonies; we
have now at last, (after other Means of Suppli-
cation, Remonstrance, Protestations, and Suffer-
ings) for the Preservation of ourselves and our
Religion from utter Ruin and Destruction, ac-
cording to the commendable Practice of these
Kingdoms in former Times, and the Example
of God's People in other Nations, after mature
Deliberation, resolved and determined to enter in-
to a mutual and solemn League and Covenant;
wherein we all subscribe, and each one of us for
himself, with our Hands lifted up to the most High
God, do swear,

September.

1. That we shall sincerely, really, and con-
stantly, through the Grace of God, endeavour,
in our several Places and Callings, the Preserva-
tion of the Reformed Religion in the Church of
Scotland, in Doctrine, Worship, Discipline, and
Government, according to the Word of God,
and the Example of the best Reformed Churches;
and we shall endeavour to bring the Churches of
God, in the Three Kingdoms, to the nearest Con-
junction and Uniformity in Religion, Confession
of Faith, Form of Church-Government, Direc-
tory for Worship and Catechizing; that we, and
our Posterity after us, may, as Brethren, live in
Faith and Love, and the Lord may delight to dwell
in the Midst of us.

2. That we shall in like Manner, without
Respect of Persons, endeavour the Extirpation of
Popery, Prelacy, (that is, Church-Government by
Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and Com-
missaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters, Arch-
deacons, and all other Ecclesiastical Officers, de-
pending on that Hierarchy) Superstition, Heresy,
Schism, Profaneness, and whatsoever shall be found
to

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

September.

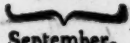
to be contrary to sound Doctrine and the Power of
 Godliness; lest we partake in other Men's Sins,
 and thereby be in Danger to receive of their
 Plagues; and that the Lord may be one, and his
 Name one, in the Three Kingdoms.

3. We shall, with the same Sincerity, Reality,
 and Constancy, in our several Vocations, endeavour,
 with our Estates and Lives, mutually to
 preserve the Rights and Privileges of the Parliaments,
 and the Liberties of the Kingdoms; and
 to preserve and defend the King's Majesty's Person
 and Authority, in the Preservation and Defence
 of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms,
 that the World may bear Witness with our
 Consciences of our Loyalty, and that we have no
 Thoughts or Intentions to diminish his Majesty's
 just Power and Greatness.

4. We shall also, with all Faithfulness, endeavour
 the Discovery of all such as have been, or shall be,
 Incendiaries, Malignants, or evil Instruments,
 by hindering the Reformation of Religion, dividing
 the King from his People, or one of the Kingdoms
 from another, or making any Faction or Parties
 amongst the People, contrary to this League and
 Covenant, that they may be brought to public Trial,
 and receive condign Punishment, as the Degree of
 their Offences shall require or deserve, or the
 Supreme Judicatories of both Kingdoms respectively,
 or others having Power from them for that Effect,
 shall Judge convenient.

5. And whereas the Happiness of a blessed Peace
 between these Kingdoms, denied in former Times
 to our Progenitors, is, by the good Providence of
 God, granted unto us, and hath been lately concluded
 and settled by both Parliaments, we shall each one
 of us, according to our Places and Interests,
 endeavour that they may remain conjoined in a firm
 Peace and Union to all Posterity; and that Justice
 may be done upon the wilful Opposers thereof,
 in Manner expressed in the precedent Article.

6. We

6. 'We shall also, according to our Places and An. 39. Car. I.
' Callings, in this common Cause of Religion, Li- 1643.
' berty, and Peace of the Kingdoms, assist and de- 
' fend all those that enter into this League and Co- September.
' venant, in the maintaining and pursuing thereof;
' and shall not suffer ourselves, directly or indirectly,
' by whatsoever Combination, Persuasion, or Ter-
' ror, to be divided and withdrawn from this blef-
' sed Union and Conjunction, whether to make
' Defection to the contrary Part, or to give our-
' selves to a detestable Indifferency or Neutrality in
' this Cause which so much concerneth the Glory
' of God, the Good of the Kingdoms, and Honour
' of the King; but shall, all the Days of our Lives,
' zealously and constantly continue therein, against
' all Opposition, and promote the same, according
' to our Power, against all Lets and Impediments
' whatsoever; and what we are not able ourselves to
' suppress or overcome we shall reveal and make
' known, that it may be timely prevented or remo-
' ved: All which we shall do as in the Sight of
' God.

' And because these Kingdoms are guilty of ma-
' ny Sins and Provocations against God and his Son
' *Jesus Christ*, as is too manifest by our present Di-
' stresses and Dangers, the Fruits thereof, we profess
' and declare, before God and the World, our un-
' feigned Desire to be humbled for our own Sins, and
' for the Sins of these Kingdoms; especially, that
' we have not, as we ought, valued the inestimable
' Benefit of the Gospel; that we have not laboured
' for the Purity and Power thereof; and that we
' have not endeavoured to receive *Christ* in our
' Hearts, nor to walk worthy of him in our Lives,
' which are the Causes of other Sins and Trans-
' gressions, so much abounding amongst us; and
' our true and unfeigned Purpose, Desire, and En-
' deavour for ourselves, and all others under our
' Power and Charge, both in Public and Private, in
' all Duties we owe to God and Man, to amend
' our Lives, and each one to go before another in
' the Example of a real Reformation, that the
Lord

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.

September.

‘ Lord may turn away his Wrath and heavy Indig-
 nation, and establish these Churches and Kingdoms
 in Truth and Peace. And this Covenant we make
 in the Presence of Almighty God, the Searcher of
 all Hearts, with a true Intention to perform the
 same, as we shall answer at that great Day when
 the Secrets of all Hearts shall be disclosed ; most
 humbly beseeching the Lord to strengthen us by
 his Holy Spirit for this End, and to bless our De-
 sires and Proceedings with such Success, as may
 bring Deliverance and Safety to his People, and
 Encouragement to the Christian Churches groan-
 ing under, or in Danger of, the Yoke of Anti-
 Christian Tyranny, to join in the same, or like
 Association and Covenant, to the Glory of God,
 the Enlargement of the Kingdom of *Jesus Christ*,
 and the Peace and Tranquillity of all Christian
 Kingdoms and Commonwealths.’

The Commons
 desire the Assem-
 bly of Divines’
 Opinion, in Point
 of Conscience.

Before this Covenant was wholly agreed to by
 both Houses, the Commons having referred it, as
 a Case of Conscience, to the Assembly of Divines at
Westminster for their Opinion of the Matter ; these
 Godly and Learned Ministers of the Gospel of
 Peace appeared before the House, and expressed
 themselves as follows :

‘ That they had, after a particular Seeking of God
 for his special Direction in this Business, fully de-
 bated and considered of it, in all its several Particu-
 lars : That they did approve of the said Covenant,
 and judged it lawful, in Point of Conscience, to be
 taken : That they did humbly advise that the fol-
 lowing Explications should be subjoined to the Co-
 venant, viz.

1. ‘ By the Clause in the first Article of the Cove-
 nant, *According to the Word of God*, they understood,
So far as we do, or shall, in our Consciences, conceive
the same to be according to the Will of God.

2. ‘ By Prelacy, in the second Article, they under-
 stood, *Church-Government by Archbishops, Bishops,*
their Chancellors, Commissaries, Deans, Deans and
Chapters.

Chapters, Archdeacons, and other Ecclesiastical Officers, An. 19. Car. I.
depending upon the Hierarchy.

1643.
September,

The Prolocutor made a pious Speech after the Delivery of these Opinions; in which he desired that, in the taking of this Covenant, the People might be thoroughly informed of the Grounds, Reasons, and Consequences of it, being a Matter of so vast Importance: Concluding with the Prayers of the Assembly, *That God would be pleased to return in Mercy to his People, and pitch his Tents over, and about, them.*

Matters being thus settled in *Foro Conscientiæ*, this new Oath went smoothly down: It was first taken by all the Lords and Commons then in Town; all the Officers in their Army were strictly enjoined to do the same; and afterwards it was ordered to be taken throughout the Kingdom.

Sept. 23. This Day a Conference was held between the two Houses, at which the Commons presented to the Lords a Letter of Advice they had received from the Earl of *Essex's* Secretary, dated from *Reading* the Day before. This Letter was to inform the Parliament of a Battle between the two Armies; but it is not entered in the *Journals*. It was fought on the 20th of *September*, near *Newbury*, in *Berkshire*, and is related at large by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, &c. Here both Sides again claimed the Victory, as in the first Battle at *Edge-Hill*. The Parliament, particularly, made themselves sure of it, and ordered a Committee of both Houses to send to their Lord-General and the Army forthwith, to let them know what great Value and Esteem the Houses had for his Excellency's Conduct, and the great Service done by them all, with the Blessing of God; to acquaint him also, that they were using all Endeavours to supply the Army, and sending additional Forces, in order to take this Opportunity for the prosecuting and perfecting of the Work. They also sent a Committee into the City, to inform them of this great Victory, and the Advantages that

The Battle of
Newbury,

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

September.

For which the
Parliament order
a Day of Thank-
sgiving.

The Manner of
taking the Co-
venant by both
Houses.

might be hoped for from it: To urge the Citizens to send a Reinforcement of Men, with a Supply of Money and Provisions; and to use all Diligence to hinder any such from being sent to the King's Army: Likewise to order a Day of Thanksgiving within *London* and *Westminster*, and the Liberties thereof, for the great Success of their Lord-General.

Sept. 25. This Day having been appointed by Parliament for their taking the Solemn League and Covenant, both Houses, with the Assembly of Divines and *Scots* Commissioners, met at *St. Margaret's, Westminster*, for that Purpose. It appears, by the *Commons' Journals*, that an Order was made by them for printing a Narrative of the whole Proceedings and Manner of taking this Covenant, together with the Prayers, Exhortations, and Psalms used upon that Occasion. But as this Piece, published by Authority, never yet fell into our Hands, we shall content ourselves with giving Mr. *Whitlocke's* and Lord *Clarendon's* Account of the Ceremonial.

The former tells us ^b, 'That Mr. *White*, one of the Assembly, prayed an Hour to prepare them for taking the Covenant: Then Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, made some Observations touching the Covenant, shewing the Warrant of it from Scripture, the Examples of it since the Creation, and the Benefit of it to the Church. Mr. *Henderson*, one of the *Scots* Commissioners, concluded in a Declaration of what the *Scots* had done, and the Good they had received, by such Covenants; and then he shewed the Prevalency of ill Counsels about the King, and the Resolutions of the States of *Scotland* to assist the Parliament of *England*. Next Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, read the Covenant, and all present held up their Hands, in Testimony of their Assent to it. The Divines of the Assembly, and the *Scots* Commissioners, subscribed it; and then Dr. *Gouge*, in the Pulpit, prayed for a Blessing upon it. Afterwards the Members of Parliament, in their respective

^b *Memorials*, p. 70.

tive Houses, subscribed their Names in a Parchment An. 19. Car. I,
Roll, where the Covenant was written.'—Thus far
Mr. *Whitlocke*.

1643.

September.

Lord *Clarendon*'s Account of this Matter runs
thus: 'The Lords and Commons, and their As-
sembly of Divines, met together at the Church,
with great Solemnity, to take the Covenant, on the
25th Day of *September*; a double Holiday, by the
Earl of *Essex*'s Return to *London*, and this religious
Exercise.

'There two or three of their Divines went up
into the Pulpit successively, not to preach, but to
pray; others, according to their several Gifts, to
make Orations upon the Work of the Day. They
were by them told, 'That this Oath was such,
'and, in the Matter and Consequence of it, of such
'Concernment, as it was truly worthy of them,
'yea of those Kingdoms, yea of all the Kingdoms
'of the World: That it could be no other but the
'Result and Answer of such Prayers and Tears, of
'such Sincerity and Sufferings, that Three King-
'doms should be thus born, or rather new-born, in
'a Day: That they were entering upon a Work of
'the greatest Moment and Concernment to them-
'selves, and to their Posterities after them, that
'ever was undertaken by any of them, or any of
'their Fore-fathers before them: That it was a
'Duty of the first Commandment, and therefore of
'the highest and noblest Order and Rank of Duties;
'therefore must come forth, attended with choicest
'Graces, Fear, Humility, and in the greatest Sim-
'plicity and Plainness of Spirit, and Respect of those
'with whom they covenanted: That it was to ad-
'vance the Kingdom of *Christ* here upon Earth,
'and make *Jerusalem* once more the Praise of the
'whole Earth, notwithstanding all the Contradic-
'tions of Men.'

'As soon as this Solemnity was over, Mr. *Hen-*
derjon, one of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners from
Scotland, magnified what they had done, and assured
them

C c 2

404 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

September.

them ' of great Success after it, by the Experience
' of that Nation, who, from their Union in the first
' Covenant, found nothing hard they proposed to
' themselves; and told them, that were that Cove-
' nant now painted upon the Wall within the Pope's
' Palace, it would doubtless put him into *Belshaz-*
' *zar's* quaking Condition;' with many such high
Expressions, as can hardly be conceived without the
View of the Records and Registry that is kept of
them.

Several Lords then in Town, the Earl of *Nor-*
thumberland for one, did not appear at this Cere-
mony; many Members of the Commons were also
absent, and sent their Excuses, next Day, for ill
Health, or otherwise; but took it afterwards ^d.

Ordinance for
sequestering the
Revenue of the
whole Royal
Family.

Sept. 26. An Ordinance was agreed to by both
Houses for an absolute Sequestration of the King's Re-
venue, with those of the Queen and Prince of *Wales*,
and seizing them for the Use of the Parliament, to
be printed and published all over the Kingdom.

Sept. 28. The Earl of *Essex*, being come up to
Town, was complimented by the Speakers of both
Houses on his late Victory; and this Day he pre-
sented to the Lords several Colours taken, at the
late Battle at *Newbury*, from the King's Army; one
of which had the Picture of the House of Lords, with
two Heads upon each End of it, and this Motto,
UT EXTRA SIC INTUS. Another was a Cavalier
in Pursuit of a Roundhead; the Word of the Round-
head, QUARTER; the Cavalier's, QUI SEQUITUR
VINCIT.

A Cessation of
Arms with the
Irish Rebels
agreed to by the
King.

About this Time the Parliament being alarmed
with the News of a Cessation of Arms with the
Rebels in *Ireland*, agreed to by the Council of
State in that Kingdom, several Votes were passed,
and a Declaration framed against it. The whole
of this Proceeding, with the Articles of Cessation
which

^d Their Names (being in Number 228) are all set down in *Russ-*
worth's Collections, p. 480, and in *Husbands's*, p. 426.

which were agreed on, may be seen in *Rushworth*; An. 19. Car. I. but we shall content ourselves with the Form of the Declaration only, since it seems to sum up all that can be said about this Matter.

1643.

September.

A DECLARATION of the LORDS and COMMONS, assembled in Parliament, against the intended CESSATION, or TREATY, with the Irish Rebels.

‘ A S it is evident to all the World, that this late The Parlia-
‘ horrid Rebellion of the Papists in *Ireland*, ment’s Declara-
‘ did, without any Colour or Pretext of Provocation, tion against it.
‘ professedly and boldly aim at the Destruction of the
‘ Protestant Religion, the Rejecting of the Laws
‘ of *England*, and the Extirpation of the *British*
‘ Inhabitants out of that Kingdom: So it is no less
‘ manifest, that this Parliament of *England* (to
‘ whom his Majesty hath left the managing of the
‘ War against those Rebels) hath taken the Troubles
‘ of *Ireland* to Heart, with that Resentment and
‘ Compassion as may evidence their Zeal to Reli-
‘ gion, their Love to their distressed Countrymen,
‘ and Brethren there, in these Times, when the
‘ like Jesuitical Practices have cast *England* into
‘ woful Distractions and an unnatural War; not-
‘ withstanding which the reducing of *Ireland* hath
‘ still been a chief Part of the Care of this Parlia-
‘ ment: And God hath been pleased to bless our
‘ Endeavours with such Success, as that those fu-
‘ rious, blood-thirsty Papists have been stopped in
‘ the Career of their Cruelty; some Part of the
‘ Protestant Blood, which at first was spilt like
‘ Water upon the Ground, hath been revenged;
‘ their Massacres, Burning, and Famishings, have,
‘ by a Divine Retaliation, been repaid into their
‘ Bosom; and the Protestant Party hath been erect-
‘ ed to that Condition of Strength and Hope, that
‘ their Enemies are constrained (distrusting their
‘ Forces) to have Recourse to their Craft and Po-
‘ licies; and therefore, by their subtle Agents at
‘ Court, and their active Instruments elsewhere,
‘ have been endeavouring now, of a long Time,

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

to make our Armies in *Ireland* disaffected to the Parliament; what by Occasion of their Wants not so readily supplied as their Need required, what by amusing them with these unhappy Differences fallen in here between King and People; labouring, by these Means, to divide those Forces into Factions, to the End the main Work they have in Hand might be neglected; which is the prosecuting of the War against the Rebels, so far brought low in some Parts of *Ireland*, that if they can be deprived of the Benefit of this Harvest, they are not likely to see the next Summer.

Now the Rebels finding, that notwithstanding the Distractions here occasioning the Slowness and Scarceness of Supplies, yet they themselves are in a far worse Condition, being in Want of most Things necessary, not only for the maintaining of a War, but even of Life; (the Judgment of God being remarkable upon them in this, that as their bloody and treacherous Religion made them inhumanly cruel in shedding the Protestants' Blood; so now the Famine, amongst many of them, hath made them unnaturally, and Cannibal-like, eat and feed one upon another) therefore, that they may have Time to expect from their Friends abroad new Supplies both of Victuals and Ammunition, and may, without Molestation, reap the Fruit of this Harvest, they have laboured a Treaty for a Cessation; which Project of theirs doth no less aim at the Overthrow of the Remainder of the Protestants in that Kingdom, than their treacherous taking of Arms at first did intend the Destruction of them all; for their Cessation and Hostility, their War and Peace, are alike to be esteemed of; and with those, that neither in Peace nor War keep any Faith, it is best to be in perpetual Defiance: Therefore the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, according to their continued Care of that Kingdom of *Ireland*, do, in a special Manner, take into their Consideration the Condition thereof, upon this Occasion of an intended

intended Cessation; and so much the rather, be-
 cause it is feared that the Protestant Forces, thro'
 Want of Provisions for their Armies, may at last,
 if not relieved, be persuaded to admit of this
 Course, in Hope thereby to procure some Means
 for their Subsisting; as also because there is too
 much Ground to suspect that, if this Cessation
 should be agreed unto, they might have Oppor-
 tunity to join with the Popish Party here for their
 greater Strengthening; and though it were to
 have no Influence upon this Kingdom, yet the
 evil Consequences of it are so many and pernicious
 to *Ireland*, that this Parliament would betray
 the Trust reposed in them, if they did not
 declare against this Cessation, and use all Means
 in Time to make it prove abortive: And therefore
 they desire it may be observed and taken Notice
 of,

An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 September.

First, From whence the Counsel and Design of
 this Cessation ariseth, even from the Rebels and
 Papists themselves for their own Preservation; for
 soon after they had missed of their Intent, to make
 themselves absolute Masters of that Kingdom of
Ireland by their treacherous Surprizes; and see-
 ing that this Kingdom did, with most Christian
 and generous Resolutions, undertake the Charges
 of the War for the Relief and Recovery of *Ireland*,
 Propositions were brought over from the Rebels
 by the Lords *Dillon* and *Taafe*, at which Time
 they were intercepted and restrained by Order of
 the House of Commons. After that they had the
 Boldness, even while their Hands were still im-
 brued in the Protestants' Blood, to petition his
 Majesty that their Demands might be heard; and,
 for this Purpose, they obtained a Commission to
 be sent over into *Ireland* to divers Persons of Qua-
 lity (whereof some were Papists) to hear, receive,
 and transmit to his Majesty their Demands, which
 was done accordingly; and one Mr. *Burke*, a
 notorious pragmatick *Irish* Papist, was the chief
 Solicitor in this Business. After this, the just
 revenging God giving daily Success to Handfuls
 of

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

September.

of the Protestants' Forces against their great Numbers; so that, by a wonderful Blessing from Heaven; they were in most Parts put to the worst; then did they begin to set on Foot an Overture for a Cessation of Arms; concerning which, what Going and Coming hath been between the Court and the Rebels is very well known; and what Meetings and Treaties have been held about it in *Ireland*, by Warrant of his Majesty's ample Commission sent to that Effect; and what Reception and Countenance most pragmatick Papists negotiating the Business, have found at Court; and that those of the State in *Dublin*, who had so much Religion and Honesty as to dissuade the Cessation, were first discountenanced, and at last put out of their Places and restrained to Prison, as Sir *William Parsons*, one of the Lords Justices there; Sir *John Temple*, Master of the Rolls; Sir *Adam Loftus*, Vice-Treasurer of *Ireland*, and Treasurer at War; and Sir *Robert Meredith*, one also of the Council-Table.

Secondly, The Lords and Commons desire it may be observed, That, during all these Passages and Negotiations, the Houses of Parliament were never acquainted by the States of *Ireland* with this Treaty of a Cessation, much less was their Advice or Counsel demanded; notwithstanding that the Care and Managing of the War was devolved on them, both by Act of Parliament, and by his Majesty's Commission under the Great Seal, To advise, order, and dispose of all Things concerning the Government and Defence of that Kingdom. But the Wants of the Army were often represented and complained of; whereby, with much Craft, a Ground was preparing for the Pretext wherewith now they would cover the Counsels of this Cessation, as if nothing had drawn it on, but the extreme Wants of their Armies; whereas it is evident, that the Reports of such a Treaty have been, in a great Part, the Cause of their Wants; for thereby the Adventurers were disappointed, Contributions were stopped, and by

the

the Admittance to Court of the Negotiators of An. 19. Car. 1.
 this Cessation, their wicked Counsels have had
 that Influence, as to procure the intercepting of
 much Provisions which were sent for *Ireland*; so
 that Ships going for *Ireland* with Victuals, and
 others coming from thence with Commodities
 to exchange for Victuals, have been taken, not
 only by *Dunkirkers*, having his Majesty's War-
 rant, but also by *English* Ships, commanded by
 Sir *John Pennington*, under his Majesty. And
 moreover, the Parliament's Messengers, sent in-
 to several Counties with the Ordinance of *Janu-*
ary last for Loans and Contributions, have been
 taken and imprisoned; their Money taken from
 them, and not one Penny, either Loan or Con-
 tribution, hath been suffered to be sent in for *Ire-*
land, from those Counties which were under the
 Power of the King's Army; while in the mean
 Time the Houses of Parliament, by their Ordi-
 nances, Declarations, and Sollicitations to the
 City of *London*, and the Counties free from the
 Terror of the King's Forces, were still procuring
 no contemptible Aid and Relief for the Distresses
 of *Ireland*.

1643.
 September.

Thirdly, As the Lords and Commons have
 Reason to declare against this Plot and Design of
 a Cessation of Arms, as being treated and carried
 on without their Advice; so also because of the
 great Prejudice which will thereby redound to the
 Protestant Religion, and the Encouragement and
 Advancement which it will give to the Practice
 of Popery; when these Rebellious Papists shall,
 by this Agreement, continue and set up, with
 more Freedom, their Idolatrous Worship, their
 Popish Superstitions, and Romish Abominations,
 in all the Places of their Command; to the Dis-
 honouring of God, the Grieving of all true Pro-
 testant Hearts, the Dispensing with the Laws of
 the Crown of *England*, and to the Provoking of
 the Wrath of a jealous God; as if both Kingdoms
 had not smarted enough already for this Sin of too
 much conniving at, and tolerating of, Anti-Chri-
 stian

410 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

AN. 19. Car. I.
1643.

September.

‘ tian Idolatry, under Pretext of civil Contracts and politic Agreements.

‘ *Fourthly*, In the fourth Place, they desire it may be observed, that this Cessation will prove dishonourable to the public Faith of this Kingdom; it will elude and make null the Acts and Ordinances of Parliament, made for the forfeiting of the Rebels’ Land; at the passing of which Acts, it was represented, that such a Course would drive the Rebels to Despair; and it proves so, but otherways than was meant; for, despairing of their Force and Courage, they go about to overcome us with their Craft.

‘ *Lastly*, What shall become of the many poor exiled Protestants, turned out of their Estates by this Rebellion, who must now continue begging their Bread, while the Rebels shall enjoy their Lands and Houses? And who shall secure the rest of the Protestants, that either by their own Courage, Industry, and great Charges, have kept their Possessions, or by the Success of our Armies have been restored? Can there be any Assurance gotten from a perfidious Enemy, of a Cessation from Treachery and Breach of Agreement, when they shall see a fit Time and Opportunity? These and many other Considerations being well weighed, it will appear evidently that this Design of a Cessation is a deep Plot laid by the Rebels, and really invented for their own Safety, and falsely pretended to be for the Benefit of our Armies.

‘ And whereas the Lords and Commons have no certain Information that the Treaty is concluded, but are informed by several Letters that all the Protestants, as well Inhabitants as Soldiers in that Kingdom, are resolved to withstand that Proceeding; and to adventure on the greatest Extremities, rather than have any Sort of Peace with that Generation, who have so cruelly, in Time of Peace, murdered many Thousands of our Countrymen, and laboured to extirpate the Protestant Religion from amongst them: So they do

‘ do b
‘ first
‘ and
‘ was
‘ tation
‘ from
‘ of the
‘ ed th
‘ fore
‘ and
‘ a Cou
‘ at lea
‘ which
‘ are we
‘ in tha
‘ their
‘ their
‘ Kingd
‘ Engag
‘ obviati
‘ a stron
‘ sation
‘ too m
‘ the pr
‘ Inconv
‘ to prev
‘ their fo
‘ holding
‘ Calumn
‘ ing the
‘ nuing
‘ raged to
‘ their W
‘ seeing
‘ hence,
‘ or conc
‘ much P
‘ many ru
‘ gion aln
‘ for this
‘ Policy fr
‘ ters are

do believe, that these Rumours of a Cessation were first contrived by the Enemies of our Religion and Peace; and, by their Practices, the Treaty was carried on with much Subtilty and Solicitation; thereby to stop the sending of Supplies from thence to our Armies, and for the cooling of the Affections of those who have already shewed their Zeal to the Weal of *Ireland*. And therefore the only Means to defeat this their Policy, and prevent the Evils intended by it, is to settle a Course whereby the Armies of *Ireland* may be at least fenced against Hunger and Cold: For which Purpose it is desired, That all those who are well-affected to the Protestant Religion, either in that or this Kingdom, and all those who, by their Adventures already made, have embarked their particular Interests with the Public of that Kingdom, and do desire a good Return of their Engagements, would join their Endeavours for obviating of that Necessity, which may be made a strong Argument to inforce a destructive Cessation of Arms; and that they would not, through too much Suspicion and Jealousy of it, forbear the providing of Supplies, and so occasion that Inconvenience which they ought by all Means to prevent; for by so doing they will lose all their former Pains and Charges; and the withholding of Provisions now will gain Credit to that Calumny laid against this Kingdom, of neglecting the Armies of *Ireland*; and, by the continuing of Supplies, these Forces will be encouraged to continue the War, and so crown both their Work and ours. And, lastly, the Rebels seeing Assistance against them still flowing from hence, must needs be out of Hope of prosecuting, or concluding, this their Design. The Cry of much Protestant Blood, the great Indigency of many ruined Families, the Danger of our Religion almost exiled out of that Kingdom, calls for this last Act of Piety, Charity, Justice, and Policy from us; which being resolved on, Letters are to be dispatched to the several Parts of that

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
September.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
September.

that Kingdom, to encourage the Commanders and Soldiers upon the aforesaid Reasons and Assurances, that they may not hearken to such an unjust and deceitful Counsel; and as, by their prosecuting of the War, through God's Blessing, they have successfully resisted the Rebels' Cruelty; so they may, upon this Occasion, beware they be not over-reached by their Craft.

All which the Lords and Commons do earnestly desire may be seriously taken to Heart by all the Kingdom; and that from those other Encouragements, mentioned at large in the Ordinance of the fourteenth of *July* last^a, and such as now are offered, a Course may be taken, whereby such a constant weekly Contribution may be settled, as will supply to the Armies in *Ireland* the meer Necessities of Nature; which may be more punctually and seasonably transmitted unto the several Parts of that Kingdom, according to their respective Wants, that so the Benefit and Honour of so pious a Work happily begun, and successfully hitherto carried on, may not be lost when so little remains to be done; and that the saving of a Kingdom, the re-establishing of so many Protestant Churches, the repossessing of so many Thousand Christians into their Estates, may not be deserted and let fall to the Ground, for a little more Pains and Cost.

The rest of this Month was employed, by the Parliament, in soliciting Loans of Money from the City of *London*, for the Payment of their Army. And the *Scots* having sent Word that they were ready to come into *England*, Propositions were ordered to be offered to the City, for the speedy raising of 50,000 *l.* to enable them to begin their March.

October

^a By this Ordinance (which is at large in *Husbands's Collection* p. 233) the Adventurers of *Ireland* were intitled to a double Proportion of Lands of what was given by the Act passed for that Purpose in the Beginning of this Parliament.

October. There is nothing material entered in the *Journals* of either House till the eighth of this Month, when a remarkable Affair came on before the Lords. The *French King* had sent over an Ambassador Extraordinary, in order to compose the Differences between the Parliament and, so near a Relation to him as, the King of *England*. The Houses being informed that this Ambassador came in an amicable Way, or, as the *Journals* express it, with good Affections, ordered a Deputation of Lords and Commons to go down to *Gravesend*, to welcome him on his Arrival, and wait upon him to his Lodgings at *Somerſet-Houſe*, which was fitted up for that Purpose.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
October.

Soon after this Ambassador's Arrival, Mr. *Wal-ter Montague*, who followed him out of *France*, in his Retinue, was arrested at *Rochester*; and, by the Commons, committed Prisoner to the Tower. A Motion was also made, That the Letters which he had brought over with him, sealed with the Arms of *France*, and directed to both their Majesties of *England*, should be opened: But that passed in the Negative. On the Imprisonment of this Gentleman, the Ambassador addressed the following Memorial to the House of Lords. It was originally in *French*, and was translated on purpose to be read in that House, and entered in their *Journals*; but it is so lamely done there, as scarcely to be made any Sense of; and we are obliged to the *Journals* of the Commons for the Original, of which we have attempted the following Translation.

An Ambassador comes from *France*, as a Mediator between the King and Parliament.

‘MY Lord the Prince of *Harcourt*, Peer of *France*, and Master of the Horse to the Most Christian King, Ambassador Extraordinary

His Remonstrance to the Lords, on account of the arresting Mr. Montague in his Retinue.

^b This Mr. *Montague* and Sir *Kenelm Digby* had been employed, by the Queen, to solicit Contributions, from the *English Catholics*, towards supporting the War against the *Scots* in 1639.—This Affair we took some Notice of in our Ninth Volume, p. 214, and 242.

^c The Original runs thus in the Commons' *Journals*:
Monſieur le Prince d'Harcourt, Pair et Grand Eſcuyer de France, Ambassadeur Extraordinaire vers le Roy de la Grande Bretagne,
ayant

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

October.

to the King of *Great-Britain*, being informed that
 ' Mr. *Walter Montague* left *Paris* since his Excel-
 ' lency, and came over into *England*, from the
 ' Queen, disguised amongst the Retinue of Mon-
 ' sieur *De Gressy*, hath been arrested at *Rocheſter*;
 ' and tho' he was charged with the Care of her Ma-
 ' jeſty's Letters, for their Majesties of *Great-Britain*,
 ' was committed, nevertheless, Prisoner to the Tower
 ' of *London*: His Excellency declares to the Houses
 ' of Parliament, that he knew nothing of his Person,
 ' nor of his Disguise, neither did Monsieur *De Gressy*;
 ' but, for the Respect and Consideration of her Ma-
 ' jeſty's Letters, which make it appear that the
 ' ſaid Mr. *Montague* had the Honour to belong to
 ' her, and ſhe avoweth him, the ſaid Ambaſſa-
 ' dor demandeth, in the Name of her Majesty,
 ' and intreats them, in his own, that Mr. *Mon-*
 ' *tague* may be put into his Hands, with all the
 ' Letters he was Bearer of, to avoid the Conſe-
 ' quences that the juſt Complaint of ſuch a Deten-
 ' tion may produce.'

After this is entered, what is, in the *Lords' Journals*, called the Senſe of that Houſe, on the reading
 this Paper, viz.

' That this *Walter Montague*, being a Rene-
 gado, and a Man baniſhed the Kingdom, for the
 Miſchief he did here, for him to be demanded of
 the two Houſes of Parliament, in ſo high a Man-
 ner as this, by an Ambaſſador that pretends he
 comes

*ayant appris que M. de Montague party de Paris depuis luy, pour venir
 en Angleterre de la Part de la Reine, ſe ſeroit jetté deſguisé dans la
 Suite de Monsieur de Gressy, ſans en eſtre conneu: Qu'a Rocheſter il
 auroit eſté arreſté; et bien que trouvé chargé de Lettres de la Reine
 pour leurs Majeſtez de la Grande Bretagne, il auroit, neantmoins, eſté
 conduit Priſonnier en la Tour de Londres: Monſieur declare à Mes-
 ſieurs du Parlement, qu' il n'a eu aucune Connoiſſance de ſa Perſonne, ny
 de ſon Deſguiſement, non plus que le dit Sieur de Gressy; mais, pour
 le Reſpect et Conſideration des Lettres de la Reine, qui font voir que le
 dit Sieur de Montague a l'Honneur d'eſtre à elle, et d'en eſtre advoqué,
 il demande de la Part de ſa Majeſté, et les prie de la Sienne, qu' ils luy
 remettent le dit Sieur de Montague entre les Mains, enſemble les Lettres
 dont il eſtoit Porteur, à fin d'eſviter les Conſequences, qui pourroient ar-
 river de la juſte Plainte d'une telle Deſtention.*

comes to endeavour to procure Peace; and giving himself so high a Title, and treating the two Houses of Parliament so low, is a Thing of so extraordinary a Nature, that, though the Houses desire to maintain a good Correspondency with *France*, yet this Kingdom needs not fear any ill Consequence that may follow upon this Business; but hope that God will bless them and protect them, as he hath hitherto done.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
October.

It was also ordered to have a Conference with the Other House, on the Subject of this Paper, and the Lord-General *Essex* to deliver the Sense of this House to the Commons concerning it. The Lord-General hereupon acquainted the Lords, that it was reported the *French* Ambassador, lately come, had brought many Attendants along with him, several of whom were conceived to be Officers and Commanders; and that, if they should go to the King with him, it was likely they would not return. And it being probable that, before the Ambassador goes, he would apply to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct, he desired to know what he should do in this Case. Whereupon the House ordered, That, when the Ambassador sends to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct for himself and Followers to go to the King, his Lordship shall desire to see a List of all those he intends to take with him.

Oct. 9. At a Conference between the two Houses, it was agreed that the Answer to the *French* Ambassador's Message should be drawn up by a Committee; which being done, it was reported, read, and agreed to, and was in these Words:

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament have considered of the Message in Writing, delivered to the Earl of *Pembroke*, and by him presented unto them, from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, Ambassador Extraordinary from the *French* King; by which he complains that Mr. *Walter Mon-*

The Parliament justify their Conduct therein.

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

October.

Montague, sent hither, unknown to him, by the
 Queen Regent of *France*, with Letters unto the
 King and Queen; and, under a Disguise, ha-
 ving put himself into the Company of *Monf. D*
Greffy, had been arrested at *Rocheſter*, and car-
 ried Prisoner to the Tower; and the ſaid Ambaſ-
 ſador therein deſires, in regard it appears by theſe
 Letters, that the ſaid Mr. *Montague* belongs un-
 to the Queen Regent, that both he and the Let-
 ters may be delivered to him: To this they re-
 turn for Answer, That they are moſt ſorry they
 muſt deny him any Part of his Requeſt: That
 the Letters ſhall be reſtored, according to his
 Deſire; but for Mr. *Montague*, a Perſon here-
 tofore queſtioned for Diſſervices to this State; and
 ſo dangerous, that, in the Beginning of this Par-
 liament, they made it their humble Suit unto the
 King, that he might be baniſhed the Court; and
 afterwards being, upon his own Offer and of his
 Friends, permitted to retire himſelf out of the
 Kingdom; that he ſhould now return, and in
 ſuch a concealed Manner; which, if nothing
 elſe, were Cauſe enough for his Apprehenſion
 and to render him incapable of the Patronage of
 that great Queen: This is a Crime of ſo high
 and bold a Nature, as the Houſes of Parliamen-
 cannot paſs by, neither in Juſtice for what is al-
 ready done; nor in Prudence, to ſecure the
 State, for the Time to come, from the Practice
 and Machinations of ſo turbulent and diſaffected
 a Spirit: Nor can it be any juſt Offence unto
 her Maſteſty of *France*, whom they highly honour
 and eſteem, as a good and glorious Queen; nor
 any Diſobligation to the Ambaſſador the Prince
D'Harcourt, whom likewise they deſire to treat
 with all Demonſtrations of Civility and Reſpect
 if, according to the Laws of all Nations, the
 Law of this Kingdom be put in Execution againſt
 one who is a Native, a Subject, a Delinquent
 who was in the Nature of a baniſhed Man, and
 returns in a diſguiſed Habit (ſo diſavowing him-
 ſelf, not to be avowed by any); a dangerous Per-

son, that formerly did, and in all Likelihood will
again, practise against the State; and whom they
have Cause to believe, by the Manner of his
Coming, to be now come for that very Purpose:
These Things considered by the Lord Ambassa-
dor, and by him represented to the Queen, will,
they doubt not, give her Majesty ample Satis-
faction, and clear and satisfy the Proceedings of
the Parliament to her princely Wisdom; which
they passionately desire, as in this, so in all Things
else, not out of Fear of any ill Consequence by
the contrary, but as knowing the Justice of their
Ways must needs meet with the Approbation of
so wise a Queen; as it will also draw down the
Blessing of God Almighty, which, alone, car-
ries them above the Consideration of all earthly
Power.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

October.

A Petition from the University of Cambridge was,
this Day, presented to the House of Lords, to this
Effect:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS
assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the University of Cam-
bridge

Humbly sheweth,

THAT upon the Signification of his Majesty's Petition from the
Willingness graciously to accept of what Sup- University of
plies the Colleges of Cambridge could make to his Cambridge against
being sequestred.
present Necessities, there was sent to his Majesty,
some of our Body, a Quantity of Plate and Mo-
ney, out of certain Colleges in this University; the
content of those who sent it being not at all to so-
lent any War, which was not at that Time begun^a;
so it is, that certain Men, upon Pretence of
some Authority committed to them by both Houses of
Parliament, have begun to sequester the Libraries

VOL. XII.

D d

and

Alluding, most likely, to Mr. Cromwell's having prevented the
University's Plate, to the Value of 20,000 l. from being carried to the
— In our Eleventh Volume, p. 388.

An. 39. Car. 1.
1643.

October.

and other Goods of some Masters of Colleges, so that there will be no Means of Subsistence left to any of the Members of the said Colleges, though never so innocent.

May it please your Honours, in tender Compassion to the sad Condition of the poor University, to grant unto us a Freedom from this Sequestration; and that the Fact of some few particular Men, which was, also, by them meant only as an Acknowledgment of their Duty to his Majesty, to whom some of them are obliged as to their Royal Founder, and others as his sworn Chaplains, may not redound to the depriving of the Members of the several Colleges of all Possibility to continue in this University.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

RA. EXON^b, *Vice-Chancellor*

The Lords ordered that this Petition should be communicated to the House of Commons, at a Conference, that some Course might be taken for their Relief; but we hear no more of it in either House.

A Misunderstanding between the Parliament's two Generals, *Essex* and *Waller*, reconciled.

The Earl of *Essex* and Sir *William Waller*, the two Generals for the Parliament, had long differed in their respective Commands; and it was now run so high, that, this Day, the Earl made it his Request to both Houses, that he might have Leave to resign his Commission, and go beyond the Sea, in regard that the Commission granted Sir *William Waller* was inconsistent with his own, and in respect to the many Discouragements he had received since his being General. The Lords conceiving this to be a Business which concerned the present Safety of the whole Kingdom, resolved to have a Conference with the Commons about it.

^b Dr. *Ralph Brownrigge*, nominated to the Bishoprick of *Exeter* by the King, upon the Translation of Bishop *Hall* to *Norwich*. See Vol. X. p. 146.

and to declare, that the Sense of this House is, That the Commission to Sir *William Waller* be delivered up, being inconsistent with that to the Lord-General from both Houses; whereby it was voted, That all Commissions should be granted by the Lord-General, and be under his Command, being necessary for the present Affairs and the Safety of the Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
October.

The House of Commons was before-hand apprized of this Matter, and, at the same Time, sent a Message to the Lords, to let them know, That Sir *William Waller* had offered to give up his last Commission; and that they were of Opinion the best Way to discover the Conveniency or Inconveniency of it, was, to appoint a Committee to go to the Lord-General, with Power to consider of, and advise with his Excellency what Course was fittest for settling this Business the most for the Safety of the Kingdom. A Committee of both Houses was immediately appointed to wait upon the Lord-General on this Affair, each House, though late, resolving to sit till their Return; after which the Lords received the following Votes from the Commons:

‘The Lords and Commons do declare, That, by virtue of their last Commission, Sir *William Waller* is under the Command of the Lord-General, and is bound to obey him, notwithstanding any Thing in his Commission: And Sir *William Waller*, being present at this Debate, did declare, That he ever had been, and is, willing and ready to obey his Excellency the Lord-General’s Commands. And

‘Whereas, by the Words of the last Commission to Sir *William Waller*, it is mentioned, That he was to receive his Instructions from both Houses of Parliament, it is this Day ordered, by the Lords and Commons, That Sir *William Waller* shall, from Time to Time, receive and observe such Instructions as the Lord-General shall give him.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

October.

The Lords having agreed to these Votes, the Controversy between the two Generals ended, which otherwise might have proved of very ill Consequence to the Parliament's Cause.

Oct. 11. A Report was made to the Lords of a Conference held the Day before, between the two Houses, of a Matter which had lain long dormant, the Lords having absolutely refused to come into it; which was the making a new Great Seal. This Affair will be best explained by the Words of the *Lords' Journals, viz.*

The Commons' farther Reasons for desiring the Lords' Concurrence in making a new Great Seal

'That the House of Commons, divers Months since, presented to their Lordships several Votes concerning the Great Seal, wherein they desired their Lordships' Concurrence: And since, because of the Absence of the Great Seal, which should attend the Parliament, new Mischiefs have sprung up; and what causes a Necessity to have the Great Seal more at this Time than ever, is in respect of the Use which hath been made of the Great Seal, at *Oxford*, against the Parliament and their Proceedings.

1. 'Considering the clandestine Going-away of the Lord-Keeper, who is a sworn Officer, with the Great Seal from the Parliament; and as soon as he came to *Oxford* it was taken from him, and put into another Hand; as appeareth by the Lord-Keeper's own Letter, when Writs were sent to him to be sealed, he returned for Answer, That the Seal was not in his Hands, but Mr. *Porter's*.

2. 'There hath, by virtue of the Great Seal being at *Oxford*, Commissions for raising Armies against the Parliament, issued out; Commissions to new Sheriffs, and an extraordinary Power put into their Hands; Commissions of Array; Proclamations to proclaim his Majesty's good Subjects to be Traitors; Commissions of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, to proceed against those that have held with the Parliament; and, one, *instar omnium*, the Commission to one Mr. *Tomkins* and others, for Destruction of the Parliament, City, and Kingdom; also a Proclamation

tion
Parli
liam
3-
Hand
of H
Grea
ficer,
'E
cessity
dom,
enfor
to att
there
none
Seal a
sent P
of Ele
Comm
are vo
fore it
attend
tinuan
'Al
obstru
as no
errone
which
within
Fines
Dower
Writs
Subject
is at O
'All
desire
for mak
liament
Kingdo
The
Necessi

tion lately come forth, for seizing the Estates of all Parliament-Men, and any that adhere to the Parliament.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

October.

3. ' That the Great Seal is now put into the Hands of Sir *George Ratcliffe*, a Person impeached of High Treason by the Parliament; whereas the Great Seal should be in the Hands of a sworn Officer, and none else.

' Besides these Considerations, the absolute Necessity of preserving the Government of the Kingdom, and of the Ministration of the Justice thereof, enforces the Parliament to provide a new Great Seal to attend the Parliament according to the Law; for there is now a general Stop and Denial of Justice, none being permitted to have the Use of the Great Seal at *Oxford*; whereby the Dissolution of this present Parliament is in great Danger, for new Writs of Election have been denied to supply the House of Commons with Members in the room of those that are void by Defection, Apostacy, and Death; therefore it is absolutely necessary to have a Great Seal to attend the Parliament, for the Preservation and Continuance of it.

' Also the ordinary Proceedings at the Law are obstructed, whereby the Subject should be relieved; as no Writs of Error can be granted for Reversal of erroneous Judgments; nor original Writs of Assize, which are *festina Remedia*; Writs to supply Churches within six Months, which admits no Delay; no Fines or Recoveries; Writs of *Habeas Corpus*, or Dower, Judges, Commissions; and many other Writs as are for the speedy Relief and Benefit of the Subject, cannot be had, by reason the Great Seal is at *Oxford*.

' All these considered, the House of Commons desire their Lordships' Concurrence in the Votes for making of a new Great Seal to attend the Parliament, for the Dispatch of the Business of the Kingdom.

The Lords taking into serious Consideration the Necessity of preserving the Government of this Kingdom.

422 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

October.

Kingdom, his Majesty's Authority in Parliament, and the Being thereof, and the Preservation of the Administration of the Justice of this Kingdom; and perceiving, by these Mischiefs, how absolutely necessary it is to have the Great Seal attending the Parliament, for the Reasons aforesaid, after a mature Debate, this Question was put, Whether a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament for Dispatch of the Affairs of the Parliament and the Kingdom? it passed affirmatively. And accordingly

The Lords give
their Consent
thereto.

The next Day the Lords sent a Message to the Commons, to acquaint them with their Concurrence in the Vote for making a new Great Seal of *England*.

We took Notice, in the Proceedings of *July* last, that the Lords having refused their Consent to the Vote of the Commons for making a new Great Seal, the latter gave Orders for making one; the Form of which was a Representation of the House of Commons, the Members sitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland* on the other. But the Lords having now given their Consent, another Great Seal was ordered to be made in the very same Form and Manner as the King's.

Oct. 16. A Letter from the Earl of *Manchester*, another of the Parliament's Generals, was read in the House of Lords, which contained an Account of a Victory he had obtained against the King's Forces in *Lincolnshire*, the Circumstances of which were as follow:

My Lords,

Letter from the
Earl of *Manche-*
ster, at *Horn-*
castle.

I Hold it my Duty to give your Lordships an Account of the Advantage that God hath been pleased to give unto those Forces, whereof you have been pleased to honour me with the Command. Upon Wednesday last, being the 12th of October, I drew up the whole Body of Horse and Foot before the Castle of *Bolingbroke*; having had, the Night

before, thro' some Neglect of the Yorkshire Horse who kept the Out-Guards, some of our Horse put to run great Hazard; yet they behaved themselves very well, and got off with the Loss of only one Colour. After I was drawn into a Body, Word was brought unto me that the Enemy was advancing towards me with eighty Troops of Horse: Upon this Intelligence, I thought it my Duty not to quit the Place where I was, unless it was by marching to meet them, which I did; and when my Horse were drawn into as good Order as we could put them, and the Enemy was drawn very near to them, the Foot and Artillery marched up as fast as they could after the Horse, but came not so near as to give any Help; only they did dishearten the Enemy much, by the Confession of the Prisoners which we took, and made them charge the Horse sooner and more confusedly than otherwise they would have done.

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
October,

I must give the Horse under my Command their due Praise, that they charged very gallantly. Col. Cromwell charged in the Van with my Regiment and his own, and behaved himself with Resolution and Honour; Sir Thomas Fairfax (who is a Person that exceeds any Expressions as a Commendation of his Resolution and Valour) was to second the first Body of Horse that charged, and he performed what he was commanded with Readiness and Success. I may truly say, that after the second Charge, our Men had little else to do but to pursue a flying Enemy; which they did for many Miles. What Loss truly the Enemy had punctually, I cannot yet speak; only this I can say, divers Men of Quality lay dead upon the Place, and divers that rode away fell dead from off their Horses in the Town some Miles off from the Place where we fought; I have sent 800 Prisoners to Boston. There were killed upon the Place about 300 as near as we can guess; and every Day the Horse-Guards are bringing in Prisoners, whom they find scattered about the Country.

I am now intending to march forwards towards Gainfbrough, and shall do my best to make a Division

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

October,

version for the Relief of Hull, if I can in respect of the Time of the Year.

I shall now beseech your Lordships, that the Glory and the Honour of this Defeat may be ascribed unto God; for truly it is only due unto him.

My Lords, I should have been abler to have done Service, if the Number of Foot and Horse out of the several Counties had been made good unto me; but I shall not neglect my Duty, and shall beg this Favour from your Lordships, that you would esteem me worthy of your good Opinion, as

Your Lordships

Horncastle, October 12,
1643.

Most humble Servant,

MANCHESTER.

P. S. I cannot hear there were killed on our Side above twenty, and hurt about sixty.

The Manner of
presenting the
Lord Mayor
Elect of London
to the House of
Lords.

After the reading of this Letter, a new Lord Mayor of London was presented to the House of Lords for their Approbation. As this was the second Time any such Ceremony had been performed there, it will not be improper to give the whole of it from their *Journal*; observing, at the same Time, that it shews what a perfect Harmony and good Understanding there was between the Parliament and City of London.

Sir *John Woolaston*, Knight, Lord Mayor Elect of the City of London, was presented to this House by the Recorder of London, and most of the Aldermen and Sheriffs of the said City; and the Recorder made a Speech to this House, shewing, That, according to their Charter and Custom of the said City, the Lord Mayor Elect was presented to be approved by the Lord-Keeper, in Right of his Majesty; but, in the Absence of the Lord-Keeper, they humbly desire that their Lordships would please to give their Approbation of him, and order that he may be sworn at the

accu-

accustomed Day by some of the Barons of the Exchequer; they also made Expression of the Faithfulness and Readiness of the City to protect the Parliament with their Lives and Fortunes.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
October.

Hereupon the House commanded their Speaker to declare,

‘ The Lords do conceive, that, in the Absence of his Majesty, his Great Council of Peers is the most proper Power for the City of *London* and your Lordship to address yourselves unto, for an Approbation of that Choice the City hath made of you for their Lord Mayor; whose Duty and Loyalty to the King and Kingdom hath well appeared already concerning the said City; and my Lords are very well pleased that the City of *London* hath made Choice of your Lordship to govern the said City, especially in these Times of Trouble and Danger; recommending, in his Majesty’s Absence, unto you, that your Care may be great to prevent all Tumults and Disorders that may grow in the said City, and to suppress all Factions that may appear there to their Disquiet, or the Danger of this Kingdom.

‘ And it is also ordered by the Lords in Parliament, upon the presenting the Lord Mayor Elect of *London*, this Day, to the House, That the Barons of the Exchequer that are, or shall be, in or near *London*, shall be personally present on the thirtieth of this instant *October*, in the Exchequer-Court, although the Term should be then adjourned; and then administer unto the said Lord Mayor Elect the usual Oath that hath formerly been administered to his Predecessors, the Lord Mayors of the said City of *London*.

‘ And because of the Expressions of the Recorder^d, of the great Affection of the City to this House, their Lordships thought fit to appoint a Committee to draw up a special Return of Thanks for the same; and the House appointed the Earl of *Sarum*, Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*,
and

^d *John Glynn*, Esq; so appointed by Parliament on the Removal of *Sir Thomas Gardiner* for his Adherence to the King.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

October.

and the Lord *Wharton*, to draw up the same, who reported the Draught thereof to this House, which was approved of; and the Lord Mayor Elect, Mr. Recorder, and the Aldermen and Sheriffs were called in, and the Speaker signified unto them,

‘ That my Lords have thought fit to call you
‘ in again to let you know, that they cannot but,
‘ with many Thanks, take Notice of the Expres-
‘ sions of Mr. Recorder, in the Name of the whole
‘ City, of the Readiness thereof to live no longer,
‘ than with a Desire to live to declare their Affec-
‘ tions to this House and the Parliament; which
‘ their Lordships make no Doubt of, they having
‘ observed so many real Expressions, in these dan-
‘ gerous Times, of their Faithfulness and Assist-
‘ ance for the Safety of the Parliament and the
‘ Kingdom, that they suit fully with their Expres-
‘ sion now to this House; and have been such and so
‘ eminent, as no Time or Story can parallel: And
‘ as the Lords do acknowledge this with much Con-
‘ tentment, so they do again assure you that their
‘ Sitting here and constant Care shall be, as to en-
‘ deavour and procure the Safety of Religion, the
‘ Parliament, and Kingdom in general; so, in par-
‘ ticular and in especial Manner, the Safety, Pro-
‘ sperity, Honour, and Advancement of your so well-
‘ deserving and renowned City.’

The *Scots* Army, being now ready to enter this Kingdom, only staid for the stipulated Sums, which had been agreed upon at *Edinburgh*, some Time before, by Commissioners on both Sides appointed for that Purpose. To this End the Commons sent up an Ordinance this Day, to the Lords, which they had framed, to hasten their March; which was readily agreed to by the latter. The Title thereof runs thus: *An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, for the Re- payment of all such Sums of Money as are, or shall be, lent by any Person or Persons, for the speedy bring-*
ing

ing of our Brethren of Scotland into this Realm, An. 19. Car. I.
for our Assistance in this present War. The Whole
of it is too long and tedious to be recited: But
the Preamble, declaring the Reasons of Parliament
for so extraordinary a Step, is too remarkable to be
omitted.

1643.

October.

THE the Lords and Commons assembled in An Ordinance
Parliament, taking into their serious Con- for raising of Mo-
sideration the treacherous and bloody Plots, Con- ney for bringing
spiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies the Scots Army
of God against the true Religion and Professors into England,
thereof in all Places, especially in the Kingdoms
of England, Scotland, and Ireland, ever since
the Reformation of Religion; and how much
their Rage, Power, and Presumption are of late,
and at this Time, increased and exercised, where-
of the deplorable Estate of the Church and King-
dom of Ireland, the distempered Estate of this
Church and Kingdom of England, and the dan-
gerous Estate of the Church and Kingdom of
Scotland, are present and public Testimonies;
and finding that their Supplications, Remonstran-
ces, Protestations, and Treaties, have nothing
at all prevailed; but that the adverse Party doth
still endeavour the Destruction of our Religion,
Laws, and Liberties, by Force and open Vio-
lence; and finding that the said Popish and Jesuit-
ed Councils and Practices, which have brought
the two Kingdoms of England and Ireland into
the lamentable Condition under which they now
groan, to have, in the Intentions of the Authors
and Contrivers of them, extended likewise into the
Kingdom of Scotland: In this common Distrac-
tion and Danger of all the Three Kingdoms, as an
effectual Means of their Preservation, they have
thought it necessary that all the Well-affected to
the true Protestant Religion and just Liberties of
the Subjects in the Three Kingdoms, should en-
ter into a nearer Union and Association for the
mutual Defence of each other; and, in pursuance
thereof, a Solemn League and Covenant, for
Re-

An. 10. Car. I.
1643.

October,

Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the Three Kingdoms, hath been agreed upon by the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*; which hath been already taken and subscribed by the Members of both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, the Members of the Assembly of Divines, and the Commissioners of the Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*; is now taking in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*; and is to be taken in all other Parts of this Kingdom, in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and in the Realm of *Ireland*:

And whereas each Person that hath taken, or shall take, the said Covenant, is bound, according to his Place and Calling, in this common Cause of Religion, Liberty, and Peace of the Kingdoms, to assist and defend all those that enter into the same, in the executing and pursuing thereof:

And that it cannot be expected that the Contrivers and Authors of our present Troubles will, thereby, be any whit moved to desist from their wicked Enterprizes, but rather that their Malice will be the more increased; therefore, for the better resisting thereof, and the speedier settling of a blessed Peace, there are likewise certain Articles agreed upon by the two Houses of Parliament and the Kingdom of *Scotland*, whereby, amongst other Things, our Brethren of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, for our Assistance in this present War, are speedily to send an Army of 21,000 Horse and Foot, and a Train of Artillery suitable, into this Kingdom:

And whereas the Charge of levying, arming, and bringing those Forces together furnished, as likewise the fitting the Train of Artillery, will necessarily require great Sums of Money, which our Brethren of *Scotland*, by reason of the many Charges that have lain upon them of late by their *Irish* Army and late Wars, are not able, at the present, to raise within that Kingdom; and so

much

much the rather, by reason that the Brotherly-
 Assistance Money is not yet paid unto them, we
 are, by these Articles, presently to pay unto them
 the Sum of 100,000 *l.* by way of Advance, to-
 wards the Monthly Payments to be made to their
 Army, after such Time as they shall make their
 first Entrance into this Kingdom; and by these
 Articles our Brethren of *Scotland*, to manifest their
 Willingness, to their utmost Ability, to be help-
 ful to the Kingdom in this common Cause, have
 agreed to give the Public Faith of the Kingdom
 of *Scotland*, to be jointly made Use of with the
 Public Faith of the Kingdom of *England*, for the
 present taking up of 200,000 *l. Sterling*, in the
 Kingdom of *England* or elsewhere, for speedy Pay-
 ment of the 100,000 *l. Sterling* as aforesaid, and
 towards satisfying, in good Proportion, the Ar-
 rears of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*:
 Be it ordained, &c.

An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 October.

Some Time after this, the *Scots* finding that
 the Money from *England* did not come so soon
 as was expected, they sent a Remonstrance over,
 alledging, 'That they saw plainly, by the Ces-
 sation of Arms in *Ireland*, that the Protestant Re-
 ligion was to be routed out there, and the whole
 Force of the Rebels turned against the *Scots* Ar-
 my in that Kingdom; which made the *Scots*
 take the Covenant unanimously; and they were
 resolved, their Eyes being now opened, to join
 with their Brethren of *England* in Defence and
 Preservation of Religion against the common Ene-
 my.

'That they had named all their Officers and list-
 ed all their Soldiers; their Artillery and Ammu-
 nition was at *Leith*, and they were making Pro-
 visions of Victual, as far as they were able. But
 they confessed, nay they said they were not asha-
 med to confess, their Want of Money; therefore
 they desired to have a speedy Supply, whereby
 they might be able to keep their Army together
 when it was in a Body. And whenever they
 should

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

October.

‘ should have proper Notice, from Parliament, of the Agreements, they would be ready to march to their Rendezvous in forty-eight Hours Time. Lastly, they desired that the Towns, stipulated for, might be taken into Consideration.’

Who publish a Proclamation, in the King's Name, for recruiting their Army.

It is necessary to be remembered in this Place, That, about the Middle of *August*, the Estates of *Scotland* had published a Proclamation in the King's Name, requiring all Persons, from sixteen to sixty, to appear in Arms, in Support and Defence of the Solemn League and Covenant. This the King was so highly incensed at, that, on the 16th of *September*, he wrote a Letter to the Council, setting forth, ‘ That he had, with great Amazement, seen a Paper, most impudently published without his Privy or Authority, tending to cast the beloved People of his Native Kingdom into the like bloody Combustions and rebellious Violation of their Religion and Allegiance, as those already in *England*: Forbidding all Obedience to the said Proclamation, and all other Papers published in his Name, which should not immediately be warranted by himself: And commanding this his Letter to be published, and also recorded in the Books of the Privy Council there.’—What Regard was paid to this will appear under the Proceedings of the next Month.

Proceedings against Baron Trevor, in the Case of Ship-Money.

October 18. Sir *Thomas Trevor*, Knight, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, who had been concerned in the Business of Ship-Money, and impeached by the House of Commons for the same, delivered in his Answer, this Day, to the Charge: Likewise a Petition to the Lords, acknowledging, That his Opinion and Judgment, in that Case, was given according to his Conscience, without any Corruption or sinister End whatsoever; which he then conceived to be, also, according to Law: But since the Parliament had declared it to be contrary to the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, he acknow-

ledged

c This Proclamation at large, and the King's Letter, are in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 482.

ledged his Error of Judgment therein, and is most heartily sorry for the same; humbly submitting it, and whatsoever else he is charged withall by the said Impeachment, to their Lordships' Judgment and favourable Consideration. It was ordered that this should be communicated to the House of Commons, and to acquaint them, that the Lords would give Judgment against Baron Trevor the next Morning. Accordingly,

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
October.

Oct. 19. The Lords being in their Robes, and the Commons, with their Speaker, come up, and demanding Judgment as usual, the Speaker of the House of Lords pronounced the following Sentence:

I. *That the said Sir Thomas Trevor shall be* ^{His Sentence} *fin'd in the Sum of 6000 l. to be forthwith paid and disposed of for the Service of the Kingdom^b.*

II. *That he shall be imprisoned in the Tower of London during the Pleasure of this House.*

But, upon another Petition from the Baron, he was released from his Imprisonment the next Day, and continued to act in his Place.

The Judges being thus humbled, the Commons revived their Prosecution of the Archbishop of Canterbury, with so much Vigour as, afterwards, to bring him to the Block.—Preparatory to this,

Oct. 23. The Lords read the Articles of Im- ^{Abp. Laud's} ^{Trial.} peachment, for High Treason, against him, which had been sent up by the Commons two Days before; and ordered that the Archbishop should have a Copy of the Articles sent him, and a proper Time assigned him to put in his Answer.

Nothing more occurs, worth our Notice, in October.

The Month of November begins with a Recital of the several Articles, to be agreed on between the Parliament of England and the Convention of the Estates

^b This corrects a Mistake of Lord Clarendon, who makes Sir Thomas Trevor's Fine the same as Sir Robert Berkeley's,

432 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

November.

Estates of *Scotland*; which upon reading *seriatim*, in the House of Lords, were severally agreed to: Particularly, to pay the *Scots* 100,000*l.* as soon as it could be raised, either upon their own Credit, or on the Credit of both Kingdoms. But we shall postpone these Articles till they come to be fully concluded; and, in the Interim, present the Reader with a Copy of some additional Instructions, sent at the same Time, along with the said Articles, to the Parliament's Commissioners at *Edinburgh*^a, which are not taken Notice of in the Collections of these Times.

Additional Instructions to the Parliament's Commissioners in *Scotland*.

I. ' **Y**OU shall make known to our Brethren of *Scotland*, That the Propositions expressed in the Paper of the 25th of *August* last, sent from *Scotland*, concerning the Assistance desired by both Houses from that Kingdom, as also the Proposition concerning the settling a Garrison in *Berwick*, have been taken into Consideration by the two Houses; and have been, by them, agreed and consented unto, without any material or considerable Alterations.

II. ' You are therefore authorized and required, according to these Votes of the two Houses, herewith sent you, to agree and conclude, in the Name of both Houses, the said Propositions, and to perfect the respective Treaties in that Behalf, with all Expedition; and thereupon to hasten, all that possibly may be, the Assistance expected from that Kingdom; and to suffer no further Time to be lost in that Behalf, considering what Money for the present can be raised is now sent away to them; and no Diligence shall be wanting to procure and convey to them what remains, according to the Treaty, so far as our present Straits and Extremities will possibly permit.

III.

^a In these additional Instructions the following Persons were appointed Commissioners, besides those named in the first Instructions, (p. 340 in this Volume) viz. *Robert Goodwyn*, *Richard Barwis*, *Bryan Stapylton*, and *Robert Fenwick*, Esqrs, *John Kendrick*, Alderman, and Mr. *Francis Allen*.

III. ' And whereas, by the said Treaties, several
 ' Things are to be performed and done by the joint
 ' Advice of both Kingdoms, or their Commissioners
 ' thereunto authorized, which cannot be so well
 ' transacted but by those that shall be upon the
 ' Place; you have therefore hereby full Power and
 ' Authority given you to come into this Kingdom
 ' with the *Scots* Army, and to advise, debate, and
 ' conclude with our Brethren of *Scotland*, or such as
 ' shall be authorized by them thereunto; and, by
 ' joint Advice with them, to put in Execution all
 ' such Matters and Things concerning the Well-
 ' ordering, Directing, Disposal, and Accommoda-
 ' tion of the Forces brought in and employed by
 ' them for our Assistance, as shall be found requisite
 ' and needful, from Time to Time, for the Prose-
 ' cution of this Cause, and the Ends expressed in the
 ' Covenant, now solemnly sworn and entered into
 ' in both Nations, and in the Propositions now sent
 ' unto you; and you are to acquaint the two Houses
 ' with your Proceedings and Conclusions in the same,
 ' from Time to Time, and to receive and observe
 ' such further Directions from them as they shall
 ' think fit.

An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 November.

IV. ' You shall also take Care, and are hereby
 ' fully authorized, to sequester, in the Counties of
 ' *Nottingham*, *York*, *Bishoprick of Durham*, *Nor-*
 ' *thumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Westmoreland*, and
 ' in the Town and County of *Newcastle upon Tyne*,
 ' in the City and County of the City of *York*, in the
 ' Town and County of the Town of *Nottingham*,
 ' in the Town and County of the Town of *Kingston*
 ' upon *Hull*, and in the Town and Port of *Berwick*,
 ' the Estates of such Persons as, by any Ordinance
 ' or Ordinances of Parliament, are, or have been,
 ' declared to be sequestrable, or shall hereafter be so
 ' declared; and to proceed therein as in your Di-
 ' rections you shall find to be most advantageous to
 ' the Public Service, to the Intent that the Profits
 ' arising thereupon may be employed for and to-
 ' ward the Payment of the said Forces, and of such

434 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

Forces of this Kingdom as are, or shall be, raised and employed by the two Houses of Parliament in the said Counties, Cities, and Towns; and otherwise for the defraying of such Charges as shall grow due for and by reason of their Assistance of us in this War: And you shall have Power to make Allowance to such Persons as shall be necessarily employed in the Execution of the Premises, as shall be meet; and shall, from Time to Time, give in an Account, in Writing, of your Proceedings in this Business to both Houses: And all Lord-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, and other Officers and Ministers whatsoever, are hereby enjoined and required to be aiding and assisting to you herein, as in all Things else that shall concern the Good of this Service and the public Interests of both Kingdoms, expressed in the Covenant.

V. And forasmuch as the two Houses do hold it of absolute Necessity, that Commissioners from the Kingdom of Scotland should be forthwith sent to reside in London, or elsewhere near the Parliament, with sufficient Power and Authority to treat and conclude of all such Things as shall be necessary for the Good of the Three Kingdoms in pursuance of the Covenant and of the late Treaty; with a further Power to send some of themselves, or any others by joint Consent of this Kingdom, to any the Parts beyond the Seas for the procuring of Monies, or the Engagement of other States in the Common Cause; you shall therefore, with all Earnestness, press this Article, as that without which the whole Business is like to become very dilatory, if not wholly fruitless.

VI. You are likewise to advise with our Brethren of Scotland, of the Ways and Means whereby the Public Faith of that Kingdom may be engaged and made beneficial for the raising and discharging of the 200,000*l.* to be advanced according to the Treaty.

VII

VII. ' You are likewise to make known to our Brethren of *Scotland* the Votes of both Houses concerning the Cessation of *Ireland*, lately concluded by Pretence of his Majesty's Authority; and that it is the Resolution of both Houses to oppose to the utmost, as long as God shall enable them thereunto, the said Cessation; and to encourage, as far as lies in their Power, all those Forces, as well *Scots* as other *British* there, for the utter subduing of the Rebels, and Prevention of their setting up Popery in that Kingdom; and to this End they will speedily take Care to make Provision of Victuals, Cloaths, and other Necessaries, for the Subsistence of those Forces which they will send over, with all Speed, into that Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
November.

VIII. ' You are also to consider, with our Brethren of *Scotland*, of the fittest and best Ways and Means for the ordering of the *Scots* and other *British* Forces in *Ireland*, at the easiest Expence and Charge to both Kingdoms, and in such Manner as may best prosecute that War, and the Ends expressed in the Covenant; and to draw up the same in Propositions to be presented speedily to the Consideration of both Houses. And, in the mean Season, you are authorized to settle upon some Course with our Brethren of *Scotland*, by the joint Advice of the Commissioners of both Kingdoms, to manage that War and to prevent the present Evils; and speedily to make known to both Houses what you shall do herein.

IX. ' You are also, for the Encouragement of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*, to let our Brethren know, that we will hasten away, with all Speed, the 60,000*l.* promised, the 10,000 Suits of Cloaths, and such other Necessaries as we shall be able to provide: And you are to treat and consider, with our Brethren of *Scotland*, of the Ways that lie in the Power of the two Houses, to give them Satisfaction for the Remainder of the Arrears

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

November.

owing to the said Army, it being impossible, for the present, to pay them in Money.

X. 'You are to cause the Account of the Scots Army in *Ireland*, for Pay of the Officers and Soldiers, to be made up according to the Establishment of the *English* Army there, from the Time of each Regiment and Company's first Landing and Muster by Mr. *Kennedy*, untill the Day of Mr. *Clayton's* Muster in *September*, 1642, and from thence according to Mr. *Clayton's* Muster-Rolls, especially such as were taken this last Year; which Account is to be delivered to the Auditors for the Wars in *Ireland* to ingross, and to present the same to the Commons' House of Parliament; and, for this End, the Clerk of the said House and the Auditor are to deliver you Certificates, under their Hands, of the Particulars of the said Establishment; and if any Doubts shall arise thereupon, you are hereby authorized, according to Right and Equity, to endeavour the Removal of the same, that the Account may have a final Determination.'

The Earl of *Holland*, who had joined the King at *Oxford*, comes back to the Parliament.

November 6. An Account was brought to the House of Lords, that the Earl of *Holland*°, who had been with the King some Time, was taken by a Party of the Parliament's Forces: Hereupon he was ordered to be committed to the Custody of the Black Rod; but, upon Examination, it being found that his Lordship had left the King, and was returning to Parliament, he was set at Liberty. However, this Earl had a narrow Escape in the House of Commons; for a Motion for sending him to the Tower passed in the Negative, by only 59 against 58; as did another for his being made Prisoner elsewhere, by 59 against 56.—Mr. *Whitlocke* writes, That when his Lordship was examined he said, 'That when he heard of the Cessation in *Ireland*, his Conscience would not give him Leave to stay any longer with them at *Oxford*.'—But Lord *Clarendon* imputes the Earl's

Return to the Parliament to the cold Reception he found at *Oxford*, 'Where he expected, upon his first Appearance, to have had his Key restored to him; to have been in the same Condition he was in the Bed-Chamber, and in the Council, and in the King's Grace and Countenance; for he thought nothing of former Miscarriages ought to be remembered; that all those were cancelled by the Merit of coming to the King now, and bringing such considerable Persons with him, and disposing others to follow ^a.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
November.

November 10. The Commons had framed an Ordinance relating to their new Great Seal, which the Lords were not over hasty to agree to; at last, on repeated Messages from the Commons about it, the Lords passed it this Day, with some few Alterations; to which the Commons having agreed, the same was ordered to be printed and published as follows:

'**W**Hereas the Great Seal of *England*, which, by the Laws of this Realm, ought to attend the Parliament, being the Supreme Court of Justice and Judicature within this Realm, for the Dispatch of the great and weighty Affairs of the Commonwealth, which is especially interested and concerned therein, was, above a Year last past, (that is to say, the 22d Day of *May*, 1642) by the then Lord-Keeper thereof, *Edward Lord Littleton*, then a Member and Speaker of the House of Peers in Parliament, contrary to the great Trust in him reposed, and Duty of his Place, secretly and perfidiously conveyed away from the Parliament into the King's Army, raised against the Parliament; the said Lord-Keeper, departing therewith into the said Army, without the Leave or Privy of the said House; by Means whereof great Mischiefs and Inconveniences have ensued to this Kingdom, and the Kingdom of *Ireland*:

E e 3

And

^a The Earls of *Bedford*, *Clare*, &c. of whom more hereafter.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

‘ And whereas the said Great Seal ought constantly to remain in the Hands and Custody of one or more Officer or Officers, sworn for that Service, and to be used and employed for the Weal and Safety of his Majesty’s People ; which, notwithstanding, hath been divers Times, since the conveying away thereof as aforesaid, put into the Hands of other Persons not sworn, and positively and dangerously affected, who have had the disposing and managing thereof at their own Wills and Pleasures ; and hath been traiterously and perniciously abused, to the Ruin and Destruction of the Parliament and Kingdom, by granting and issuing out divers illegal Commissions of Array, and other unlawful Commissions for raising of Forces against the Parliament ; by issuing out most foul and scandalous Papers, under the Name and Title of Proclamations, against both Houses of Parliament, and divers Members thereof, and others adhering to them, and proclaiming them Traitors and Rebels ; Commissions of Oyer and Terminer, to proceed against divers of them as Traitors, and other Commissions to seize and confiscate their Estates, for no other Cause, but for doing their Duties and Services to the Commonwealth ; as likewise by granting that horrid Commission, for executing of that most bloody and detestable Design of *Waller* and *Tompkins*, and others, for the Destruction of the Parliament and City of *London*, and of the Army raised for their just Defence ; and (as if Massacres and Assassinations had been but light and venial Crimes) another Commission hath been granted, under the same Seal, for a Cessation of Arms with the barbarous and bloody Rebels in *Ireland*, after the Effusion of so much innocent Blood, and Slaughter of above 100,000 Protestants, Men, Women, and Children, by their merciless and bloody Hands ; whereby a Cessation of Arms is accordingly concluded, and those brutish Rebels thereby emboldened to prepare them-

themselves, not only for a total Extirpation of
the Protestants remaining there, but for a Con-
quest also of this Kingdom: And further, by
granting of several Commissions, and Offices of
Trust and Command, to notorious Papists; who,
by the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, are
made incapable thereof; and by conferring of
Honours and Dignities, and granting of Lands
and Estates to divers exorbitant Delinquents,
who stand legally impeached of High Treason and
other High Crimes and Misdemeanors in Parlia-
ment:

All which, and many other unlawful and enor-
mous Acts, have passed under the said Great
Seal, since the Removal thereof from the Par-
liament as aforesaid: Which the Lords and
Commons taking into their Consideration, and
finding all Ways and Means obstructed for the
procuring of any Redress from his Majesty in
the Premises, notwithstanding their long Hopes
and incessant Labours for the obtaining thereof,
are bound, in Duty and of Necessity, to provide
some speedy Remedy for these insupportable Mis-
chiefs:

Be it therefore declared and ordained by the
said Lords and Commons assembled in Parlia-
ment, That as well all and every the said Acts
formerly mentioned, which have passed under
the said Great Seal, as also all Letters Patent
and Grants of any Lands, Goods, or Estates,
of any Person or Persons whatsoever, for adhe-
ring to the Parliament; all Compositions or
Grants of any Wardships, or Leases of any Wards,
Lands, Liveries, *Prmier Seisins & Ouster les*
Maines, since the said 22d Day of May, 1642,
which have not, according to the due Course
of Law, passed through the Court of Wards
and Liveries, established by Law: All Grants
since the said 22d of May, 1642, of any Ho-
nours, Dignities, Manors, Lands, Heredita-
ments, or other Thing whatsoever, to any Per-
son

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
November.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

son or Persons, which have voluntarily contributed, or shall voluntarily contribute, any Aid or Assistance to the Maintenance of the unnatural War raised against the Parliament; and all Pardons granted to any such Person or Persons; and all other Acts or Things whatsoever, contrary to, or in Derogation of, the Proceedings of both or either House of Parliament, which have passed under the said Great Seal, since the Removal thereof from the Parliament, shall be, and are hereby declared to be, utterly Invalid, Void, and of none Effect, to all Intents and Purposes.

And that all and every Act or Thing, which, after the Publication of this Ordinance, shall pass by, or under, the said Great Seal, or under any Great Seal of *England*, (other than what is hereby appointed and established) shall be utterly Void, Frustrate, and of none Effect; and every Person or Persons, which shall put the same in Use, or shall claim any Thing thereby, shall be held and adjudged a public Enemy of this State.

And be it further ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That a Great Seal of *England*, already by them made and provided, shall be forthwith put in Use; and shall be, and is hereby authorized and established to be, of like Force, Power, and Validity, to all Intents and Purposes as any Great Seal of *England* hath been, or ought to be.

And that it shall be put into the Hands and Custody of the Persons hereafter named, who are hereby ordained Commissioners for that Purpose; that is to say, *John* Earl of *Rutland*, and *Oliver* Earl of *Bolingbroke*, Members of the House of Peers; *Oliver St. John*, Esq; his Majesty's Solicitor-General °, *John Wilde*, Serjeant at

° The Parliament continued to give Mr. *St. John* the Title of Solicitor-General, though his Majesty had long before revoked his Patent, and conferred that Office on Sir *Thomas Gardner*, who had been put out of his Place of Recorder of *London* by the Parliament on Account of his taking Part with the King.

‘at Law, *Samuel Brown* and *Edmund Prideaux*, An. 19. Car. I.
 ‘Esqrs. Members of the House of Commons; 1643.
 ‘which said Persons, or any three or more of them,
 ‘whereof one Member or more of the Lords’ House,
 ‘also one Member or more of the House of Com-
 ‘mons, shall be present, shall have, and are hereby
 ‘authorized to have, the Keeping, Ordering, and
 ‘Disposing thereof; as also all such and the like
 ‘Power and Authority, as any Lord-Chancellor,
 ‘or Lord-Keeper, or Commissioner of the Great
 ‘Seal, for the Time being, hath had, used, or
 ‘ought to have.’

November.

Mr. *Whitlocke* informs us, ‘That the Earl of
Rutland, appointed one of the Commissioners by the
 foregoing Ordinance, desired to be excused, as not
 understanding the Law, nor the Oath to be taken:
 Whereupon the Earl of *Kent* (whom Lord *Claren-*
don styles a Man of far meaner Parts) readily ac-
 cepted the Place.’

A few Days after the new Great Seal was car-
 ried up by the Speaker of the House of Commons,
 the whole House attending him, and delivered to
 the Speaker of the Lords’ House; who, in the Pre-
 sence of both Houses, delivered it to the Commis-
 sioners; and they all took an Oath to execute the
 Office of Keepers of the Great Seal of *England*, in
 all Things according to the Orders and Directions
 of both Houses of Parliament; the Speaker of the
 Peers swearing the two Lords, and Mr. *Brown*,
 Clerk to the Parliament, the four Commoners. It
 was then carried to Mr. *Brown*’s House, in the *Old*
Palace, and put into a Chest, with three different
 Locks; not to be opened but when three of the
 Commissioners were present.

Nov. 11. A Memorial was presented to the
 House of Lords, from the Ambassador of *France*,
 and read: It was in *French*, and the Purport of
 it was to make Proposals, in general, for an Ac-
 commodation between the King and Parliament, in
 ‘the

442 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I. the Name of the *French King*. The Lords having communicated this Memorial to the Commons, after a Day or two's Consideration, returned this Answer :

The Parliament's Answer to the French Ambassador's Proposal for an Accommodation.

‘ The Lords having received from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, Ambassador Extraordinary in *England*, by the Earl of *Northumberland*, a Paper in *hac Verba*, &c. and having communicated it to the Commons, both Houses, upon Consideration thereof, do think fit that this Answer shall be returned thereunto: That the Lords and Commons, assembled in the Parliament of *England*, will always, with due Respects, acknowledge such good Affection, as from the King his Master and the Queen his Mistress shall be, at any Time, expressed to the King and these Kingdoms: Professing that they desire nothing more than such a Peace, as may as well procure Honour and Happiness to the King, as the Preservation of the true Reformed Religion, the Privileges of Parliament, and the Liberty of the Subjects, in his Majesty's Three Kingdoms, according to their late Solemn League and Covenant. And when the Prince *D'Harcourt* shall, from and in the Name of the King his Master, propose any Thing to the Lords and Commons, assembled in the Parliament of *England*, they will thereupon do that which shall be fit, and which shall justify their Proceedings to all the World; and that they had been forced to take up Arms for their own just and necessary Defence.’

The Archbishop of Canterbury pleads, Not guilty.

Nov. 13. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* was brought to the Bar of the House of Lords, and required, by them, to give in his Answer to the Impeachment of the House of Commons against him. Which Answer was very short; for it only says, ‘ That all Exceptions to the said Articles of Impeachment to this Defendant saved, he saith, He is not guilty of all or any the Matters charged by the said Impeachment, in such Manner and Form

Form as are, by the said Articles, charged against him. The Archbishop then made a Speech, and was remanded to the Tower.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
November.

Nov. 20. An Ordinance, very necessary at this Time, was agreed to by both Houses, concerning the Preservation of Records, &c. the Preamble to which was as follows :

Whereas by the several Ordinances of Sequestration, &c. there have been, within the Cities of London and Westminster, sequestred and taken by Distress, amongst other Goods, divers Manuscripts, or written Books, Proceedings of Courts, Evidences of Lands, Rentals, Account-Books, and other Kind of Writings and written Papers and Parchments ; as also some whole Libraries, and choice Collections of printed Books of several Arts and Faculties ; the Dispersing of which, by Sale and otherwise, may be much more disadvantageous and prejudicial to the Public, both for the present and for Posterity, and also to divers particular Persons well-affected to the Parliament, than the Benefit of their Sale can anywise recompense :

Therefore the Lords and Commons do ordain, &c. d.

An Affair happened, this Day also, in the House of Commons, which fully shews the Miseries the whole Kingdom was driven to, when the Capital of it had so large a Share. This will be best expressed by an Abstract out of the Journals of the Commons themselves, and needs no other Introduction.

The House being informed that divers of the Committee of the Militia of London were at the Door, and desired to propound something to the House, they were called in : And Mr. Speaker, by

Com-

About this Time the Parliament appointed William Lenthall, Esq; Speaker of the House of Commons, to be Master of the Rolls, and John Selden, Esq; Keeper of the Records in the Tower.

Whitlocke, p. 73.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

November.

Command of the House, acquainted them that they had Liberty to speak: Whereupon Alderman *Gibbs* spoke as follows:

‘ That they are of the Militia of *London*, and are sent by them to make known to this House, that the City of *London* is, at this Time, under two great Wants, and desire Leave to express them.

I. ‘ They are in great Want of Money, and desire you should know the Causes of it.

‘ It is not unknown that we have advanced great Sums, at several Times, being thereto solicited by several Members of this House, both for this Kingdom and the Kingdom of *Ireland*; and have received several Securities for Repayment of them; as the Royal Subsidy, the Twentieth Part, the Weekly Assessments, and other Engagements; but, of all these, nor of any one of these, have we received any Benefit.

‘ We humbly recommend unto you the Remedy, That the Members of this Honourable House may be encouraged to make use of their Interests, in their several Counties, for the collecting and bringing up those Monies, that we may be the better able to do you Service: The Want of it doth admit of great Inconvenience, for where the King’s Party break in, they get the Money; and the State, in the mean Time, pays Use for it; and we are disenabled for the Want of it.

‘ Another Occasion of our great Wants is, those many Disbursements, at several Times, for our several Services, that we have made; and the many Provisions we have issued for Arms, Ammunition, and Victuals, upon extreme Exigents, for my Lord-General’s Army: We have likewise issued out great Engagements to our Army that went twice into *Kent* and *Gloucester*, and done those great Services: We have issued out great Sums of Money, to raise Forces under Sir *William Waller*, when he was broken all to Pieces; and some to those Forces now abroad.

‘ When

‘ When our Accounts are settled, we shall then
 ‘ crave Leave to tender them unto you ; whereupon,
 ‘ we hope, we shall receive Satisfaction ; for, since
 ‘ we bear the Charge of the Kingdom, we should
 ‘ be repaid out of the Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. 1.
 1643.
 November.

‘ Our Forces, now abroad, want Money ; two
 ‘ Regiments of Horse, consisting of 14 Troops,
 ‘ and three Regiments of Foot, under the Com-
 ‘ mand of my Lord-General, have been abroad
 ‘ above a Month ; besides three Regiments with Sir
 ‘ *William Waller* : Ten thousand Pounds for those
 ‘ with my Lord-General ; and four or five thou-
 ‘ sand to those with Sir *William Waller*. They are
 ‘ Citizens, civilly bred, and cannot make use of
 ‘ those Means for their Supply, as other common
 ‘ Soldiers do that are used to the War ; and now
 ‘ are brought to those Necessities that they must
 ‘ come home. We have used our utmost En-
 ‘ deavour to supply them ; but, at present, we can-
 ‘ not help them. We have addressed ourselves to
 ‘ my Lord-General, hoping to have had some of
 ‘ the Monies that was going to my Lord-General,
 ‘ for the Payment of our Forces. My Lord-Gene-
 ‘ ral declared he was not able to spare it, unless it
 ‘ be the three thousand Pounds allotted him for the
 ‘ recruiting his Army ; and what ill Consequence
 ‘ this may produce, I am sorry to mention.

2. ‘ You are not ignorant that, for these many
 ‘ Months past, my Lord-General hath wanted
 ‘ Recruiting ; and so weak, that he hath not been
 ‘ able to do the Service of the Kingdom, or re-
 ‘ strain the Enemy from enlarging his Quarters.
 ‘ Consider, our City Forces were raised for the
 ‘ Guard of the City, and are Tradesmen, and
 ‘ when they are abroad their Plow lieth still at
 ‘ home ; and, besides, they lose their Employ-
 ‘ ment ; and you cannot be ignorant that, if the
 ‘ Course be continued, it will be a great Wasting of
 ‘ Men.

‘ For preventing whereof this Remedy is of-
 ‘ fered, That my Lord-General’s Army be spee-
 dily

446 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
November.

dily recruited; and that the City of *London* may be considered of as a Place that hath much advanced, and is drawn dry: Our rich Men are gone, because the City is the Place of Taxes and Burdens: Trade is decayed, and our Shops shut up in a great Measure: Our Poor do much increase: We desire you, for future Taxes, that they may bear but their Proportion, and not be over-burdened. I should be loath to be misunderstood, that any that hear me should think we begin to be discouraged in the Service of the Parliament: Though our Difficulties be great, nay, if far greater, we shall no ways alter our Resolutions; but, according to our Covenant, do our Endeavours. We are not able, neither are we willing, to bear those Reproaches cast upon us, who do alledge that we are a turbulent and factious People, and seditious; all for War, and will admit of no Peace on any Terms. These are bitter Aspersions out of black Mouths and bitter Pens. We are not willing to anticipate, but wait upon the Great Council, so we are not willing to bear such Aspersions; for it is Peace we pray for and fight for; but such a Peace as is for the Glory of God, and Safety of Religion: And this we desire to live to see, and to die rather than to outlive it; and do wait your Time to take such Opportunity, in these Things, as may stand with your great Occasions; and, till then, we remain your humble Servants. This one Word more we desire to leave with you, To supply us with Monies as may lead us out of these Difficulties.

The Aldermen and Citizens were again called in, and Mr. Speaker, by the Command of the House, acquainted them, That the House had considered of what they had propounded unto them, and found it to be full of Weight, and to deserve a sadder and further Consideration, than to give a sudden and particular Answer unto: They had and would distribute it into such Way of Proceedings, as might give them the speediest and clearest

clearest Satisfaction. The House hath likewise taken Notice, how, upon all Occasions, they have expressed their Affections to the Public; and how, at this Time, they have assured them of their constant Resolution to continue in the Defence of Religion, Liberty, and Privileges of Parliament. He is commanded to return them, and by them the whole Committee of the Militia and City, hearty Thanks for their true Love and Zeal to the Public; and to assure them, that neither in the Desires that they have now propounded, nor in any Thing else that may advance the Public Security, shall they want the Encouragement and Assistance of this House.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
November.

Nov. 25. Amongst some other Papers of less Note, sent from *Scotland*, were read, in the House of Lords, Copies of two Letters from the King to the Council of State in that Kingdom: The Purport of the former, which was occasioned by a Proclamation they had issued, in the King's Name, requiring all Persons from sixteen to sixty to appear in Arms in Defence of the Solemn League and Covenant, we have already given. The other, which may be called his Majesty's last Effort to stop the advancing of the *Scots* Army farther into *England*, with the Council's Answer to it, are too interesting to bear any Abridgement; and we therefore give them as they stand in the *Lords' Journals*. And, first, the King's Letter, dated from *Oxford* the 26th of *September*, 1643.

CHARLES R.

Right Trusty and Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors, &c. we greet you well,

‘**N**O Industry could hitherto so far have prevailed with us to gain any Belief that our *Scots* Subjects would countenance, much less assist, this bloody Rebellion in *England*; yet we know not how to understand the levying of Forces, both Horse and Foot, within our native Kingdom, and the entering of our Town of *Berwick* in an hostile

The King's Letter to the *Scots* Council of State, against marching their Army into *England*.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

November.

‘ hostile Manner. You are particularly trusted
 ‘ by us and our Parliament (and solemnly sworn)
 ‘ to be faithful in the Discharge of your Trust
 ‘ of seeing the Articles of the late Treaty observed,
 ‘ which here are most grossly violated ; therefore
 ‘ we require you, as you will be answerable to
 ‘ God, to us, and to our Parliament, to take a
 ‘ speedy and present Order for recalling and suppress-
 ‘ ing these Forces.

‘ Our most malicious Enemies must bear us
 ‘ Witness how religiously we have observed these
 ‘ Articles on our Part ; whereof if we had not
 ‘ been more tender than the Advisers of this Breach
 ‘ have been of the Public Faith, it is obvious to any
 ‘ how easily we could have secured that Town from
 ‘ all Rebels.

‘ We have likewise thought fit to take Notice of
 ‘ the present Preparation in that our Kingdom, of
 ‘ raising an Army, by a new Authority, to come into
 ‘ our Kingdom of *England*, under a Pretence of se-
 ‘ curing themselves from the Invasions of a Popish
 ‘ and Prelatical Army, falsely alledged to be upon
 ‘ the Borders ; such Forces as we have there being
 ‘ only for protecting of our distressed Subjects of
 ‘ *Berwick* and the *Holy-Island* from the Invasion of
 ‘ the Rebels by their Ships, and for no other End :
 ‘ Such then as shelter themselves under that Pretext
 ‘ will find, from these, but a slender Warrant be-
 ‘ fore God, who knows the Integrity of our Heart ;
 ‘ and how inviolably we intend to preserve all that
 ‘ we have granted unto that Kingdom, so long as
 ‘ they shall suffer themselves to be capable of our
 ‘ Protection and those Favours.

‘ Therefore we do require you not only to oppose
 ‘ and suppress all such unwarrantable Levies ; but,
 ‘ by your public Declarations, to disabuse those Re-
 ‘ bels in *England*, who endeavour to engage you
 ‘ in their Rebellions, and accept Assistance from
 ‘ you.

‘ In all which we look for your ready Obedience ;
 ‘ and, expecting a present Account thereof, we bid
 ‘ you heartily farewell.’

Next

Next was read a Copy of the Privy Council of An. 19. Car. I.
Scotland's Answer to the King at Oxford, dated at
Edinburgh the 19th of October.

1643.
 November.

Most Sacred Sovereign,

WE received your Majesty's two Letters of Their Answer,
 the 16th and 26th of *September* last; and
 as we shall ever be ready, by our Example, and
 Authority which your Majesty and Parliament
 hath committed to us, to render and procure sub-
 miss and ready Obedience to all your Majesty's
 just Commands; so we cannot, out of the Sense
 of our Duty and Trust put upon us, but express
 our unfeigned Grief and Sorrow, that any should
 presume to give such sinister Informations and
 hard Impressions to your Majesty, of the Ge-
 neral Assembly of the Kirk of God and three
 Estates of this Kingdom; to brand their Pro-
 ceedings with so heavy Imputations, as the Vio-
 lation of their Religion, Allegiance to your Ma-
 jesty, and Laws of this Kingdom; and procu-
 ring such Commandments as cannot, without
 Violation of all these, be obtempered. The en-
 tering into a mutual League and Covenant was
 resolved upon by the General Assembly and Con-
 vention of Estates, after a mature Deliberation,
 as a chief Means for Preservation of Religion,
 your Majesty's Honour and Happiness, and the
 Peace and Safety of your Kingdoms; and being
 embraced, as it now is in *England*, was thought
 fit to be enjoined to be taken by all your Maje-
 sty's Subjects; and is accordingly, before the Re-
 ceipt of your Majesty's Letters, ordained, by the
 Commissioners of the General Assembly and Com-
 mittee of Estates, to be, with all religious Solem-
 nities, sworn and subscribed by all your Majesty's
 Subjects of this Kingdom; as your Majesty
 may perceive by the several Acts prefixed to the
 Covenant, which we have herewith sent to your
 Majesty.

VOL. XII.

F f

And

An. 39. Car. 1.

1643

November.

‘ And since the General Assembly and Convention of Estates have thought fit and ordained this Covenant to be entered into, and that all who do take the same do solemnly swear, That they have no other End before their Eyes, but the Glory of God, the Preservation of Religion, your Majesty’s Honour, and the true public Liberties and Peace of these Kingdoms ; it is our earnest Prayer, and would be our exceeding great Joy, that your Majesty, as Defender of the Faith, and Monarch of the Three Kingdoms, would, to the Rejoicing of the People of God, and Terror to all the Enemies of Religion, and of your Majesty’s Greatness and Happiness, join your Royal Consent and Authority, and be the chief Maintainer and Promoter of this Covenant.

‘ The Proclamation of the 18th of *August*, by the Convention of Estates, wants not the Warrant of your Majesty’s Royal Authority ; for the whole Proclamations and Citations given out by any of your Majesty’s Judicatories of this Kingdom, are, and ever have been, by the Laws and inviolable Practice thereof, emitted in your Majesty’s Name ; and if all the Proclamations, not immediately warranted by your Majesty’s Self, shall be disobeyed, there can be no Obedience given here to your Majesty’s Laws, which is the surest Rule of Obedience.

‘ And as the Estates of this your Majesty’s Kingdom, during the Time of the late Convention, from the Apprehension of imminent Dangers to Religion, your Majesty’s Person, and Peace of this Kingdom, thought then fit to put this Kingdom into a Posture of Defence, so doth the late Cessation in *Ireland* ; whereby the Popish Rebels (who are termed, in the said Cessation, your Majesty’s Catholic Subjects, and who have massacred many Thousand Protestant Subjects there) are authorized to provide themselves with all Sorts of Arms and Ammunition, not only in your Majesty’s Kingdoms, but also in all other Kingdoms

Kingdoms and States with whom your Majesty
 is in League; and to prosecute all your Majesty's
 Protestant Subjects who shall not embrace the
 Cessation offered, which is another just Ground
 to all your Majesty's Protestant Subjects, to join
 the more speedily and heartily in this mutual
 League and Covenant, for the Defence of the
 Protestant Religion, your Majesty's Honour, and
 for their own Safety: And as, by the Duty of our
 Place, we are obliged to this Freedom; so we
 are confident that your Majesty, in your Royal
 Wisdom, will, according to the Loyalty and
 Sincerity of our Intentions, favourably construct
 that we cannot record nor publish these your Ma-
 jesty's Letters; as that which would but grieve
 the Hearts of your good Subjects, and prove
 most disadvantageous to your Majesty's Service;
 which we shall ever study to advance, with
 that Affection and Fidelity which becometh
 us.

An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 December.

Nothing else material occurring in this Month,
 we proceed to *December*.

The Assembly of Divines, sitting at *Westminster*,
 had made many Orders of Synod, which they pre-
 sented to both Houses for their Approbation. These
 are, in some Measure, foreign to our Purpose, and
 too tedious to bear Recital: But, as a Specimen of
 the Purity of their Intentions, and their earnest En-
 deavours towards reforming both the Religion and
 Morals of a wicked Age, take the following Ex-
 tract from the *Lords' Journals*.

Dec. 1. The House was informed that some Di-
 vines were ready at the Door, to offer something to
 this House, from the Assembly; hereupon the Lords
 ordered they should be called in, and Dr. *Burgesse*,
 Mr. *Calamy*, Mr. *Obadiab Sedgewick*, and Mr.
Chambers, presented to the House a Petition, which
 was read as followeth:

An. 19. Car. I. To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in
1643.
Parliament,

December.

The humble MESSAGE and PETITION of the Assembly of Divines.

Petition from the
Assembly of Divines,
to appoint
Godly Magistrates, &c.

THE Assembly of Divines, in all Humility and Discharge of their Duty to God and to this Honourable House, do inform your Lordships of the sad Complaints brought unto them from many Godly and Reverend Divines in and about London, concerning the daily Increase and Growth of all Manner of outrageous and intolerable Abominations; such as Drunkenness, Swearing, Uncleaness, and other crying Sins, in very many Places in this Kingdom, for Want of Godly and Zealous Magistrates to repress the same; which cannot but highly provoke the Lord to more Wrath against this Kingdom, in this Day of his Wrath already broken out upon his People, and render fruitless all your pious Endeavours for the Reformation and Weal of this Kingdom, unless it be effectually and speedily cured.

The Assembly, therefore, most humbly prayeth, That, according to your great Wisdom and Zeal for the Public, there may be a speedy appointing and settling of some Able, Godly, Prudent Magistrates, that may reside in all Places of the Kingdom where your Wisdom shall find it necessary, to give a speedy Stop to those high Provocations of Almighty God, and the most dangerous Supplanters of all our Hopes of Good from the Parliament or the Assembly.

Moreover, the Assembly having received a Paper, in the Behalf of some Godly and Hopeful Students of the University of Oxford, with Request to recommend it to the Honourable Houses of Parliament; the Assembly, in all humble ways, presenteth the same to this Most Honourable House, conceiving it worthy of your noble Thoughts and Favour, yet not presuming to interpose their Sense; and albeit they apprehend it to be a Business of extraordinary Consequence, for which much might be said, they lay all at your Lordships Feet.

Lastly,

Lastly, *The Assembly having divers weighty Business imposed on them by one or both the Honourable Houses of Parliament, which do occasion extraordinary Labour to the Scribes, and lay upon them more Work than they are able to dispatch; the Assembly prayeth, That the Honourable Houses of Parliament would be pleased to add Mr. John Wallis, a Judicious and Godly young Man, to be an Amanuensis and Assistant to the Scribes in the Assembly in this public Service.*

An. 19. Car. 1.

1643.

December.

All which the Assembly most humbly submitteth to the Wisdom and Prudence of your Lordships, incessantly importuning the Throne of Grace to pour down richly and daily the choicest of his Graces upon your Honours, and to follow all your noble Endeavours with a Blessing to the King's Majesty, the Church, Kingdom, and yourselves,

HENRY ROBOROUGH, } Scribes.
ADONIRAM BYFIELD, }

December 4. The Parliament had been greatly embarrassed with the Prince *D'Harcourt*, ever since his coming over in Quality of a Mediator on the Part of the *French King*: And the House of Commons insisting on some Credentials being presented to either House, before they treated with him, the Matter was suspended for some Time. The Lords indeed seemed willing to relax this new-assumed Piece of Sovereignty, and only desired the Ambassador to sign any Memorial or Proposal to them with his Name. This occasioned a Conference between the two Houses, when a Committee was proposed, by the Lords, to sit and find out an Expedient how the *French Ambassador* might make his Addresses to Parliament by subscribing his Name: But it was objected to by the Commons, and for these Reasons:

A Conference concerning the Manner of treating with the *French Ambassador*.

1st, 'Because the House of Commons do conceive the two Houses cannot, as yet, take Notice of any Thing that hath proceeded from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, as a Person qualified from the *French King*

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

to treat with the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*; or that he can give Assurance that the *French* King will be obliged unto what he shall propound unto the two Houses: And, untill such Time, the House of Commons do not think it agreeable to the Honour of the Houses, or safe for the Proceedings of Parliament, to appoint any Committee to consider of the Manner or Way of receiving what shall be propounded by the Prince *D'Harcourt*.

'The *French* Agent, Monsieur *De Boisfinon*, lately sent from the *French* King to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, did first deliver in his Letters of Credence, before he presented that which he had to propound from the *French* King his Master.

2dly, 'If the Prince *D'Harcourt* have any Thing to propound from the *French* King to the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, the House of Commons do conceive, that the Houses have done nothing to barr or hinder the Prince *D'Harcourt* from the usual and fitting Ways of Address to them, and such as are honourable for him: Because,

1. 'He may apply himself to the Speaker of either or both Houses of Parliament, by himself, or such Persons as he shall intrust to that Purpose, to desire Audience, in the Name of the King his Master, for what he hath to propound from the *French* King to both or either Houses of the Parliament of *England*.

2. 'Or else, what he hath to propound from the King his Master to the Houses, he may direct either to the Houses themselves, or their Speakers, attested under his Hand; as is expected from the Ambassadors of *England*, and is practised by them in their Negotiations with foreign States. It is that also which the King himself useth in his Messages to the two Houses: And it is that which the *French* Agent, Monsieur *De Boisfinon*, hath lately done to the Privy Council of *Scotland*; and that which the Ministers

of

of foreign States have done, and do, to the Parlia- An. 19. Car. 1.
ment, upon Occasion. 1643.

December.

Next was read a Copy of the *French King's* Letter, sent by Monsieur *De Boisfinon*, Agent to the *French* King, to the Council of *Scotland*, translated into *English*.

Most Dear and Great Friends,

THERE have been, from all Times, Alliances The French
between the Kings our Predecessors, and those of King's Letter to
Scotland, which have been observed so sacredly and to the Council of
faithfully, that the Faithfulness of the one and the Scotland,
other Nation hath been acknowledged and published
as a Miracle to all the People of the World. We
have been raised to the Command of the first and most
famous Monarchy of Europe, and we would conserve
the Friendship of the most valorous Nation that in-
habits it; and, to give Testimony hereof, bear Part
in their Affairs. You have deputed unto us, with
the Consent of the King of Great-Britain, Monsig-
nor the Earl of Lothian; who, being returned satis-
fied, we sent you Monsieur De Boisfinon, by the Ad-
vice of the Queen-Regent, our most honoured Lady
and Mother, to carry you the Assurance of the Conti-
nuance of our Affection.

He hath some Matters to propound to you; we pray
you to receive Credence, in all which he shall say to
you in our Behalf, and to apply yourselves to give us
Satisfaction therein, as our most true and most antient
Allies. It is that which we promise ourselves from
your Prudence, and that you will not be failing to your
own Interests; which shall ever be to us in singular
Esteem, so long as you have, for your Aim, the Obe-
dience and Service of the King your Master. Thus
we pray God to keep you, most Dear and Great Friends,
in his most holy and divine Protection.

Written at Paris the 24th of September, 1643.

Sic subscribitur.

LOUIS.

The

An. 19. Car. I. *The PROPOSITIONS of Monsieur De Boifinon to the Council of Scotland.*

1643.

December.

And his Agent's
Propositions to
them,

‘ **T**HAT, according to the Instructions which
‘ the Lords and Council of *Scotland* have given
‘ to the Earl of *Lothian*, their Deputy, with the Con-
‘ sent of the King of *Great-Britain*, the said Lords,
‘ as far as their Power extends, should confirm the
‘ antient Alliances of *France* and *Scotland*.

‘ That, for this Effect, the *Scots* do not, directly
‘ nor indirectly, enter with Arms into *England*, be it
‘ under Pretence to serve the King of *Great-Britain*,
‘ or of Religion, without exprefs Commission from
‘ the King their Master; and, forasmuch as this
‘ Article presses the Most Christian King, to give a
‘ speedy and punctual Answer.

‘ That the Lords and Council of *Scotland* would
‘ have no Regard to the Difference of Religion in
‘ those who do inroll or shall be inrolled there to
‘ serve, according to the Example of the Most
‘ Christian King to such as serve in *France*; and be-
‘ cause the Churches of *Scotland* have determined,
‘ in their Assembly, the contrary, that the Council
‘ of *Scotland* would grant out an Order to recall the
‘ same.

‘ Monsieur *De Boifinon* hath Command, from the
‘ King his Master, to make yet some further Pro-
‘ positions; but as these are the principal, and those
‘ which regard the holding fast, or breaking off, the
‘ Alliance of the two Kingdoms of *France* and *Scot-*
‘ *land*, he is ordered to receive an Answer, in the first
‘ Place, to these.

PETER DE BOISINON.

The ANSWER of the Council of Scotland to the PRO-
‘ *POSITIONS which Monsieur De Boifinon hath made*
‘ *to them from the Most Christian King.*

Their Answer. ‘ **T**O the first; When the Council of *Scotland*
‘ shall receive from the Earl of *Lothian* an
‘ Account of his Proceedings in his Employment
‘ in *France*, they will, according to their Power,
‘ give

‘ give such a respectful Answer, as may shew their
 ‘ Willingness to renew and entertain the antient
 ‘ Alliance betwixt the Kingdoms of *Scotland* and
 ‘ *France*. An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
December.

‘ To the *second Article* they can give no Answer,
 ‘ seeing the conserving of the Peace between the
 ‘ two Kingdoms is committed, by his Majesty and
 ‘ Estates of Parliament, to a Committee appointed
 ‘ for that Effect; and the late Convention of Estates,
 ‘ having also received the Propositions from the
 ‘ Commissioners of both Houses of the Parliament
 ‘ of *England*, for the further securing of the Re-
 ‘ ligion and Peace of their Kingdom, have in-
 ‘ trusted the Consideration thereof to a Committee
 ‘ of their own Members; who the Council are con-
 ‘ fident will proceed in these Affairs as becometh
 ‘ them, in Duty and Conscience towards God, in
 ‘ Loyalty to the King, and in Respect of the Good of
 ‘ the Kingdom.

‘ To the *third Article*; since the National Assem-
 ‘ bly of the Church of *Scotland* is independent, what
 ‘ hath been concluded by them cannot be recalled by
 ‘ the Council.

‘ As the Council hath answered the principal Pro-
 ‘ positions according to their Power, and in such Sort
 ‘ as can give no just Occasion of Offence to the
 ‘ *French King*; being willing, inviolably, to keep
 ‘ the Amity which hath been so religiously observed
 ‘ these many Years, they hope that those who have
 ‘ the Charge of the *French King* and his Affairs in
 ‘ his Nonage, will be better advised than to make
 ‘ the Particulars any Occasion of Breach with his
 ‘ antient Allies, whom his Royal Predecessors, in
 ‘ their greatest Difficulties, have found to be the rea-
 ‘ diest and surest Friends.

‘ So that when any other Propositions shall be made
 ‘ to them by Monsieur *De Boismon*, they will return
 ‘ such an Answer thereunto as appertaineth.’

But to return to the further Progress of the War.

Dec. 5. The Lord-General *Essex* informed the
 Lords, That he had received Advice from Sir *Wil-*
liam

An. 29. Car. I.
1643.

December.

William Waller, acquainting him the King was advancing to *Basing*, which Place Sir *William* had besieged. That the Parliament's Army under Sir *William* was very weak, and desired them to consider of a speedy Way, both to recruit and maintain it. Referred to a Conference.

The Earl of *Warwick* appointed Lord-High-Admiral of *England*, by the Parliament.

The Lords and Commons having made an Ordinance for constituting *Robert* Earl of *Warwick* Lord-High-Admiral of *England*, this Day, December 9, his Lordship moved in the House, That the Lords would take it into their present Consideration, how to make Provision of Flesh, Ammunition, and other Necessaries, for setting forth the next Year's Navy: That this was the Month proper for such Provision, or else it would be impossible to get the Navy fitted out in Time: That, upon Advice, it was thought fit to have, at least, forty-six Ships to guard the Seas; and 60,000 *l.* was required to be presently advanced for Provisions, &c. as appeared by an Estimate made for that Purpose.

It is certain, by this, that the Parliament was under a Dread that *France*, or some other foreign Power, would exert themselves in the King's Favour, which made them agree to equip such a Fleet to prevent it. It may not be amiss to give here the Estimate, to inform the present Age of the Expence thought necessary for such an Equipment in the last.

The CERTIFICATE and ESTIMATE of the Charge of the Fleet, sent to the Lord-Admiral from the Commissioners of the Navy.

An Estimate of the Charge of the Fleet.

According to your Lordship's Order, we have seriously debated what Number of Men are requisite for a Fleet for the next Year's Service; and do humbly conceive there cannot be less than 5000 allotted for the Service of the Fleet, if the State resolve to keep the Seas in Safety.

These

Of ENGLAND. 459

These 5000 Men will supply forty-six Sail of Ships, viz. An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

- 2 of the second Rank,
- 9 of the third Rank,
- 20 of the fourth Rank,
- 10 of the fifth Rank, and
- 5 of the sixth Rank.

Of these forty-six Ships there are twenty-six of his Majesty's that may be fitted for the Service, the rest, viz. twenty, must be taken up in the River from the Merchants.

We also conceive that those forty-six Sail of Ships may be distributed thus :

- 10 to the West,
- 16 for Ireland and the Severn,
- 12 for the Downs, and
- 8 for the Coasts of Scotland, according to the Parliament's Agreement.

We do also conceive that 3000 Men, in thirty of his Majesty's and the Merchant Ships, will be a competent Winter-Guard for the next Year.

If your Lordship shall resolve to fix upon this Number of Men and Ships, for the next Year's Service, we humbly desire your Lordship to represent to the House the State of the whole Navy for this and the next Year's Service, in the Heads following, viz.

l. s. d.

For the Charge of 5000 Men in twenty-six of his Majesty's and twenty Merchant Ships, for eight Months Service in the Year 1644	}	130,000 0 0
--	---	-------------

For the Charge of 3000 Men, in thirty Ships, for the next Win- ter's Guards for five Months	}	60,000 0 0
---	---	------------

For the ordinary Expence of the whole Navy, in Harbour, for the Year 1644	}	18,000 0 0
---	---	------------

Carried over	208,000 0 0
--------------	-------------

For

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

	<i>Brought over</i>	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
		208,000	0	0
For the Charge of the extraordinary and ordinary Expence of the next Year's Service, in the Office of the Ordnance, <i>per</i> Estimation		20,000	0	0
For the Victuals of 4000 Men, for six Months, in forty Ships, supposed to be set at Sea, as Reprizals, according to a late Ordinance		24,000	0	0
For the Payment of the Ordinary for this Year's Winter-Guard, now at Sea, the Freight of sundry Merchant-men already discharged, and for divers other Provisions due to sundry Men in this and the last Year's Service, the Sum of		40,000	0	0
<i>Total</i>		292,000	0	0

' Which said Sum of 292,000 *l.* we desire may
' be settled out of the Revenues of the Customs
' and Excise, to be paid to the Treasurer of the
' Navy, before your Lordships proceed in the Ser-
' vice.

' We are confident little or nothing can be aba-
' ted with Safety; yet if the Houses shall not think
' fit to allow so great a Number of Men or Ships,
' we desire your Lordships that, whatsoever they shall
' think fit to order, the Money may, in the first
' Place, be assigned to be paid in to the Treasurer
' of the Navy before the Service be undertaken;
' for we are not able to wade any further in the
' Service, unless our Credit be preserved by current
' Payments.

' The Payment of the aforesaid Sum of 292,000 *l.*
' may be seasonably supplied as followeth:

For

Of ENGLAND. 461

For Victuals and Stores for } the Summer's Fleet	l.	s.	d.	An. 19. Car. I.
	50,000	0	0	1643.
For Victuals of Merchant } Ships supposed to be set forth } as Reprizals	10,000	0	0	December.

' The rest as the Service may require, and the State shall be enabled.

' We have propounded the Business of the Victuals to Mr. *Alcock*, who absolutely refuseth it by way of Contract; but yet offers his Endeavours in it by way of Account, provided he may be enabled with Monies to proceed chearfully therein, and have some other able Men joined with him in the Management of that Service. We believe we shall not be able to get any Men to undertake the Business by Contract, and therefore desire your Lordship to send unto Mr. *Alcock*, and settle the Business upon him as your Lordship shall think fit, that the Service may not suffer for Want of settling that Office; all which we leave to your Lordship's Wisdom, and remain, at your Lordship's Command,

RICHARD CARNLEY,
JOHN MORRIS,
JOHN HOLLAND.

December 5, 1643.

The Earl of *Warwick* moved, That a Conference might be had presently with the House of Commons, to communicate this Estimate to them, and desire that some Course may be speedily taken to procure Monies and other Provisions, that no Time be lost to expedite this Business. This was done accordingly.

December 11. Some Orders, made by the House of Commons this Day, give us Occasion to mention the Death of Mr. *Pymme*, one of the most active Members that ever sat in that House: And the Respect they shewed to his Memory is without a Precedent in the whole Course of these Inquiries: For we find, in the *Journals*, ' That a Committee, there named, was appointed to consider

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

The Death of
Mr. Pymme, to
whose Memory
the Commons
order a Monu-
ment to be erect-
ed,

sider of the Estate of Mr. Pymme, deceased, and to offer what they think fit to be done in Consideration of it to the House; likewise to take Care to prepare a Monument for him, at the Charge of the Commonwealth. It was also ordered, That the Body of Mr. Pymme be interred in *Westminster* Abbey, without any Charge for breaking open the Ground there; and that the Speaker, with the whole House; do accompany his Body to the Interment.

Mr. *Whitlocke* says, That Mr. Pymme died the latter End of *May*; but the Proceedings of Parliament since that Date, as well as the above-recited Orders, evidently prove this to be a Mistake. This Memorialist ascribes Mr. Pymme's Death, chiefly, to his excessive Fatigue in the Service of Parliament ^a.—Lord *Clarendon* says, He died of the *Morbus Pediculosus*; and, after the highest Commendation of his Abilities, and the heaviest Censure of his Actions, concludes with saying, 'That as, during his Sickness, he was a very sad Spectacle, so that none were admitted to him who had not concurred with him, it is not known what his last Thoughts and Considerations were ^b.'—But Mr. *Rushworth* says, 'The Report of his dying of the Distemper before-mentioned was not true; and that, for public Satisfaction therein, his dead Body was for some Time exposed to, and viewed by, many Hundreds of People: The true natural Cause of his Death seeming to be the great Pains he took, joined with a competent old Age, and at best but an infirm Constitution.' He also gives us a long Declaration of Mr. Pymme's, setting forth the Grounds and Reasons of his Conduct in Parliament; which he had caused to be printed and published some Time before his Decease ^c.

By some subsequent Orders, it appears that Mr. Pymme died greatly in Debt, though possessed of the Place of Lieutenant of the Ordnance; for, *January* 13, we find the Commons referred it to the

afore-

^a *Memorials*, p. 66.—^b *Clarendon*, Vol. III. 8vo. p. 462.—

^c *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 376.

aforesaid Committee to consider of some other Way An. 19. Car. I.
for a Recompence to the Posterity of Mr. *Pymme*,
and Payment of those Debts he had contracted for
the Service of the Commonwealth, than they had
yet thought on; and to use all Diligence to find out
some fit Return, answerable to the Memory and
Merit of so great a Man. Accordingly, afterwards,
the whole House undertook to pay the Debts of
Mr. *Pymme*, not exceeding 10,000 *l*.

1643.
December.

And vote
10,000 *l*. for
Payment of his
Debts.

This Digression, upon so unprecedented an Instance, the Reader will excuse: Proceed we now with the Thread of our History.

Dec. 12. In the Business of this Day, amongst the Lords, we find this Entry, 'It was moved that this House should declare it, as their Opinion, that no Member of either House of Parliament might be admitted to execute any Place of Profit; and a Committee of seven Lords were ordered to draw up an Order, and word it to that Sense.' These withdrawing, soon returned with such an Order; and then the Question was put, Whether that Paper, now read, should be entered as the Opinion and Resolution of this House? Which passed in the Affirmative.

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, 'That the Opinion and Resolution of this House is, from henceforth, not to admit the Members of either House of Parliament into any Place or Office, excepting such Places of great Trust as are to be executed by Persons of Eminency and known Integrity, and are necessary for the Government and Safety of the Kingdom.

But another Question being put, Whether this shall be drawn up into an Ordinance? it passed in the Negative. Thus this Political Test was quashed for this Time; but 'tis probable it gave Rise to the famous Self-denying Ordinance afterwards.

The Earl of *Holland's* Return to the Parliament has been mentioned before; and this Day, *Dec. 16*, a remarkable Letter of his, by way of Petition to
the

464 *The Parliamentary* HISTORY

An. 19. Car. 1. the Lords, was read, containing the Motives that
 1643. induced this unsteady Nobleman to change Sides;
 December. which he did so often, that, at last, he fell a Sacrifice to his own Instability.

To my LORDS the PEERS,

The HUMBLE PETITION of HENRY Earl of HOLLAND.

My Lords,

The Earl of Holland's Petition to Parliament, upon his revolting from the King.

I Have already, by your Favours, received a Degree of Liberty; and do hope that, upon this my humble Request, it may be fully granted me, with the Discharge of the late Sequestration, that yet rests upon the little Remainder of my Fortune; it not being the tenth Part of what I have lost since the Parliament began.

My Lords, I have not made any Use of that which I conceived would have given me a very assured Protection here, viz. the Invitation and Persuasion of our General to return; in whom I conceived a Power very full and natural to invite and to persuade any, both how to add to this and lessen the other Side; which is done, in some Measure, in every Person of the least Consideration. This, I am very confident, his Excellency will avow in my Particular; the Inquiry of which I leave to your Lordships' Wisdom, and likewise all which concerns me, both in Honour and Fortune, to your Goodness.

HOLLAND.

The Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord-General, to desire him to inform this House what he knows concerning the Earl of Holland's Return, and what Invitation he received from him. In the mean Time the Earl was allowed to go into the Country, for a few Days, with the Lord-Admiral. And, soon after, on the Receipt of a satisfactory Answer from the Lord-General, as to what the Earl had advanced, he was ordered, by the Lords, to have full Liberty, and his Sequestration taken off: But in the House of Commons the

the Question being put, Whether he was guilty of An. 19. Car. 1.
deserting the Parliament? it was carried in the Ne- 1643.
gative, only by 75 against 60.

December.

Dec. 20. A Conference was held between the two Houses, wherein the Lords communicated some Letters they had received from the Lord-General *Essex*. As these and such-like Letters are the most authentic History of the Times, we shall make no Apology for the Number of them. And first the Letter from the Earl of *Essex* to the Speaker of the House of Peers :

My Lord,

I Received a Letter from the Committee of Safety, Letters from the the 14th of this Instant, concerning the remo- Earl of Essex and the Committee of Safety, relating to the Parliament's Army. ving of my Army towards Sir William Waller's Quarters; to which I returned an Answer of the Inconveniences that might follow that Advice, both which Letters I herewith send you. This Day I received another to the same Purpose, which your Lordship will now receive, and perceive therein that it is reported that Prince Rupert is marching that Way; which the Committee, in their great and constant Care to the Public, have very affectionately acquainted me with; apprehending that, if any Thing might befall those Forces with Sir William Waller, I might lie under an undeserved Censure by common De-tractors.

I thought it my Duty to acquaint both the Houses with all these Letters; and, withall, with my Opinion of those Inconveniences that might follow my Removal at this Time; and that the Army cannot now march, having so many Men out in Parties about Newport-Pagnell, every Company in each Regiment being thereby divided. Out of the Relief which I am promised, within five or six Days to be sent hither, the Newport Men, when they come back, will expect their Pay, having been so long without, and done so good Service; and the rest of the Officers also being in so great Want, as your Lordships may perceive by the inclosed Copy of another Letter

VOL. XII.

G g

to

466 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
December.

of mine to the Committee of Safety: So that, if the Forces be taken from hence, it is impossible to secure Bedfordshire, Hertfordshire, and Essex from the Enemy; there being a very long Line to keep, and my Lord of Manchester having but 500 Horse here, and most of the Remainder of his Horse being in Lincolnshire, and also the greatest Part of his Foot, as yet.

I likewise conceive Sir William Waller cannot be in any great Danger, having the Benefit of so safe a Place as Farnham, now fortified, that the Enemy, especially in this Season of the Year, will not be able to do him Harm; besides, the Addition of Strength I sent him is so considerable, being near 600 Horse, and so well commanded, that I hold them able to encounter with 1000 of the Enemy's.

My Lord, I am to crave your Pardon for this long Diversion from your great Affairs, by these inclosed Papers; but the Tendernefs of my Honour, and my Fidelity to the Parliament, which I value above myself, emboldens me to it. I am,

My Lord,

St. Alban's, Dec. 18,
1643.

Your Lordship's Servant,

E S S E X.

The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's Letter to the Earl of ESSEX, referred to in the foregoing.

May it please your Excellency,

WE understood by your Lordship's Letter the last Night to Sir Philip Stapylton, that your Excellency had designed Col. Behre to march with 500 Horse towards the Relief of Sir William Waller. We conceive his being with Sir William Waller at this Time with so many Horse, will be of so great Use to the Public, that we desire your Excellency to hasten him thither with what Speed you possibly may.

*We hear that most of the King's Forces about Tower-
cester are removed Southward, to join with the
Lord*

Of ENGLAND. 467

Lord Hopton; which, if your Excellency find to An. 19. Car. I.
 be so, we humbly offer unto your most serious Considera-
 tion, whether it will not be necessary for your Lord-
 ship to remove your Quarters nearer to Farnham,
 or to send some Foot speedily thither to Sir William
 Waller; or, otherwise, he will not be able to pro-
 secute this great Advantage which he hath now got-
 ten; for the King's Forces increase in Hampshire and
 Suffex, and divers new Regiments are raising there,
 which would prove very prejudicial to the Public;
 unless presently prevented; which we hope your Lord-
 ship, in your Wisdom, will find a Way to remedy, see-
 ing the Safety of this Place and the whole Kingdom is
 so much concern'd in it.

1643.
 December.

We desire your Lordship's Answer by this Express,
 that we may frame our Resolutions accordingly. We
 remain

Your Lordship's

Most affectionate,

Dec. 14, 1643.

and most humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND, ARTH. HASLERIG,
 PEMBROKE and MONT- H. VANE,
 GOMERY, ANTH. NICHOLS.
 WILLIAM PIERPOINT,

The Earl's ANSWER.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

Although the Horse are extremely behind for Want
 of Pay, and want both Horses and Arms, yet I
 hope to have 500 Horse ready to march upon Satur-
 day Morning, with Col. Behre, towards Sir Wil-
 liam Waller; and, for that Purpose, have stopped
 giving him Commission to the Commissary-General of
 the Horse, because he may receive his Directions from
 Sir William Waller during such Time as I can spare
 him there.

To the second Part of your Lordships Letter; I have
 often informed your Lordships, both by Letters and
 also by Word of Mouth, That I have not one whole

G g 2

Company

468 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

Company amongst the Foot, they being divided, Half here, and Half at Newport; and, till that Garrison be furnished, cannot take them away, unless your Lordships' Pleasure be to quit Newport and those Parts, which would be absolute Ruin to all these Counties; so that, unless the Parliament command it, I do not chuse to give Way unto it; and besides, they will be presently in such Want of Money, that, without there be an Order taken for their Pay till the Ordinance begins, I shall hardly be able to keep them together any where, much less to recruit them.

When I was last in London, the Foot being drawn into Arms, it was spread amongst them, That the Reason of their drawing into the Field, was to take out a Party to send to Sir William Waller; upon which there was a Mutiny amongst them, with a Resolution, That whose Lot soever it should be to march, the rest would oppose it.

I hope now, that I have spared so great a Strength of Horse from these Parts, there will be a Care taken for the Supply of Horse and Arms; most of the Horsemen being on Foot, the strongest Troops sent away, and divers of the Counties not having sent in the Numbers of Horse they promised; especially Middlesex, from whence I have had but 55 of 200.

The Enemy are fortifying at Greenland, near Henley, which will be a great Prejudice both to the River and Windsor; but, by reason of my sending off those Horse, I shall not be able to do that to them which I intended. I thought fit to acquaint your Lordships with it, lest it should be laid to me hereafter as a Neglect.

Your Lordship's Servant,

St. Alban's, Dec. 14,
1643.

ESSEX.

The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's second Letter to the Earl of ESSEX.

May it please your Excellency,

WE have received several Advertisements, that Prince Rupert, with 6000 Horse and Foot, is on his March from Oxon towards Sir William Waller;

Waller; so that we doubt, unless some considerable Force be presently sent to his Assistance, he may be suddenly distressed, and run the Hazard of the Loss of his Brigade, which will endanger Kent and that Association: We therefore humbly offer our Advice to your Excellency, to march forthwith to Windsor, or some other Place near Sir William Waller's Quarters, for the securing him and his Forces from that Power and Strength, which is now drawing thither under the Command of Prince Rupert.

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
December.

We shall not fail to do our utmost Endeavours for advancing Money for the Payment of your Excellency's Army, and conveying it to the Place which your Excellency shall appoint, in your March, so soon as we shall hear from your Excellency.

And we farther offer it to your Excellency's Consideration, whether you think not fit to send a Dispatch to the Earl of Manchester, to draw up his Forces towards Newport-Pagnell, for the securing thereof and the Parts adjacent. These Things are recommended to your Lordship by

Your Excellency's

Most affectionate Friends,

Westminster, Dec. 18,
1643.

and humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND,	BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK,	DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY and SELE,	ANTH. NICHOLS.

The other LETTER from the Earl of ESSEX to the COMMITTEE of SAFETY, mention'd in his Lordship's LETTER to the Speaker, was in these Words:

My Lords and Gentlemen,

According to your Directions, I have sent your Lordships this Commission, which you'll please to send to Sir Thomas Fairfax, hoping, by this Time, he is upon his March.

There is hardly Money left to pay a Messenger; for of the last 23,000l. which was sent down for

G g 3

Re-

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

Recruits, 700 l. went for the Garrison of Aylesbury, besides the better Part of 200 l. more sent thither since, to make up the Fortnight's Pay: All the Horse and Foot here, and at Newport, are paid compleat for fourteen Days, and a Week's Pay for the Foot at St. Alban's, from the Serjeant downwards.

Yesterday there was a great Mutiny of 3 or 400 gathered together, threatening to pillage the Town; but my Coming presently dispersed them, otherwise great Mischiefe would have been done, it being Market-Day.

I have likewise another Week's Pay for the Foot, from the Serjeants downwards, for To-morrow, which is all the Money that is left, tho' I have paid nothing else but what bleeding Necessity compelled me to, of which I am ready to give an Account; having not been able to relieve divers, whereof some are Captains of my own Regiment, that, thro' Sicknes and Hurts, are ready to perish; and how the other Officers will do for Want of Pay, I know not.

The Train of Artillery, who have done real and faithful Services to the State, are grown to that Necessity, as you may perceive by the Petition^a inclosed, that if there be not Pay provided for them by the latter End of this Week, both for those here and those that come from Newport, I shall never be able to keep them together without plundering the Country.

Col. Behre is gone with the Horse, though they have been long without Pay; and if the Horse in Sir William Waller's Brigade be paid, and they unpaid, I fear the Issue; though, otherwise, I never saw Men better contented with so little Pay as the Horse have generally been.

My humble Desire is, That if there be no Pay like to come to me by the latter End of this Week, I may know so; I not being able to stay amongst them to hear the crying Necessity of the hungry Soldiers. I have likewise sent your Lordships Sir William Brereton's Letter^a, that you may take it into your

^a We do not meet with this Letter, or Petition, above referred to, in the Journals.

your further Care, I not being able to spare any out of this Army. An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

Your Lordships Servant,

December,

Dec. 17, 1643.

ESSEX.

The Votes passed by the Lords, after reading the foregoing Letters, to which the Commons also agreed, were, That they approved of the Counsel given to the Lord-General by the Committee of Safety; and that he be desired to pursue it: That Letters should be written to him and the rest, to that Effect; and a Committee of both Houses was appointed to draw them up accordingly.

The same Day, in the Afternoon, Copies of these Letters, so ordered, were read in the House of Lords, and afterwards approved by both Houses, as follow:

Our very good Lord,

WE are commanded, by both Houses, to acquaint your Lordship, That they have received your Letter of the 18th present, with the inclosed Copies of Letters between the Committee of Safety and your Excellency; and having well weighed the Grounds expressed in the Letters from the Committee of Safety to your Lordship, and taking into Consideration how necessary it is that the Passages should be secured, where the Forces of the Enemy may break into Surry, Middlesex, and Kent, they have thought fit to approve of the Advice given to your Lordship by the Committee of Safety, for the speedy drawing your Lordship's Forces towards Windsor, or those Parts; especially seeing Sir William Waller is now marched towards Arundel with all his Forces, and left only a Garrison in Farnham Castle; and that Sir Ralph Hopton (as the Houses are informed) hath drawn all the Forces he can make towards Basing. And to the End that the Counties, where your Lordship's Army is now quartered, may not be exposed to Danger, by
the

472 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. I.

1643

December.

the breaking in of the Enemy's Forces upon your Lordship's marching from thence, the two Houses have written a Letter (a Copy whereof they send your Lordship here inclosed) to the Earl of Manchester, in pursuance of the Advice lately given your Lordship by the Committee of Safety, and the Directions from your Lordship in that Behalf, for to draw up speedily the Forces under his Lordship's Command, for the Security of those Counties. The Houses have likewise sent another Letter (the Copy whereof is here inclosed) unto the Committee of the Militia of Hertfordshire, for the speedy sending into Newport-Pagnel the Forces intended for that Garrison: And therefore we are ordered by both Houses to desire your Lordship that, Newport-Pagnel being secured, your Lordship do pursue the Advice given your Excellency by the Committee of Safety, for the drawing your Forces towards Windsor, or those Parts; which will be, as they conceive, of the greatest Security to this City, and the Counties most threatened and subject to Danger. And so we bid your Lordship heartily farewell, being

Your Lordship's affectionate

Westminster, Dec. 20,
1643.

Friends and Servants,

W H A R T O N,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the Commons
House in Parliament.

The Letter to the Earl of MANCHESTER, mentioned as inclosed in the foregoing.

Our very good Lord,

WE are commanded, by the Houses, to send this Dispatch unto your Lordship, in pursuance of what you have already received from the Committee of

of Safety, and likewise, we doubt not, will receive An. 19. Car. I.
from his Excellency; that accordingly your Lordship
will, with your Forces, march towards Newport-
Pagnel, or such other Place as his Excellency shall
judge most convenient for the securing those Parts;
which, upon his Removal to oppose the great Forces
which are gathering together to break in upon the
Coast of Suffex or Surry, will else be left naked, and
give an Inlet to any Attempt of the Enemy for the in-
vading us on that Side; both these, being equally mis-
chievous, must be equally provided for; and we don't
doubt of your Lordship's Readiness to do any Thing
which may conduce to the Public Good; nor are many
Words needful to incite you to it, the very Proposal of
it being sufficient.

1643.
December.

This being all we have in Charge from the Houses,
nothing remains, but that we are

Your Lordship's

Westminster, Dec. 20,
1642.

most affectionate

Friends and Servants,

*Signed by the Speakers of both Houses as the
foregoing.*

The LETTER from the PARLIAMENT to the COM-
MITTEE of MILITIA for Hertfordshire, above re-
ferred to.

Gentlemen,

WE are commanded, by both Houses of Parlia-
ment, to require you, forthwith, to dispatch
such of your Forces to Newport-Pagnel, as may se-
cure that Garrison; that my Lord-General may be
enabled to march away Westward, the Enemy ha-
ving drawn most of their Forces that Way; and there-
fore the Houses do presume your Care hath been such,
that your Forces are already there, or upon their
March, they having given you all the Assistance you
desired to enable you thereunto, by passing the several
Or-

474 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
December.

I. Ordinances you presented to them; yet, lest there should be any retarding of Business, so much importing the Public Safety, they thought fit to quicken you by this Express: And so, not doubting of your Care herein, we rest,

Gentlemen,

December 22, 1643.

Your Friends and Servants,

Signed by the Speakers as before.

Dec. 22. A Letter from Sir William Waller was read in the House of Lords; but, as there is no Date to it, we suppose, only, that it came from the Siege before Arundel Castle.

My Lords,

*A Letter from
Sir William Wal-
ler,*

According to your Commands, I advanced the last Lord's Day from Farnham towards this Place. I could not reach that Night past Haslemere: The next Day I marched to Cowdrey; where, we understanding there were four Troops of Horse and one hundred Foot, I resolved to give them the good Night; and, to that End, I dispatched away two Regiments of Horse to lay the Passages round; but they were too nimble for me, and escaped hither, where I overtook them on Tuesday Night. The next Morning, after we had taken a View, and found out a Place where we might flank their Line with our Ordnance, we fell on upon the North Side of the Works; and we did so scour a weedy Hill in the Park, on the West Side of the Pond, with our Pieces, that we made it too hot for them; which gave such Courage to our Men, that, with the same Breath, they assaulted an Intrenchment newly cast up, and which was very strong: It was drawn from the Town Gate down to the aforesaid Pond near the Hill. At the same Time we fell on a narrow Passage by the Mill, where they had likewise a double Work, and very strong; but in a short Time, by the good Hand of God, we forced both; and entered the Town with our Horse and Foot, notwithstanding a
brave

brave Sally made by their Horse. We beat them into the Castle, and entered the first Gate with them, the second they made good and barricaded, and they are there welcome to stay. I am resolved to block them up, for I know they are in a necessitous Condition.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

God hath been pleased to bless me hitherto with a gracious Success, his Great and Holy Name be praised for it; but truly, my Lords, I am very weak in Foot, and my Horse so hackney'd out, that they are ready to lie down under us. I expect Col. Behre and Col. Morley here this Day.

Dec. 25, being Christmas-Day, is the first Time that we find the Houses sat to do Business on it. The Commons having sent Word to the Lords, That they intended such a Thing, their Lordships readily followed so pious an Example.

A Letter from the Earl of Manchester, dated from Cambridge, Dec. 22, was presented to the House of Lords this Day, and read in these Words: It was directed to the Lord Wharton.

My Lord,

I Have received your Lordship's Letter from the House of Peers; I shall beseech your Lordship to offer my Service to the House, and to let them know that, according to the Lord-General's Orders, I have commanded six hundred Foot to march to Newport-Pagnel. I have likewise sent a Regiment of Foot to lie at Bedford, with five Troops of Horse and two Troops of Dragoons. The greatest Part of the rest of the Forces, that is under my Command, is yet in Lincolnshire; and, at this present, engaged against Gainsbrough.

I have no particular Direction from my Lord-General, whither to march with the rest that I have with me; which, at this present, do guard St. Neots, Huntingdon, and the Town of Cambridge.

I am ready, to my utmost, to be serviceable to the Houses, but am in some Trouble, because I have no

par-

476 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 19. Car. 1. *particular Orders; seeing that the Letters from the*
 1643. *House doth refer me to his Excellency's Orders and Di-*
 December. *rections. I am,*

My Lord,

Your Lordship's humble Servant,
 E. MANCHESTER.

This Letter was referred to the Committee of Safety; and the Lord *Wharton* acquainted the House that he had received another Letter from the Lord-General, to desire him to inform the House, that the Reason he had not given Directions to the Earl of *Manchester* for disposing of his Forces, was, because he knew he was upon a Design at *Gainsborough*.

Dec. 30. The Commons ordered the Commissioners of their new Great Seal to bring in an Ordinance for the appointing and authorizing Sheriffs to execute their Offices, in the different Counties of *England*, for the Year ensuing: To consider of the Sheriffs' Oath, and for taking off from them the Charges usually incident to such Places; and to enable them to go out of their Counties upon the Service of the Commonwealth.

Then the House proceeded to nominate all the High Sheriffs in *England*, whose Names are enter'd in their *Journal*; and also ordered, That the Commissioners of the Great Seal be desired forthwith to pass the several respective Patents for the Gentlemen, nominated and appointed by both Houses to be High Sheriffs of Counties, according to their several Nominations and Appointments. Thus was the King stripp'd of that antient Branch of the Royal Prerogative, in every County where the Parliament could command: And as he at the same Time nominated his own Sheriffs, this, alone, must breed the utmost Confusion in the Kingdom.

The same Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee of Safety, reported their Opinion of

Sir
 Men
 the
 the
 to d
 be i
 upon
 T
 orde
 M
 T
 Ena
 cessi
 whi
 ly f
 lenc
 Arn
 judg
 secu
 Ho
 De
 Ch
 you
 ana
 wa
 the
 and
 b
 crea
 Sep
 the
 low
 ton
 Wa
 We

Sir William Waller's Letter, requiring a Supply of An. 19. Car. I.
Men to withstand the Forces under *Hopton*^b; that
the Garrison of *Newport-Pagnel* being now settled,
the best Way would be to send to the Lord-General
to draw his Forces into those Parts, that so he might
be in a Place convenient to assist Sir William Waller
upon all Occasions.

1643.
December,

This was agreed to, and the following Letter was
ordered to be drawn up for that Purpose :

May it please your Excellency,

There is Advertisement come from Sir William Waller, giving Notice of the Preparation the Enemy makes to relieve Arundel Castle, and the Necessity there is of his present Supply; the Mischief which will else follow upon the whole Kingdom is easily foreseen. It is therefore desired that your Excellency will, forthwith, remove that Way with your Army to Windsor, or to such other Place as you shall judge convenient; leaving Newport-Pagnel as well secured as the present Occasion will permit. Both Houses conceive it so absolutely necessary, that any Delay will be dangerous. This being all we have in Charge to recommend to your Excellency's Care, and your Zeal for the Public Service, we take our Leave, and rest

Your Excellency's humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND, BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK, DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY and SELE, ANTH. NICHOLS.

Another Letter, and a very extraordinary one,
was also read this Day in the House of Lords, from
the Earl of *Bedford*; who, with the Earls of *Clare*
and *Holland*, had deserted the Parliament, and gone
over

^b Sir *Ralph Hopton*, Knight of the Bath, whom the King had created a Peer, by the Title of Baron *Hopton* of *Stratton*, the 4th of September, 1643: And by this coarse Expression of barely *Hopton* in the Lords' Journals, it looks as if that House did not chuse to allow his Title, the Patent being pass'd since the Lord-Keeper *Littleton* left the Parliament; or it might be so expressed in Sir William Waller's Letter, who probably had not yet forgot his own Defeat in the West.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
December.

The Earl of Bedford, who had joined the King, returns to the Parliament.

over to the King at *Oxford*. The latter had already made his Peace at *Westminster*; the other found Means to escape from the Guard his Majesty had set over him, and retired to his Seat in *Nottinghamshire*.—Lord *Clarendon* very much condemns the Manner in which these Peers were received by the King and his Council at *Oxford*; his Opinion being, that Penitents of such Consequence ought to have been received with open Arms. And Mr. *Whitlocke* observes, ‘That it was said, in Drollery, these three Earls had much confirmed others to continue with the Parliament; for they having tried both Parties, found, by Experience, that this was the best to be in and adhere to.’

The Earl of *Bedford*’s Submission was ushered in by the following Letter from the Lord-General *Essex*, directed to the Speaker of the House of Peers:

My Lord,

The Earl of Essex’s Letter in his Favour;

There hath been a strict and long Obligation betwixt the Families of my Lord of Bedford’s and mine; yet, in this general Cause that we are engaged in, which is for the Maintenance of Religion, and the Liberty and just Freedom of the Subjects of England, and the Plotters against all these growing every Day more maliciously bent to the Ruin of them all, would have made me laid aside all particular Ends of my own; but hearing, by an intimate Friend of his Lordship’s, his Desire to return to serve the Parliament with his Life and Fortune, being very sensible of his Fault in deserting them, and being an Eye-Witness of their ill Intentions to the Destruction of this Kingdom, he desired a Pass to return, and my Reception of him to this Side, which I did by that great Favour and Trust the Parliament was pleased to intrust me with; and which, by my utmost Care, with the Hazard of my Life, I shall use for your Safety, being

Your Lordship’s

St. Alban’s, Dec. 30,
1643.

most humble Servant,

E S S E X.

Next

Next was read the Earl of *Bedford's* Letter, directed to the Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*, as followeth :
 An. 19. Car. I.
 1643.
 December.

My Lord,

THE great Sense I had of the Miseries and Distractions of this Kingdom, and the small Probability that appeared, to my Judgment, of any speedy End thereof, made me think I could do the Kingdom no better Service, as Matters then stood, than by using my best Endeavours, and those of my Friends, to procure his Majesty to comply with his Parliament ; for which Purpose I went to Oxford, where I was no sooner arrived, but I perceived contrary Counsels to be too prevalent, and that my Endeavours would be altogether fruitless ; wherefore, presently seeing my former Mistake, I resolved thenceforth, whatsoever Prejudice might befall me thereby, to cast myself wholly upon the Favour and the Mercy of the Parliament, and to make no longer Stay at Oxford, than I could find Means and Opportunity for my safe Return ; whereupon I made Use of my nearest Friends to procure me a Pass from my Lord-General, which he nobly granted me. Thewith I am come safe to St. Alban's, and have now put myself into his Excellency's Custody ; where I intend to remain untill I shall receive your Lordships Commands and Directions ; being ready to undergo what Censure your Lordships shall please to impose upon me for my sudden and unadvised Departure from your Lordships without your Leaves and Consents ; not expecting or thinking myself worthy of the Honour to sit again amongst you, untill your Lordships shall be fully satisfied of the Reality of my Faithfulness to the Parliament and Kingdom ; which I shall be very ready to express and manifest by any Act, Way, or Means whatsoever, which your Lordships, in your Wisdoms, shall think fit to prescribe or appoint. Expecting your Lordship's Answer, I rest

Your Lordship's

most humble Servant,

B E D F O R D.

Here-

St. Alban's, Dec. 30,
 1643.

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

December.

Hereupon the Lords ordered that, for the present, the Earl of *Bedford* should stand committed to the safe Custody of the Gentleman-Usher attending that House, there to remain untill their Pleasure be further signified.

After all these, several Papers were read, which came from the Parliament's Commissioners in *Scotland*, relating to the Treaty then just concluded with that Kingdom, concerning the Solemn League and Covenant, and the Assistance demanded in pursuance of the Ends expressed therein: The Articles of which had been sent up by the Commons with their Approbation of them, and were referred by the Lords to a Committee then appointed for that Purpose, and are as follow:

Articles between
the *English* and
Scots Parliaments
concerning the
latter's marching
their Army into
England.

Whereas the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, out of a just and deep Sense of the great and imminent Danger of the true Protestant Religion, in regard of the great Forces of Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, raised and employed against the constant Professors thereof in *England* and *Ireland*, thought fit to send their Commissioners unto the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to treat with the Convention of Estates and General Assembly there, concerning such Things as might tend to the Preservation of Religion, and the mutual Good of both Nations: And, to that End, to desire a more near and strict Union betwixt the Two Kingdoms; and the Assistance of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, by a considerable Strength to be raised and sent by them into the Kingdom of *England*:

And whereas, upon a Consultation held betwixt the Commissioners of the Parliament of *England*, and the Committees of the Convention of Estates and General Assembly, no Means was thought so expedient to accomplish and strengthen the Union, as for both Nations to enter into a Solemn League and Covenant, and a Form thereof to be drawn and presented to the two Houses of the Parliament

of

of *England*, the Convention of Estates, and General Assembly, of *Scotland*; which hath accordingly been done, and received their Approbation:

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

And whereas the Particulars, concerning the Assistance desired by the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, from their Brethren of *Scotland*, were delivered in by the *English* Commissioners, August 19, to the Convention of Estates; who did thereupon give Power to their Committee to consider and debate farther with the *English* Commissioners, of what other Propositions might be added or concluded; whereby the Assistance desired might be made more effectual and beneficial:

And, in pursuance thereof, these Propositions following were considered of, and debated by the Committee and Commissioners aforesaid, to be certified, with all convenient Speed, to the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and the Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, by their respective Committees and Commissioners to be respectively taken into their Consideration, and proceeded with as they shall find Cause: Which being accordingly done, and these ensuing Propositions approved, agreed, and concluded of by the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and the Committee of the Estates of *Scotland* respectively, and Power by them given to their respective Committees and Commissioners to agree and conclude the same, as may appear by the Votes of both Houses, dated the first of *November*, and the Order of the Committee, bearing Date the seventeenth of *November*: We the said Commissioners and Committees, according to their Votes and Orders, do formally conclude and agree upon these Articles following; and, in Confirmation thereof, do mutually subscribe the same.

I. It is agreed and concluded, That the Covenant, represented to the Convention of Estates and General Assembly of *Scotland*, and sent to both

VOL. XII.

H h

Houses

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.

December.

‘ Houses of the Parliament of *England*, in the same
‘ Form as it is now returned from the two Houses
‘ of the Parliament of *England* to their Brethren of
‘ *Scotland*, and allowed by the Committee of Estates
‘ and Commissioners of the General Assembly, be
‘ sworn and subscribed by both Kingdoms, as a most
‘ near Tie and Conjunction between them, for their
‘ mutual Defence against the Papists and Prelatical
‘ Faction, and their Adherents, in both Kingdoms,
‘ and for Pursuance of the Ends expressed in the said
‘ Covenant.

II. ‘ That an Army to this Purpose shall be levied
‘ forthwith, consisting of eighteen thousand Foot ef-
‘ fective, two thousand Horse, and one thousand
‘ Dragoons effective, with a suitable Train of Ar-
‘ tillery, to be ready at some general Rendez-
‘ vous, near the Borders of *England*, to march
‘ into *England*, for the Purposes aforesaid, with
‘ all convenient Speed: The said Horse and Foot
‘ to be well and compleatly armed, and provided
‘ with Victuals and Pay for forty Days; and the
‘ said Train of Artillery to be fitted in all Points
‘ ready to march.

III. ‘ That the Army be commanded by a Ge-
‘ neral appointed by the Estates of *Scotland*, and sub-
‘ ject to such Resolutions and Directions as are and
‘ shall be agreed and concluded on mutually between
‘ the Two Kingdoms, or by Committees appointed
‘ by them in that Behalf, for Pursuance of the Ends
‘ before-mentioned.

IV. ‘ That the Charge of Levying, Arming,
‘ and bringing the said Forces together furnished,
‘ as also the fitting the Train of Artillery in Readi-
‘ ness to march, be computed and set down, ac-
‘ cording to the same Rates, as if the Kingdom of
‘ *Scotland* were to raise the said Army for them-
‘ selves and their own Affairs: All which, for the
‘ present, is to be done by the Kingdom of *Scotland*
‘ upon Account, and the Account to be delivered to
‘ the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *England*;
‘ and when the Peace of the Two Kingdoms is
‘ settled,

settled, the same to be repaid, or satisfied, to the Kingdom of Scotland.

An. 19. Car. I.
1643.
December.

V. That this Army be likewise paid, as if the Kingdom of Scotland were to employ the same for their own Occasions; and towards the defraying thereof (it not amounting to the full Month's Pay) shall be Monthly allowed and paid the Sum of 30,000 *l. Sterling*, by the Parliament of England, out of the Estates and Revenues of the Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, or otherwise. And in case the said 30,000 *l.* Monthly, or any Part thereof, be not paid at the Time when it shall become due and payable, the Kingdom of England shall give the Public Faith for the paying of the Remainder, unpaid, with all possible Speed, allowing the Rate of eight Pounds *per Cent.* till the Time of the Performance thereof. And in case that, notwithstanding the said Monthly Sum of 30,000 *l.* paid as aforesaid, the States and Kingdom of Scotland shall have just Cause to demand farther Satisfaction of their Brethren of England, they shall, for the Pains, Hazard, and Charges they have undergone in the same, by Way of Brotherly Assistance, have due Recompence made unto them by the Kingdom of England, when the Peace of both Kingdoms is settled; and that out of such Lands and Estates of the Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, as the two Houses of Parliament shall think fit; and for the Assurance thereof the Public Faith of the Kingdom of England shall be given them.

VI. And to the End the said Army, in Manner aforesaid, may be enabled and prepared to march, the Kingdom of England is to pay, in ready Money, to their Brethren of Scotland, or such as shall have Power from the Estates of that Kingdom, the Sum of 100,000 *l. Sterling*, at Leith or Edinburgh, with all convenient Speed, by Way of Advance before-hand; which is to be discounted back again unto the Kingdom of England,

An. 19. Car. I.

1643.

December.

land, by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, upon the first
 Monthly Allowance, which shall grow due to
 the *Scots* Army, from the Time they shall make
 their first Entrance into the Kingdom of *Eng-*
land.

VII. That the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to manifest
 their Willingness to their utmost Ability to be help-
 ful to their Brethren of *England* in this common
 Cause, will give the Public Faith of the Kingdom
 of *Scotland* to be jointly made use of with the Public
 Faith of the Kingdom of *England*, for the present
 taking up 200,000*l. Sterling*, in the Kingdom of
England, or elsewhere, for speedy Payment of the
 said 100,000 *l. Sterling* as aforesaid; as also a con-
 siderable Sum for satisfying, in good Proportion,
 the Arrears of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*.

VIII. That no Cessation, nor any Pacification
 or Agreement of Peace whatsoever, shall be made
 by either Kingdom, or the Armies of either King-
 dom, without the mutual Advice and Consent of
 both Kingdoms, or their Committees in that Be-
 half appointed, who are to have full Power for the
 same; in case the Houses of the Parliament of *Eng-*
land, or the Parliament or Convention of Estates of
Scotland, shall not fit.

IX. That the Public Faith of the Kingdom of
Scotland shall be given to their Brethren of *Eng-*
land, that neither their Entrance into, nor their
 Continuance in, the Kingdom of *England*, shall be
 made use of to any other Ends than are expressed
 in the Covenant, and in the Articles of this Treaty;
 and that all Matters of Difference, that shall hap-
 pen to arise between the Subjects of the two Na-
 tion, shall be resolved and determined by the mu-
 tual Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms, or
 by such Committees as, for this Purpose, shall be
 by them appointed, with the same Power as in
 the precedent Article.

X. That in the same Manner, and upon the
 same Conditions, as the Kingdom of *Scotland*

is

' is now willing to aid and assist their Brethren of
' *England*, the Kingdom of *England* doth oblige
' themselves to aid and assist the Kingdom of *Scot-*
' *land*, in the same or like Cases of Straits and Ex-
' tremities.

An. 19. Car. 1.
1643.
December.

' *Lastly*, It is agreed and concluded, That, du-
' ring the Time that the *Scots* Army shall be em-
' ployed as aforesaid, for the Defence of the King-
' dom of *Scotland*, there shall be fitted out, as Men
' of War, eight Ships, whereof six shall be of Bur-
' den betwixt one hundred and twenty and two
' hundred Tons, the other betwixt three and four
' hundred Tons, whereof two shall be in lieu of the
' two Ships appointed by the *Irish* Treaty; all
' which shall be maintained at the Charge of the
' Kingdom of *England*, to be employed for the De-
' fence of the Coast of *Scotland*, under such Com-
' manders as the Earl of *Warwick*, for the Time of
' his being Admiral, shall nominate, with the Ap-
' probation of the Committees of both Kingdoms;
' which Commanders shall receive, from the said
' Earl, general Instructions, that they do from Time
' to Time observe the Directions of the Committees
' of both Kingdoms.'

Next follow the several Declarations, &c. of the
Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, before and at their
Army's entering into *England*, which, for Brevity's
Sake, we pass over with a Reference ^a; and shall
only mention that, with the former Papers, came
Receipts for 50,000 *l.* paid at *Edinburgh*, as Part
of the 200,000 *l.* stipulated for; and that it was only
demanded, That the Garrison at *Berwick*, being
now delivered up to the *Scots*, should be paid from
henceforth by them.

The King, to obviate as much as possible this
Confederacy of the Parliaments of both Kingdoms
against him, issued a Proclamation, inviting all
such Members of both Houses, as had already left
their

486 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. their Seats at *Westminster*, or were inclined to do so, to meet him at *Oxford*, and consult of the best Measures for his own Safety. So great a Number obeyed this Summons, that they, soon after, formed a Convention, or Anti-Parliament : But their Proceedings, which lasted three Months, and which, for Connection Sake, we shall give without the Intervention of any other Matters, are too many and various to be comprized in this Volume.



The END of the TWELFTH VOLUME.

